

5

*A Perambulation  
of Kent:*

Conteining the description,  
*Hystorie, and Customes of*  
that Shyre.

Collected and written (for  
the most part) in the yeare. 1570.  
by *William Lambard of Lincolnes*  
Inne Gent. and nowe increased by  
*the addition of some things which*  
*the Authour him selfe hath*  
*observed since that*  
*time.*

*Isaas immemorata feruens  
Ingeniis, oculisq; legi, manibusq; teneri.*

Imprinted at Lon-  
don for *Ralph Nevvberie,*  
*dwelling in Fleetestreete a*  
*little aboute the*  
*Conduit.*

*Anno. 1576.*



# A Description of Kent:

Containing the Description  
Historical and Civil  
of the County.

Collected and written (for  
the most part) by the Rev.  
Dr. William L. Gougeon, of  
the University of Cambridge.

Printed by W. L. Gougeon, at  
the University Press, Cambridge.

Published in 1801.

For the Author, by  
W. L. Gougeon, at the  
University Press, Cambridge.

To his Countriemen, the Gen-  
tlemen of the Countie of Kent.



His Booke faire written  
(in gifte) lately sent vn-  
to mee, doo f fayre prin-  
ted (by dedication) now  
sende and commend vnto you.

I knowe not (in respect of the place)  
vnto whom I may more fitly thus send  
it then vnto you, that are eyther bred  
& wel brought vp here, or by the good-  
nesse of God and your own good proui-  
sion, are well settled here: and here  
lawfullie possesse, or are neere vnto  
sundrie of those things, that this booke  
specially speaketh of: and thus, as of  
your selves, doe you see what they are  
now, and thus as of this booke, may you  
knowe why they were, and by whome  
they were, and what they were long  
agone.

I knowe not (in respect of the per-  
sons,)

20  
sons,) vnto whō I may more fitly thus  
send it, then vnto you: with whome, I  
haue ben best and longest acquainted:  
from whō (by points of singular cour-  
tesie) I haue been many wayes muche  
pleasured: Toward whom, for the ge-  
nerall coniunction and association of  
your minds, and your selves in good a-  
mitie and familiaritie, one toward an  
other: and all, in good zeale toward  
the aduancement of Christian religiō:  
and for the indifferent and discrete  
course ye keepe in handling and com-  
pounding such controuersies, as many  
times fall (and thereby in nourishing  
peace, a Iewel most precious) betwene  
your honest and tractable neighbours,  
(things vnto almightie God, very ac-  
ceptable: vnto her Maiestie, very grat  
full: vnto your countrie, very fruitfull:  
vnto your selves, very commendable:)  
Toward whom, I say, for these causes  
whiche



which, as a member of this Courtie with others I see ioyfully and generally: and for the two first causes which deriued frō you, light vpon me self particular-ly, I haue ben, and am, and must be ver-ry louingely affected.

I know not how I may more fitly and effectually commend it the to say, that it is in substance, an hystorie: treating of the partes (and actions of greatest weight a good time together, done by the most famous persons) of one speciali Countrie: fet frō great antiquitie, which many men are much delighted with: out of sundry bookes with great studie collected, painfully: by this authoure in the matter set out, truely: with good words wel placed, eloquent-ly. In commendation of this booke, vpon a fit occasion, the like in a manner, is in Latine lately written by a Gentleman of our Countrie, knowne

Alexander  
Neuil,  
Norwicus.

to be very honest, and, I thinke, very well learned: and so vnder the authoritie of his good iudgement, may I (without blame) the more boldly commend it vnto you.

What utilitie foloweth the studie of Hystories, many of them haue well declared that haue published bystories writtē by theim selves, or haue set out Hystories written by others. And therefore already sufficiently done, I neede not (vnlarned mee selfe, I can not) therein say muche. And yet thus much I may breiefely say, and fit for the thing I haue in hande (me thinketh) I muste needes say, that (the sacred word of Almighty God alwayes excepted) there is nothing either for our instruction more profitable, or to our mindes more delectable, or within the compasse of common vnderstanding more easie or facile, then  
the

the studie of hystories: nor that studie  
for none estate more meete, the for the  
estate of Gentlemen: nor for the Gen-  
tlemen of Englande, no Hystorie so  
meete, as the Hystorie of England.

For, the dexteritie that men haue ey-  
ther in prouiding for theimselfes, or in  
comforting their freendes (two very  
good things) or in seruing their King  
and Countrie (of all outward things,  
the best thing) doth rest cheefly vpon  
their awne & other folkes experience:

which I may assuredly accompt (for, in  
an hystorie, in our tong as wel written  
as any thing euer was, or I thinke euer  
shalbe, great experience deriued fro  
a prooffe of two such things, as prospe-  
ritie and aduersitie be, vpon a fit occa-  
sion vnder the person of a very wisemā,  
is rightly accounted) to be the very mo-  
ther and maistres of wisdome. Now  
that that a number of folkes doth ge-  
neral-

Sir Tho-  
mas Moore  
Knight, in  
the hysto-  
rie of King  
Richard the  
thirde,



nerally, is much more then that, that  
any one of vs can do specially, and so  
by other folkes experiece, are we taught  
largely: and that, that other folkes for  
their King, their countrie, themselves,  
their friends, like good men do vertu-  
ously, ought to prouoke vs with good de-  
uotion inwardly to loue them: & with  
good words openly much to commend  
them, and in their vertuous actions,  
rightly to folow them. And that, that  
other folkes against their King, their  
countrie, their friends (and so against  
theim selves) like foolish men do igno-  
rantly, or like leude men do wickedly,  
ought to moue vs first (as our neigh-  
bours) Christianly to bewaile them:  
and the (as by presidents of peril pro-  
cured through their owne follies and  
faults) dutifully and wisely to beware  
by them. And so by these mens experi-  
ence (which like the burnt childe, that  
then

then too late the fire dreadthe) with  
much repentaunce they bye deerely)  
are we taught and brought out of dā-  
ger to settle our selues, as it were, in a  
seate of suretie. Thus you see what ex-  
perience doth, and thus you see where  
other folkes experience is to be had:  
which, for the good estate of England  
(resting chiefly vpon the good iudge-  
ment and seruice of the Gentlemen of  
England) is as I thinke, most proper-  
ly fet from the Hystorie of England.  
And this for this purpose, I say bothe  
vnto you my country men the Gentle-  
men of this Countie (a portion of the  
Realme) specially, and to al the Gen-  
tlemen of the whole Realme beside,  
generally.

There resteth that for this booke  
(whiche I doe vpon these respectes  
thus send, and with these reasons thus  
commende vnto you) we shoulde vnto

Mathewe  
Parker  
Archebi-  
shop of  
Canterbu-  
ry in his  
Preface to  
the Booke  
de rebus ge-  
stis Aelfre-  
di Regis.

the Authour William Lambard  
Esquire, yeelde our verye hartie and  
perpetuall thanks: as our Country mā  
in our wordes and deedes lovingly vse  
him: as a man learned, duely e-  
steeme him: (for a late very well lear-  
ned and reuerend father hath publi-  
quely and rightly so reputed him) as  
a Gentleman religious and very ho-  
nest, make righte accompt of him:   
whiche, for my parte, I thinke meete  
to do, and meane to do: and for your  
partes, I desire heartely you should do,  
and I hope assuredly you will do. And  
if by you he might (and woulde) be  
moued at his good leysure, to doe as  
muche for all the rest of the Counties  
of this Realme generally, as he hath  
done for this Countie specially (toward  
whiche I knowe, by great paine and  
good cost, he hath alredy vnder the ti-  
tle of a Topographical dictionarie  
gathe-



gathered together greates store of very  
good matter) himselfe (the Authour  
of it) were worthy of good reward, &  
singular commendation for it. You  
(the motioners) in the reading, shall  
receiue great pleasure by it: the rest  
of the Gentlemē of this Realme, that  
of them selves see what things in their  
awne cōtries are of gretest fame now,  
& by that booke shal know, what those  
things and other things were long a-  
gone, must needes with great delight  
receiue it: and surely, being as he is  
vnto mee, a very deere freende, for  
myne awne parte, I meane also (God  
willing) vpon some fit occasion, with  
my request to further it. The xvj. of  
Aprill. 1576. Your Countrey man  
and very louing freende.

JW: 99.ij.

7  
GV L I E L M V S F L E T E

wodus Urbis Londinen-

sis Recordator, ad candi-  
dun efflorem.

*E*N tibi, Lector, adest series dignissima rerū,  
Canticolū si nōsse cupis pia stemmata, siue  
Si tibi sacra placent horum cōmixta prophanis,  
Siue meare libet per compita, flumina, pontes,  
Seu reserare velis septem diademata regum;  
Cuncta Topographia hac Lābardus pingit aperte,  
Fngenio rarus, gravis arte, labore notandus.  
Cuius melliflao debet nunc Cantia libro  
Plurima, myriades rerum dum ventilat apte.  
Quas benè si capias, habet hic cū fœnore sortē.

# The Saxon Characters, and their values.

## Characters. | values.

a  
b  
c  
d  
e  
f  
g  
h  
i  
k  
l  
m  
n  
o  
p  
q  
r  
s  
t  
u  
v  
w  
x  
y  
z

a  
b  
c  
d  
e  
f  
g  
h  
i  
k  
l  
m  
n  
o  
p  
q  
r  
s  
t  
u  
v  
w  
x  
y  
z

## The abbreviations. | Their values.

and  
that  
ib  
ib  
ib  
ge

## The pointes.

Comma, which is marked after the common periode, thus (,)   
 Periode, which is here signed as the Greeke interrogatiue,   
 thus (.)



*Andry fautes (gentle Reader) haue we unwillingly committed, in this Booke, im-  
 printed in the absence of the Authour. Of these some do blemish only the beautie  
 of our owne workmanship: others do offend against the lawes of Orthographie: Some  
 doe shrewdly peruert the sense of the writer, and will stay thee: others doe utterly  
 euert his meaning, and will muche trouble thee. Suche therefore as be most dam-  
 gerous, we haue here set before thine eye, beseeching thee to amende them with thine  
 owne pen, before thou enter into the Booke: The whiche labour (we doubt not) but  
 thou wilt the more willingly undertake in this one copie, when thou shalt haue rightly  
 weighed, what a worke it would be for vs, to perfourme it in sixe hundreth booke.*

Pag.	Lin.	Error.	Correction.	Pa.	Lin.	Error.	Correction.
2	4	Scots.	Scots.		3	crowne,landes.	Crownelandes.
7	3	Zenagogus.	Xenagogus.	131	18	strengthened.	straightened.
48	6	bropam.	Broxam.	135	27	a tittle.	a title.
	29	Haniſwel.	Hamſwell.	136	12	you knowe of.	you knowe out of.
		Southfrith for.	Southfrith forest.		34	to edifie.	to deifie.
54		adde (Wye) to the		137	22	shruied.	shryned.
		Scholes there.		142	15	had at Rumney.	did at Rumney.
		Richard Agall.	Richard Argall.		21	vpon the to the laste	vpon them and slue
56	17	Syr Humfrey Iilbert.	S. Humfrey Gilbert.			man.	them to the last mā.
		adde, Iohn French to		143	16	Badhenham.	Hadhenham.
		the names in, F. there.		147	3	to the wood.	into the wood.
57		William Lambade.	William Lambarde.		13	in a place stronger.	stronger in a place.
58		adde, S. Walt. Waller		150	33	had receiued her.	had recovered her.
		to the names in W.		155	2	then order.	then ordered.
60	27	in Larine.	into Larine.	156	19	Borieux.	Baieux.
64	29	Kenulfus.	Kenulfus.	159	17	vied in.	haue vied in.
		Amend the nūbers of				After the page. 160.	
		the. 2. pages, to low-				amende the numbers	
		ing nexte after the				of the next eight pa	
		page. 67.				ges following.	
76	1	take out this (Malm.		161	3	to the very end.	to the very same end.
		Couent.)		162	9	landed in Pontein.	landed in Pontieu.
77	13	partly for the.	partly by the.		10	angeon, poierou.	angeon, poierou.
78	5	panet.	panet.		24	and couerture.	and couerture.
	22	panet.	panet.	163	15	eight carnes.	eight Carews.
84	20	Leofwine.	Leofwine.	166	18	procured the Pope.	procured of y Pope.
103	27	Symon Barley.	Symon Burley.	167	18	contained foure.	contented foure.
108	1	then were appoin.	that were appointed	169	8	in weald.	in the weald.
109	18	Anlaf.	Anlaf.	174	34	pronounce it of.	pronounce of.
110	15	Syphnius.	Syphnius.	177	10	and in a companie.	and in the company.
112	34	whiche drewe.	withdrewe.	178	3	Augustine.	Augustines.
119	1	Dorus.	Doris.	180	15	cybpite.	cylbpite.
121	16	kept till.	keepe till.	181	10	possession.	profession.
	32	a Captaine.	a Captiue.	182	29	take out these foure	
122	20	and speede.	and sped.			words. (as it is sure.)	
123	10	Borieux.	Baieux.	187	25	if you offer.	if you offered.
124	8	Borieux.	Baieux.	190	11	Kemley towne.	Kemley downe.
126	5	tenure.	terror.	191	18	harted to his.	harted to his.
	28	contained.	continued.	192	7	preachment (after.	in which (after.
128	32	a newe worke.	the newe worke.	193	11	exercerentur.	exercerentur.
130	2	port sayle.	portale.	195	1	ppangceastre	ppangceastre

Pa.	Lin.	Error.	Correction.	Pa.	Lin.	Error.	Correction.
	15	Thongrafter, or Thwangrafter.	Thongcaster, or Thwangcaster.	6		stede of Horle.	stede of Horia.
309	19	the very first.	their very first.			In the margine of page: Horstede borne in.	Horstede borne, nere.
		After the page. 311. amende the numbers of the two next pa- ges following.		295	23	lesse worthy.	lesse worth.
314	10	not greatly.	not greedely.	296	19	Borieux.	Raieux.
319	8	Kings reward.	Kings awarde.	297	13	strengthened.	straightened.
320	13	on the other side.	they on f other side.	299	29	accomplement.	accouplement.
322	13	church adioyning.	churches adioyning.	304	8.9	debet full.	debet. 3. full.
328	18	chart of donation.	charter of donation.		15	de Althe.	de Athle.
329	8	the iustice of.	the iniustice of.		24	Nedestane.	Medestane.
333	31	hath nowe susteined.	hath susteined.		27	Heyburne.	Heyhorne.
336	6	dissolued the.	dissolued there.	313	19	and. 2.	Ric. 2.
	13	and like the.	and let the.	316	26	wearinesse.	warinesse.
341	22	Claredowne.	Clarendune.	317	11	as is in.	as he is in.
343	19	writeth it.	twytyeth it.	318	16	put our scales.	put to our scales.
344	26	not their manner.	not the manner.	325	12	that number of.	the number of.
347	6	was given then.	was given them.	329	16	peucata.	Leucata.
351		in the margine, S. Se- pulchres.	S. Stephans.	341	7	bunghen.	bupher.
353	19	to (maugre his my- ter) race.	(maugre his myter to race.	343	10	the word which.	the which worde.
361	26	gotten by patterne.	gotten by periurie.	344	17	reiected.	eiected.
362	34	with might.	with night.	358	27	calce.	alce.
364	18	sufficiently defended.	sufficiently defenced.	361	23	other uche.	other suche.
370	5	and yet losse.	and yet lesse.	362	15	hi phnto.	hi pentto.
371	13	recitall of.	the recitall of.		18	pe hit.	pe hit.
	22	Gibmandus.	Gibmundus.	366	25	three estales.	three estates.
372	2	Alstanns.	Aelstannus.	370	1	vaginace.	vagniacæ.
	15	Gualeramus.	Gualerannus.		3	pypham.	pyntham.
373	1	and there it is.	and there is.	391	32	in feodo.	in feoda.
376	28	Cadische.	Achates.	392	10	in feodo.	in feoda.
379	16	tythed the number.	tythed that number.	396		in the mar. that call.	call that.
382	25	civowtas.	civowtas.	399	11	shall entree.	shall enter.
	33	displeasure receiued.	displeasure cōceiued.		12	condtion.	condition.
383	4	pountion.	pountiou.		33	exemplified.	exemplified.
	12	pountion.	pountion.	400	29	and in case not.	and not in case.
389	2	againe the Britons.	against the Britons.		30	is iustified.	is iustified.
				406	25	seiser.	seisei.
				407	24	may waine her.	may waine her.

ANGLIAE HEPSTARCHIA.





# The exposition of this Map of the English Heptarchie, or seauen Kingdomes.

**T**O the ende, that it may be vnderstande, what is ment  
by the tearmes of Eastsaxons, Westsaxons, Mercia,  
Northumberland, and such other, of which there is com-  
mon mention in the Treatise folowing: I haue thought  
good to p̄sire a chard of the seauen sundry Kingdomes  
into the whiche this Realme was sometime diuided.  
But yet, for the better and moze plaine explication  
of the matter, it shall bee good first to know, that all  
these Nations folowing haue had to doe within this our  
Countrie: The Brittons, the Romanes, the Scottes and  
Pictes, the Saxons, the Danes, and the Normanes.

The Bryttons (after the Samothees, and Albionees,  
whiche be of no great fame in our history) were the most  
auncient Inhabitanes of this land, and possessed it in  
peace, vntil Iulius Caesar (the Romane Emperour) inua-  
ded them: for so muche may a man gather of Horace his  
woordes, where he sayeth,

The Bry-  
taines.

*Intactus aut Brytannus,  
Sacræ ut descenderet catenatus via. &c.*

These therefore weare by Iulius Caesar subdued to the  
Romane Emperour, and their country made a tributarie  
Prouince: in whiche case it continued many yeares to-  
geather, vntill at the length they being greiuously vexed  
with the Pictes and Scottes their neighbours on the  
North, and being vtterly voide of all hope of aide to bee  
had from the Romanes their patrons (who also at the  
same time weare sore afflicted with the inuasion of the  
Hunnes, and Vandales, like barbarous nations) they  
weare enforced to seeke for further helpe: And therefore  
sent into Germanie, from whence they receaued hyred

A.

Souldi-

Souldiours, of the Nations called Saxons, Iutes, and Angles, vnder the conuicte of Hengist and Horfa, two naturall brethren, and both verie valiant Captaines.

The Scots  
& picts.

These Scots (as them selues do write) weare a people of Scythia, that came first into Spaine, then into Ireland, and from thence to the North part of Britaine our Island, where they yet inhabit: They were called Scots, or Scyttes, of Scytan, which is to shoothe: The Pictes also came from the same place after them, and occupied the parts where VVestmorland and Galloway now be. And they were called Pictes, either for that they used to paynte their bodies, to the ende to seeme the more terrible, or els of the word: *πικτις*, which signifieth a Champion, by reason of their great courage and hardinesse.

The Saxons,  
Iutes, and  
Angles.

The Saxons, Iutes, & Angles, weare the Germaines that came ouer, (as we haue saide) in aide of the Britons, of which the first sorte inhabited Saxonie: the seconde were of Gotland, and therfore called Gutes, or Gottes: The thirde weare of Angria, or Anglia, a countrey adioynning to Saxonie, of which the Duke of Saxonie is Lord till this day, and beareth the name thereof in his stile, or title of honour, and of these last we all be called Angli, English men.

These Germaines, for a season serued against the Scots, and Picts: But afterwarde (entised by the pleasure of this countrey, and the fraude of the enemies) they ioyned handes with them, and all at once set vpon the Britons that brought them in: and so, driving them into Fraunce, Wales, and Cornwall, possessed their dwelling places, and diuided the countrey amongst themselves. Howbeit, they also waited not their plague: for after that they had long warred one vpon another, for the enlarging of their particular kingdomes, and had at the last

last so beaten y<sup>e</sup> one the other, that the whole was by the Westsaxons reduced into one entier Monarchie, sodainly the Danes (a people of Norway, & Denmarke) came vpon them, and after much mischiefe done, in the ende tooke the crowne quite and cleane from them.

But they were expulsed after thirtie yeares trouble, and the Englishe and Saxon Nation restored to the royall dignitie: which yet they enioyed not many yeares after. For straight vpon the death of Edward the Confessor, William of Normandy (whose people at the first came from Norway also, and were therfore called Nor-

The Normans.

mans) demaunded the Crowne, and wan it of Harold in the fiede, whose posteritie holdeth it tyll this day.

Thus muche of the Nations, that haue had interest in this Realme: Now to our purpose, that is, to the diuision of the same into the sundrye kingdomes vnder the Saxons. And although (by reason of the continuall contention that was amongst them for enlarging their bounds) there can no certaine limits of their kingdomes be appointed, yet wee wil go as neare the trouth as wee can, and folow the best approued authours that haue written thereof.

The seven kingdomes

The first Kingdome therefore, was called the Kingdome of the Westsaxons, bicause it was in the West parte of the Realme, and it comprehended the whole Shires of Southampton, Berk, Wilton, Dorset, and Somerset, besides some partes of Surrey, Gloucester, and Deuonshyre: As for the residue of Deuonshyre, and whole Cornwall, the Britons reteyned it, whose language is not there as yet forgotten.

1

The seconde, was the Southsaxon Kingdome, (so termed bicause it lay South) and contained whole Suffex, and the remains of Surrey.

2

A.ii.

The



## 4 The exposition

3 The thirde, was the Kentish Kingdome, and had for the most part the same boundes, y<sup>e</sup> the Shyre of Kent yet hath, although at some tyme, and by the p<sup>ro</sup>uises of some King, it was extended muche further.

4 The Kingdome of Estsex, or of the Estsaxons was the fourth, which was named of the situation also, and included the whole Shires of Estsex, and Middlesex, with some portion of Hartfordshyre.

5 The fift, was of the East Angles, or East Englishmen, consisting of the Ile of Elye, and the Shyres of Norfolke, Suffolke, and Cambridge.

6 The Kingdome of Mercia, or Mearclande, had the first place, which was so called of the Saron woorde Meape signifying a bounde, limit, or marke, as wee yet speake: and that, because it lay in the midst of this our Iland, as vpon the whiche al the residue of the Kingdomes did bounde, and weare bordered. In this Kingdome weare wholly these Shyres, Lincolne, Northampton, Rutlande, Huntingdon, Bedford, Buckingham, Oxford, Chester, Derby, Nottingham, Stafforde: And partly Hereford, Hartford, Warwick, Shropshire, and Gloucestershire.

7 Northumberlande (so called, because it laye North from the Riuer Humber) was the seauenth Kingdome: and it enuironned Yorkshire, Durham, Northumberlande, Cumberlande, and Westmerlande wholly, and so muche of Lancashire besides, as was not in Mercia. This Kingdome was for a season divided into twayne, that is to say, Deira, and Bernicia, but for as muche as neyther that diuision endured long, nor the ages of their Kings were greatly famous, I wyll not stave vpon them: But to the end it may appeare by what lawes and customes these Kingdomes weare guided (for of them also wee must make mention in this hist<sup>orie</sup>) I

will

# of the Map.

5

will proceede to set forth the rest of the vse of this chard  
of the English *Heptarchie*.

As eche Countrey therefore, hath his propre lawes,  
customes, and manners of lyfe, so no man ought to doubt  
but that these peoples, being aggregated of so many sun-  
dye Nations, had their severall rules, orders, and insti-  
tutes. Howbeit, amongst the rest those be moste famous,  
whiche our auncient wryters call the Dane law, West-  
Saxon law, and Merchen law: The first of whiche was  
brought in by the Danes: The second was used amongst  
the west Saxons: and the last was exercised in the king-  
dome of Mercia: and yet not so exercised amongst them  
selues alone, but that they spread ouer some partes of the  
rest of the lande also, being eyther embraced for their e-  
quitie aboue the rest, or commaunded by suche the Kings  
as preuailed aboue others.

Three sorts  
of Lawes,  
in olde  
time.

To the Westsaxons law therefore, al suche were sub-  
iect, as inhabited the Kingdomes of Kent, Susses, or  
Westsex.

1

The Eastsaxons, Estangles, and they of the kingdome  
of Northumberland (al whiche were muche mingled with  
the Danes) lyued vnder the Danes lawe.

2

They of Mercia, had their owne law, but not thow-  
out: for after some mens opinions, the East and North-  
parts of it liued after the law of the Danes also. Al these  
lawes, King William the Conquerour collected togea-  
ther, and (after a discret vlew had) by aduice of his coun-  
sel allowed some, altered others, and quite abrogated a  
great many, in place of whiche he established the lawes  
of Normandie his owne countrey.

3

The Lawes  
of our time

A.iii.

The

# The description and hystorie, of the Shyre of Kent.

These things be all handeled, in the induction to the Topographical Dictionary.



Having thus before hand exhibited in generalitie, the names, scituation, and compasse of the Realme, the number of the sondrye Nations inhabiting within the same, the severall lawes, languages, rites, and manners of the peoples, the conversion of the countrie to christianitie, the divisions and limites of the Kingdomes, the beginnings and alterations of Bishopricks, and such other things incident to the whole: Order now requireth, that I shew in perticular, the boundes of eche Shyre and Countie, the severall Regiments, Bishops Sees, Laths, Hundrethes, Frauncchises, Liberties, Cities, Markets, Burroughs, Castles, Religious houses, and Scholes: The Portes, Havens, Rivers, Waters, and Bridges: And finally, the Hilles and dales, Parkes, and forests, & whatsoever the singularities, within every of the same. And because not only the Romanes and Saxons (that weare conquerours of this Realme) but also the Disciples of the Apostle Philip, and the messengers of Pope Gregory (that were converters of the people) arrived firste in Kent: and for that the same by commoditie of the River of Thamise (the chief key of this Iland) first openeth it selfe, and to the end also that such guests & strangers as shal vouche safe to visite this our Britaine, may at their first entry fynde such courtesie and intertainment, as fro hence forth

The author determined to have written this treatise, in latine.



# The Estate of Kent.

7

forth they cease, either with Horace to call vs, *Hospitibus feros*, or with others, *Feroces in Aduenas*, I will be their *Zenagogus*, or guide, and first shew them our countrie of Kent, the inhabitantes whereof, Caesar himselfe in his Commentaries, confelleth to be of al others the most full of humanitie and gentlenesse.

Kent therefore, lying in the Southeast Region of this Realme, hath on the North the Riuer of Thamise, on the East the Sea, on the South the Sea and Sussex, and on the West Sussex and Surrey. It extendeth in length, from VVicombe in the frontiers of Surrey, to Dele at the Sea side, fiftie miles: And reacheth in breadth from Sandhirst (neare Robertsbridge in the edge of Sussex) to the Southeast pointe of the Isle of Greane, almost thirty miles, & so hath in circuit. 150. miles, or therabout.

It is called by Caesar, and other auncient writers, *Cancium*, and *Cancia* in latine, which name (as I make coniecture) was framed out of *Cainc*, a woode that (in the language of the Britaines, whom Caesar at his arriuall founde inhabiting there) signifyeth, bowghes, or woods, and was imposed, by reason that this Countrie, both at that time, and also longe after, was in manner wholly ouergrowne with woode, as it shall hereafter in syt place moze plainly appeare.

The Aire in Kent, by reason that the Countrey is on sundry partes bordered wyth water, is somewhat thicke: for which cause (as also for that it is scituate nearest to the Sunne risinge and furthest from the Northe pole of any part of the realme) it is temperate, not so colde by a great deale as Northumberlande, and yet in manner as warme as Cornwall.

The Soile is for the most parte bountifull, consisting indifferently of arable, pasture, meadow and woodland, howbeit of these, wood occupieth the greatest portzion

Situation  
of Kent.

Kent, why  
so named.

The Aire,  
The Soyle.

cuen

euert till this day, except it bee towarde the East, which coast is more champaigne then the residue.

The Corne

It hathe Cozne and Graine, common with other Shyres of the Realme: as Wheat, Rye, Barly, & Mats, in good plenty, save onely, that in the Wealdish, or woody places, where of late daies they used muche Pomage, or Cider for want of Barley, now that lacke is more commonly supplied with Dates.

The Poulse

Neither wanteth Kent such sorts of pulce, as the rest of the Realme yeeldeth, namely beanes, peason, & tares, whiche some (reteining the sound of the latine word *Vicia*) call betches, and which Polydor supposed not to be founde in England.

The Pasture.

The pasture and meadowe, is not onely sufficient in proportion to the quantitie of the country it selfe for breeding, but is comparable in fertilitie also to any other that is neare it, in so muche that it gayneth by feeding.

The woods fruits.

In fertile and fruitfull wodes and trees, this country is most flourishing also, whether you respecte the masse of oke, Beeche & Chesten for cattail: or the fruit of aples, Peares, Cherries, & Ploumes for men: for besides great store of oke and beche, it hathe whole wodes that beare Chestnutt, a mast (if I may so call it, and not rather a fruite, whereof euen delicate persons disdaine not to feede) not commonly sene in other countries: But as for Orchards of Aples, and Gardeins of Cherries, and those of the most delicious and exquisite kindes that can be, no part of the Realme (that I know) hath them, either in such quantitie and number, or with such arte and industrie, set and planted. So that the Kentish man, most truly of al other, may say with him in Virgil,

*Sunt nobis mitia pomae,*

*Castanea molles, &c.*

Touching

Touching domestlicall cattel, as hoxles, mares, oren, The Cattel.  
kine, and sheepe, Kent differeth not muche from others:  
onely this it challengeth as singular, that it bzingeth  
forth the largest of stature in eche kinde of them : The  
like wherof also Polydore (in his hystorie) confesseth of  
the Kentish poultrie.

Parkes of fallow Dēre, and games of gray Conyes, Deere and  
Conyes.  
it maynteyneth many, the one for pleasure, and the o-  
ther for profit, as it may wel appeare by this, that with-  
in memorie almost the one halfe of the first sorte be dis-  
parked, and the number of warreyns continueth, if it do  
not increase dayly.

As for red Dēre, and blacke Conyes, it nourisheth  
them not, as hauing no great walkes of wast grounde  
for the one, and not taryng the tyme to rayse the gaine  
by the other : for, blacke conyes are kept partly for their  
skins, which haue their season in Winter : and Kent by  
the nearnesse to London, hath so quicke market of yong  
Rabbets, that it killeth this game chiefly in Summer.

There is no Mineral, or other profit digged out of the No mynes.  
belly of the earth here, saue only that in certeine places  
they haue Mines of Iron, quarreys of pauing stone, and  
pits of fat Marle.

The Sea, and fresh waters, yelde good and wholesome The fishes.  
fishes competently, but yet neyther so muche in quanti-  
tie, nor suche in varietie, as some other coastes of the  
Realme do asoyde. And here let vs for a season leaue  
the Sea and the Soyle, and cast our eyes vpon the men.

The people of this countrie, consisteth chiefly (as in The people  
other countries also) of the Gentry, and the yeomanrie,  
of which the first be for the most parte, ἀρχοντες, go-  
uernours, and the other altogether ἀρχοντες, gouver-  
ned : whose possessions also were at the first distingui-  
shed, by the names of knight fee, and Gavelkinde : that Socage, and  
Knights  
seruice.



former being propre to the warriour, and this latter to the husbandman. But as nothing is moze inconstant, the the estate that we haue in lands and living (if at the least I may call that an estate whiche neuer standeth) Euen so, long since these tenures haue ben so indifferently mixed & confounded, in the hands of eche sorte, y there is not now any note of difference to be gathered by them.

The Gentle  
men.

The gentlemen be not here (throughtout) of so auncient stockes as else where, especially in the partes nearer to London, from whiche citie (as it were from a certeine riche and wealthe seedplot) Courtiers, Lawyers, & Marchants be continually translated, & do become new plants amongst them. Yet be their reuenues greater then any where else: whiche thing groweth not so muche by the quantitie of their possession, or by the fertilitie of their soyle, as by the benefit of the situation of the countrie it selfe, whiche hath al that good neighbourhod, that Marc. Cato, and other olde authoꝝ in husbandrie require to a wel placed graunge, that is to say, the Sea, the Riuer, a populous citie, and a well traded highway, by the comodities wherof, the superfluous fruites of the ground be dearly sold, and consequently the land may yeld a greater rent. These gentlemen be also (foꝝ the most parte) acquainted with good letters, and especially trayned in the knowledge of the lawes: They vse to manure some large portion of their owne territories, as well foꝝ the maintenance of their families, as also foꝝ their better increase in wealth. So that they be well employed, both in the publique seruice, and in their own particular, & do vse hauking, hunting, and other disports, rather foꝝ their recreation, then foꝝ an occupation or pastime.

The yeome

The yeomanrie, or common people (foꝝ so they be called of the Saxon word *gemen* which signifieth common) is no where moze free, and iolly, then in this shyre:  
foꝝ

for besides that they them selues say in a clayme (made by them in the tyme of King Edward the first) that the cōmunaltie of Kent was neuer vanquished by the Conquerour, but yelded it selfe by composition, And besides that Geruasius affirmeth, that the forward in al battels belongeth to them (by a certein p̄eminence) in right of their manhood, It is agr̄ed by all men, that there were neuer any bondm̄e (or villaines, as the law calleth thē) in Kent. Neither be they here so muche bounden to the gentrie by Copyhold, or custumarie tenures, as the inhabitantes of the westerne countries of the Realme be, nor at all indaūgered by the feeble holde of tenant right, (which is but a discent of a tenancie at wil) as the cōmon people in the Northren parts be: for Copyhold tenure is rare in Kent, and tenant right not heard of at al: But in place of these, the custome of Gavelkind p̄uayling euery where, in manner euery man is a freeholder, and hath some part of his owne to liue vpon. And in this their estate, they please them selues, and ioy exceedingly, in so much, as a man may find sundry yecomē (although otherwise for wealth comparable with many of the gentle sort) that will not yet for all that chaūge their condition, nor desire to be apparayled with the titles of Gentrie.

Neither is this any cause of disdain, or of alienation of good myndes of the one sort from the other: for no where else in al this realme, is the commō people moze willingly gouerned. To be short, they be most commonly ciuil, iust, & bountiful, so that the estate of the old franklyns & yeomen of England, eyther yet liueth in Kent, or else it is quite dead & departed out of ȳ realme for altogether.

As touching the artificers of this shire, they be either such as labour in the artes that be handmaidens to husbandry, or els workers in stone, Iron, & woodfuel, or else makers of coloured wolle clothes: in which last feat they excell, as from whome is drawne both sufficient stoare

The Artificers.

to furnishe the weare of the best sort of our owne nation at home, and great plentie also to be transported to other fo:reine countries abroad. Thus muche I had summarily to say, of the condition of the countrie, and countrie men, I olwe therfore (God assisting myne enterpryse) I will goe in hande with the hystorie.

The first in  
habitation  
of England.

¶ We read in the first booke of Moses, that after suche time as the order of nature was destroyed by the general floude, and repaired again by the mercy of almighty God, the whole earth was ouerspred in processe of time, by the propagation of mankinde that came of the loines of Sem, Cham, and Iaphet. By which authoritie, we are thoroughly certified, that all the nations of the worlde, must of necessitie deriue their Pedegrees from the countrie of Chaldee (or some place nigher vnto it) where the Arke of Noah rested :

The errour  
of those,  
whiche say,  
that the  
Brytons  
weare Indi-  
gense.

And therfore, I will not here eyther doubt, or debate to and fro, as Caesar, Cornel, tacit. Polydore, and others doe, whether the first inhabitantes of this Ilande were (*Aliunde aduecti, and aduena*) that is, translated and brought out of some other countrie to dwell here, or no: Or yet affirme, as the same Caesar doth, that some, or (as Diodor, Siculus writeth) that all the Britanes weare *indigena*, the naturall borne people of that countrie, and that *ab origine*, euen from the first beginning: for to take the one way of these, or the other, would but leade vs to distrust the infallible Scriptures of God concerning the creation and propagation of mankinde, and to trust the wretched vanitie of opinion that the Gentiles had, and namely the Atheniens, who, the better to aduance their antiquitie, were wont to vaunt, That they only (for sooth) of al the Grecians were *αὐτοχθόνες*, that is to say, *Satini, & indigena terra parentis*. The very natural seeds, stocks, & ymps, springing out of their good mother & same



same earth where they dwelt, and not brought from else where. We reade likewise in the same booke of Moses, & the Iles of the Gentiles were divided into their Kingdoms and nations, by such as descended of the children of Iapheth. whereupon, as the Italians in their histories deriue themselves from Gomer the first sonne of Iapheth: the Spaniards from Tubal his fift sonne: and the Germanes from Thuyfco (whom as they say, Moses calleth Ascanas) the eldest sonne of Gomer: Euen so, the late learned, and yet best trauailed in the histories of our countrey, reiecting the sonde dreames of dotting Monkes and fabling Frears, do collect out of Herodotus, Berosus, and others the most graue and auncient authoꝛs, that one Samothēs, the sixth sonne of Iapheth, (whome Cæsar in his commentaries calleth Dis, and Moses nameth Melech) did about 250. yeares after the generall inundation of the world take vpon him the first dominion of these countreies in Europe, which are now known by the names of Fraunce and Britaine, and the inhabitantes thereof of long time called Celts, or rather *κελται* of the Verbe *κελτιζειν* for theye That is to  
say Ryders:  
and to Ride.

Of this mans name (say they) the first inhabiter of England weare called Samothæi, by the space of 300. An. mundi. yeares, or moꝛe: About which time *Albion Mareoticus* 2219.  
(the sonne of Neptune, or rather *Nepthum*, as Moses writeth it, and descended of the race of Cham,) inuaded the Ile, conquered the inhabitantes, mixed them with his owne people, and called them all after his owne name Albionnes, and the countrey it selfe Albion.

Six hundredeth and eight yeares (or therabouts) after this also, Brutus Iulius (as all our common historians haue it) entered this Iland with 324. ships, laden  
with the remaines of Troye, and he likewise, both sub-  
An. ante  
Christum  
1142.  
dued

Kent, the  
first inhabi-  
ted part of  
England.

dued all the former peoples that he found heere to his owne obedience, and also altered their name after his owne calling: So that from thenceforth they were named Britaines, the termes of *Samothees*, and *Albioners* being quite and cleane abolished. Now, out of these things thus alledged, I might (as mee thinketh) draw probable coniecture, that Kent which we haue in hand, was the first inhabited part of all this our Iland.

For if it be true, that maister Bale in his Centuries confesseth, namely, that *Samothes* began his dominion ouer this Realme almost. 150. yeres after suche tyme as he first arriued in that part of Fraunce which is called Celtique and had planted his people there, what can be moze likely, then that he came out of Fraunce first into Kent? seeing that parte (of all others) was moste neare vnto him, and only of all the Iland might be discerned out of the countrie where he was. And the selfe same reason Cæsar vseth, to proue, that the borderers on the South Sea side of this land were *Aduene*, and brought out of Fraunce, although he was perswaded, that the dwellers within the mible partes of the Countrie were (*Indigene*), as we haue already touched. But I will procede in the hystorie.

Four  
Kings in  
Kent.

Whosoever that bee therefore, Cæsar himselfe witnesseth, that at the time of his arriual in this Iland, the people were by one common name called Britaines: And that Kent was then diuided into foure petite Kingdomes, which were gouerned by *Carnillus*, *Taximagul*, *Cingetorix*, and *Segonax*: who, hauing seuerally subiect to their Dominions certain Cities with the territories adioyning vnto them (after the manner of the Dukedomes, or Estates of Italie, at this day) extended their boundes (as it may be gathered) ouer the whole countries of Kent, Sussex, and Surrey at the least.

This

This kind of Regalitie, Kent retained not many yeares after, because the Britain Kings, succeeding Cæsars conquest, & paying tribute to the Romanes, reduced not only these partes, but in manner the whole Realme also, into one entier Monarchie.. So that in course of time, and vnder the reigne of King Vortiger, Kent was ruled by a Lieutenant, or Viceroy, called *Guorongius*, as William of Malmesbury witnesseth. But it was not long, before these Britaines were so weakned, partly by intestine dissention amongst themselves, and partly by incursions of their neighbours the Scots, & Picts, that (the periode of this their estate also drawing on) Vortiger their King was compelled to invite for ayde the Saxons, Jutes, and Angles, three sortes of the Germane nation: who, in steade of doing that which they came for, and of deliuering the Britaines from their former oppression, ioynd with their enemies (*Theffala fide*, as the adage is) & brought vpon them a more grieuous calamity and conquest, subduing the people, suppressing religion, and departing (in manner) the whole land amongst them selues. So that now Kent recovered the title of a seuerall Kingdome againe, although not al one, and the verie same in limittes with the former foure, yet nothing inferiour in power, estimation, or compasse.

But one  
King in  
Kent.

Of whiche this newly reuiued regiment, Hengist the chief leader of the Germanes became the first author and patrone. For he, finding him selfe placed by King Vortiger for his owne habitation at Thanet in this Shire, and seeing a great part of his power bestowed in Garrison against the Scottes vnder Oththa his Brother, and Ebusa his Sonne in the North Countrey, and perceyuing moreover, that he was arryued out of a most barren Countrey into this

B.iii.

plen



plentifull Iland (with the commodities wherof he was inestimable delighted) he abandoned al care of returne to his native soyle, and determined to make here a seate for him selfe and his posteritie. For helpes wherunto, although he had on thone side, his owne prowesse, the manhode of his warlike nation, their number, and necessitie: and on the other side, the effeminate cowardise and voluptuousnes of king Vortiger, the weakenes of the Britains themselves, and the aduantage of the Scottes and Pictes their auncient enemies, so that he might with plaine force haue brought his purpose to passe: yet he chose rather to atchieue his desire by faire meanes, and colour of amitie, a way, though not so hastie as the former, yet more speedie then that, or any other. Espying therfore, that king Vortiger was muche delighted in womens companie, and knowing wel, that *Sine Cerere & Libero, friget Venus*, he had him to a solemn Banquet, and after that he had (according to the manner of Germanie yet continuing) well plied him with pots, he let slippe befoze him a faire gentlewoman, his owne daughter, called Roxena, or Rowen, which being instructed befoze hand how to behaue her self, most amiable presented him with a goblet of wine, saying in her owne language, *per haile hlapond cynyng*; well sail Lord King, that is to say, be merie Lord King: wyth which her daliance, the king was so delighted, that he not onely vouchesafed to pledge her, but desired also to perfourm it in the right manner of her owne countrey. And therfore he answered (as he was taught) vnto her againe, *opinch hæile*; drinke merie. Which when she had done, himselfe tooke the cuppe, and pledged her so hartely, that from thenceforth he could neuer be in rest, until he had obtained her to wife, litle weighing, eyther howe deeplý he had endaungered his conscience in mat- ching

The first  
wasseling  
cuppe.

The issue of  
an vngodly  
marriage.

# The Estate of Kent. 17

ching him selfe with a heathen wooman, or how greatly he had hazarded his Crowne by ioyning handes with so mightie a fozein Nation.

At the time of this mariage, Hengist (labouring by all meanes to bring in his owne Countrie men) begged of the King the territories of Kent, Essex, Middlesex, and Suffolke, (then known by other names) pretending in wooꝝd, that he would, in consideration thereof, keep out *Aurel. Ambrose*, (a competitor of the crowne) whose arrivall King Vortiger much feared, But meaning in deede, to make thereby a key to let into the Realme multitudes of Germanes, for furtherance of his ambitious desire and purpose: which thing in processe of time he brought to passe, not onely creating himselfe and his posteritie Kings of a large quarter, but also thereby shewing the way and entrie, howe others of his nation might follow, and doe the like.

And thus Kent, being once againe (as I saide) reduced into a Kingdome, continued in that estate, by the space of thre hundꝛeth thꝛē scoꝛe and eight yeares, or thereabouts, in the handes of fiftēne successours, as the moste credible authours do repoꝛte: Some others adde, Edbert, and Alric, and so make seventēne in all, whose names doe followe.

1. Hengist, the first Germane.

2. Oesc.

3. Occa.

4. Hermenric: or Ermenric.

5. Echelbert, the first christened.

6. Eadbald.

7. Erconbert, the first that commaunded the observation of Lent, in this shire.

C.

8. Eg-

The Kings  
of Kent.

8. Egbert.

9. Lothar.

10. Eadric.

After his death, Nidred and Wibbard  
 usurped, by the space of seven yeares,  
 and therfore are not registred in the  
 Catalogue of the lawfull Kings.

11. Wightred, he built Saint Martines at Douer.

12. Edbert, added by some.

13. Ethelbert.

14. Alric, added also, by some.

15. Eadbert Pren, or Edelbert Pren.

16. Cuthred.

17. Baldred.

Now, although it might here seeme conuenient, be-  
 fore I passed any further, to disclose suche memorabile  
 things, as haue chaunced during the reignes of al these  
 forenamed Kings: yet for asmuche as my purpose speci-  
 ally is to write a Topographie, or description of places,  
 and no Chronographie, or storie of times, (although I  
 must now and then vse bothe, since the one can not ful-  
 ly be performed without enterlacing the other.) and  
 for that also I shal haue iust occasion hereafter in the  
 particulars of this Shyre, to disclose many of the same,  
 I will at this present, and that by way of digression  
 only, make report of one or two occurrents that happe-  
 ned vnder Ethelbert, & Eadric, two Kings of this coun-  
 trey.

Ethelbert,  
 the King  
 of Kent.

This Ethelbert, besides that he mightely enlarged  
 the boundes of his owne Kingdome, extending the same  
 euen to the riuer of Humber, was also the first King (a-  
 mongst the Saxons, inhabiting this land) that promoted  
 the Kingdome of Christ, as to whome it pleased almighty God



by God to break the bread of his holy word and gospel, through the ministerie and preaching of Augustine the Monk, that was sent from Rome by Pope Gregorie surnamed the great: amongst the Saxons I saide, least any man should thinke, that eyther the faith of Christe, was not heare at all, or not so purely preached, before the coming of that Augustine. For it is past all doubt, by the stoaries of all Countries, and by the testimonie of Beda him selfe (being a Saxon) that the Britons embraced the religion of Christ within this Iland, many hundred yeares before Gregories time: whether in purer sorte then he sent it hither, or no, let them iudge that knowe, that he was called (worthely) *Pater Ceremoniarum*, and that may yet see in Beda, and others, what trüperie crept into the church of God in his time and by his permission, Eadric the other King succeeded in Kent, after Lotharius, who, because he rather reigned by luste, then ruled by lawe, incurred the hatred of his people, and was inuaded by Ceadwalla (King of West-sax) and Mull his brother: whiche entring the countrie, and finding no resistance, herryed it from the one end to the other: & not thus contented, Ceadwalla, in reuenge of his brother Muls death, (whome the countrie people had cruelly slaine in a house, that he had taken for his succour) entred this countrie the second time, and sleying the people, spoiled it without all pitie. And yet not satisfied with all this, he suffered the quarrell to discend to Ina his successour, who ceased not to vnquiet the people of this Shyre, till they agreed to pay him 30000. Markes in golde, for his desired amendes.

These be the matters that I had to note in þe reignes of these two Kings: as for the rest, I passe them ouer to their fit titles, as things rather pertaining to some peculiar places, then incident to the body of the whole.

C.ii.

Shyre

Eadric, the  
King of  
Kent.

Shire, and will now prosecute the residue.

827

First name  
of English-  
men.

In the time of this Baldred, that standeth last in the table of the Kings, Kent was united by King Egbert (who last of all chaunged the name of the people, and called them Englishmen) vnto the Westsaxon Kingdome, which in the ende became Ladie and maistres of al the rest of the kingdomes also: and it was from thenceforth wholly gouerned after the Westsaxon law, as in the Masse of the tripartite lawes of this Realme hath appeared, vntil suche time as King Alfred first diuided the whole Realme into particular Shires, vpon this occasion following.

Beginning  
of Shires.

The Danes, bothe in his time, and befoze, had flocked by sea to the coastes of this land in great numbers, some times waisting and spoiling with sword, and fire, wheresoeuer they might arriue: and sometymes taking with them great booties to their Ships without doing any further harme: which thing (continuing for many yeares togeather) caused the hus bandmen to abandon their tillage, and gaue occasion and hardinesse to euill disposed persons to fall to the like pillage, and robberie: The whiche, the better to cloke their mischief withall, feigned them selues to bee Danishe Pirates, and would some time come on land in one part, and some time in an other, driuing great spoyles (as the Danes had done) to their shippes befoze them. The good king

892.

Alfred therefore, that had merueilously traueiled in repulsing the barbarous Danes, espying this outrage, and thinking it no lesse the parte of a politique Prince, to rote out the noisome subiect, then to hold out the fozein enemy, by aduice of his counsaill, and by the example of Moses (which followed the counsaile of Ietro, his father in law) diuided the whole Realme into certein parts, or Sections (being two and thirtie in number, as I gesse) whiche

whiche of the Saxon woꝛde Scýpan, signifying to cut, he termed shires, or (as we yet speake) shares, and portions: and appointed ouer euery one shyre, an Earle, or Alderman (or both) to whome he committed the gouernment and rule of the same.

These shyres he also bzake into smaller parts, wher  
of some were called Lathes, of the woꝛd zelapian, which  
is, to assemble together: others, hundreds, bycause they  
conteyned iurisdiction ouer an hundreth pledges: and  
others, Tithings, so named, bycause there were in eche  
of them to the number of ten persons, whereof eche one  
was suretie and pledge for others good abearing. He  
ordained furthemoꝛe, that euery man shoulde procure  
him selfe to be receiued into some Tithing, and that if a  
ny were founde of so small credite, that his neighbours  
woulde not become pledge for him, he shoulde soꝛthwith  
be comitted to pꝛyson, least he might do harme abzoade.

By this deuice it came to passe, that good subiectes  
(the traouailing Wæs of the Realme) resorted safely to  
their laboꝛs againe, and the euil and idle Droanes were  
bzien cleane out of the hyue of the common wealth: so  
that in short time, the whole Realme tasted of the swæt  
hony of this blessed peace, and tranquillitie.

Some shadow I do confesse, of this King Alfredes po  
litique institution, remayneth euen til this day in those  
courts which we cal Leetes, where these pledges be yet  
named *francieplegy*, of þ woꝛd fneoborh, which is a free  
pledge: But if the very Image it self were amongst vs,  
who seeth not what benefit would ensue thereby, as wel  
to wardes the suppression of base theues, as for the coꝛ  
rection of idle vagabounds, whiche be the very seede of  
robbers and theues. But leauing this matter to suche  
as beare the sworde, I will plye my penne, and goe  
foꝛwarde,

C.ij.

Thus



Borholder,  
& Tithing-  
man.

Thus muche therefore I thought good, nowe at the first to open, the more at large, because it may serue generally for all Shyres, and shall hereafter deliuer me from often repetition of one thing. Where, by the way, (least I might seeme to haue forgotten the Shire that I haue presently in hand) it is to be noted, that that which in the west countrey was at that time, (and yet is) called, a Tithing, is in Kent termed a Borow, of the Saxon woord, bopþ, which signifieth a Pledge, or a suretie: and the chiefe of these pledges, which the Westernmen call a Tithingman, they of Kent name a Borholder, of the Saxon woordes bopþer ealþow, that is to say, the most Auncient, or elder of the Pledges, whiche thing being vnderstood, the matter will come all to one ende, and I may go forward.

1066.

Kent keepeth her  
olde customes.

In this plight therfore, both this Shyre of Kent, and al the residue of the Shyres of this Realme, were found, when William the Duke of Normandie invaded this Realme: at whose hands the cominaltie of Kent, obeyed with great honour, the continuation of their auncient vsages, notwithstanding that the whole Realme besides suffered alteration and chaunge.

Gauelkyn.

For prooe whereof, I will call to witnesse Thomas Spot, sometimes a Poncke and Chronicker of saint Augustines at Canterbury, who, if he shall seeme to weake to giue sufficient authoritie to the tale, because he only (of all the Storiers that I haue seene) reporteth it, Yet, forasmuch as I my selfe first published that note out of his hystorie, and for that the matter it selfe also is neither incredible, nor unlikely, (the rather because this Shyre, enen vnto this day, enioyeth the custome of giue all kyn discent, dower of the moytie, freedom of birth, & sundrie other vsages muche different from other countries, I neither well may, nor will at all sticke, nowe else, soones to rehearse it.

Al.

1067.

After such tyme(saith he)as Duke William the Conquerour had ouerthrowne King Harold in the field, at Battel in Suffex, and had receiued the Londoners to mercy, he marched with his army toward the Castle of Douer, thinking thereby to haue brought in subiection this countrie of Kent also. But Stigande, the Archebishop of Canterbury, and Egelsine the Abbat of saint Augustines, perceauing the daunger, assembled the countrie men together, and laide befoze them the intollerable pride of the Normanes that inuaded them, & their owne miserable condition, if they should yelde vnto them. By whiche meanes, they so enraged the comen people, that they ran forth with to weapon, and meeting at Swanscombe, elected the Archbishop and the Abbat for their captaines: This done, eache man gotte him a grane bough in his hand, and bare it ouer his head, in suche sort, as when the Duke approached, he was muche amazed therewith, thinking at the first, that it had ben some miraculous wood, that moued towards him: But they as sone as hee came within hearing, caste away their boughes from them, and at the sounde of a trumpet beswared their weapons, and withall dispatched towards him a messenger, which spake vnto him in this manner. The commons of Kent(most noble Duke)are readie to offer thee, eyther peace, or warre, at thine own choyse, and election: peace with their faithfull obedience, if thou wilt permit them to enioy their ancient liberties: warre, and that moste deadly, if thou deny it them.

Meeting at  
Swan-  
combe.

Now when the Duke heard this, and considered that the daunger of deniall was great, and that the thing desired was but smal, he forthwith, moze wisely then willingly, yeldeoed to their request: And by this meane both he receiued Douer Castle, & the Countrie to obedience, & they only of all England, (as shall hereafter appeare)obtained for euer theyr accustomed priuiledges.

And

And thus then hath it appeared (so shortly, as I could) what hath bene the estate and gouernment of this countrie, from the arriuall of Iulius Cæsar, (the first Romane that conquered this Realme) even to this present day. Now therfore, I will set before the Readers eye in Table, a plaine particular of the whole shyre, wherein, to the end, that vnder one labour double commoditie may be reaped, I will not onely diuide it into the seuerall Lathes, hundredes, towne, and bozowes, But also set ouer against eche towne and place, suche summes of money, (as by reporte of the recoorde of the. 13. yeare of her Maiesties reigne) was leuied in the name of a Tenth and Fiftene, vpon euery of the same: which being done, I will haste me to the description of such places, as either saythfull information by word, or credible by storie in writing, hath hitherto ministered me.

The



# The Particular of Kent. 25

## The Lathe of S. Augustines.

**Hundreth of** **Wingham.** } Bozowe of *Wingham.* lrvij.s.i.d.  
 Bozowe of *Rollinge.* lrvij.s.i.d.  
 Bozowe of *Nouington.* lrvij.s.i.d.  
 Bozowe of *Godestone.* lrvij.s.i.d.  
 Bozowe of *Denne.* lrvij.s.i.d.  
 Bozowe of *Tuytham.* rrrij.s.ir.d.  
 Bozowe of *Wimlingswold.* rrrij.s.ir.d.  
 Bozowe of *Kelington.* rrrij.s.vij.d.  
 Bozowe of *Gythorne.* rrvij.s.if.d.  
 The parish of *Ashe,*  
 with the Bozow of *Wyderton.* } rrrij.l.rij.s.iiij.d.  
 Summe. rlvj.l.rriij.s.r.d.

**Hundreth of** **Preston.** } Towne of *Preston.* v.l.ir.s.r.d.  
 Towne of *Elmestone.* l.s.  
 Sum. vij.l.rir.s.r.d.

**Hundreth of** **Ringeslowe.** } Towne of *Woode.* iiij.l.vij.s.vij.d.  
 Towne of *Monketon.* iiij.l.  
 Towne of *Mynster.* rv.l.  
 Towne of *S. Laurence.* rvij.l.rij.s.iiij.d.  
 Towne of *S. Peter.* rv.l.rvij.s.  
 Towne of *S. Iohn.* rriij.l.rij.s.  
 Towne of *S. Gyles.* rv.s.  
 Towne of *S. Nicholas.* r.l.vij.s.  
 Towne of *All Saintes.* iiij.l.vij.s.iiij.d.  
 Towne of *Byrchingstone.* viij.l.rv.s.iiij.d.  
 Sum. Ciiij.l.rriij.s.vij.d.

anulo

D.

Towne

The Lathe  
of S. Au-  
gustines.

## 26 The Particular of Kent.

Hundreth of  
Downhāford. {  
Towne of Staple. iiij. p. viij. s.  
Towne of Adestham. iiij. p. ix. s.  
Towne of Wykham. vij. p. xiiij. s. r. d.  
Towne of Littleborne. vij. p. x. iiij. s.  
Towne of Well. vij. p. x. s. vij. d.  
Sum. xxxij. p. iiij. s. iiij. d.

Hundreth of  
Esrye. {  
Towne of Chillenden. xvij. s.  
Towne of Berston. vij. s. ij. d.  
Towne of Nourington. rr. s.  
Towne of Tylvestone. vij. p. vij. s. iiij. d.  
Towne of Wednesborowe. xv. p. r. s. r. d.  
Towne of Esrye. xiiij. p. rj. s. r. d.  
Towne of Waldershare. xij. s.  
Sum. xxxix. p. vij. s. ij. d.

Hundreth of  
Kinghamford. {  
Borowe of Dorme. xrv. s.  
Borowe of Kingstone. iiij. p. viij. d.  
Borowe of Outemeston. xxiij. s. iiij. d.  
Borowe of Berham. xliij. s. iiij. d.  
Borowe of Bereton. xxiij. s. iiij. d.  
Borowe of Shelving. xrvij. s. vij. d.  
Borowe of Brethe. xxiij. s. iiij. d.  
Sum. xij. p. v. s. vij. d.

Hundreth of  
Betham. {  
Towne of Petham. vij. p. xij. s. vij. d.  
Towne of Chatham. xviij. s. r. d. ob.  
Towne of Walham. iiij. p. ij. s. v. d.  
Sum. xij. p. iiij. s. r. d. ob.

Towne

# The Particular of Kent.

27 The Lathe  
of S. Augu-  
stines.

Hundreth of Bewserough.	Towne of Colred.	rrr. s.
	Towne of Shebertswold.	lvij. s.
	Towne of Popeshal.	l. s.
	Towne of S. Margaret.	liij. p.
	Towne of Oxney.	rrvj. s. vij. d. ob.
	Towne of Westclif.	rrr. s.
	Towne of Guston.	rrriij. s.
	Towne of Bearfield.	rrr. s.
	Towne of Charlton.	rl. vij. s.
	Towne of Hougham.	liij. p.
	Towne of Bucland.	rrvij. s.
	Towne of Reuer.	rl. s.
	Towne of Ewell.	lv. s.
	Towne of Leden.	rrriij. s. q.
	Towne of Smalhead.	riij. s. liij. d.
	Towne of Westlangden.	rr. s.
Sum. rrrij. p. rv. s. xj. d. ob. q.		

Hundreth of Cornilo.	Bozowe of Finglesham.	rrr. s.
	Bozowe of Sholdon.	rl. s.
	Bozowe of Marten.	rrr. s.
	Bozowe of Eastlangdon.	rij. s.
	Bozowe of Asheley.	rl. s.
	Bozowe of Sutton.	rrriij. s. v. d. ob.
	Bozowe of Mongeham Magna.	rl. s.
	Bozowe of Rippley.	rvij. s.
	Bozowe of Norborne.	rrriij. s.
	Bozowe of Deale.	riij. p. rix. s.
	Bozowe of Walmer.	liij. p. v. s. viij. d.
	Bozow of Mongeham Parua.	rvij. s.
	Towne of Ringwolde.	viij. p. r. d.
Sum. rl. p. vj. s. xj. d. ob.		

D. ij.

Towne



The Lathe  
of S. Au-  
gustines.

28. The Particular of Kent.

Hundreth of  
Blenzgate.

Towne of Sturey.  $\text{rij. l. xiiij. s.}$   
Towne of Chislelet.  $\text{rij. l. xiiij. s.}$   
Towne of Reculver.  $\text{rij. l. xiiij. s.}$   
Towne of Herne.  $\text{rij. l. xv. s.}$   
Sum.  $\text{l. l. xvij. s.}$

Hundreth of  
Westgate.

Bozowe of Westgate.  $\text{ix. l. xix. s. ij. d. ob.}$   
Bozowe of Harbaldowne.  $\text{iiij. l.}$   
Bozowe of Hakington.  $\text{iiij. l. vij. s.}$   
Bozowe of Cokering.  $\text{iiij. l. xiiij. s.}$   
Bozowe of Tunforde.  $\text{xxv. s.}$   
Bozowe of Rusheborne.  $\text{xxviij. s. l. d.}$   
Bozowe of Harwiche.  $\text{lviij. s. j. d.}$   
Sum.  $\text{xxviij. l. j. d. ob.}$

Hundreth of  
Whitstaple.

Towne of Bleane.  $\text{viij. l. xj. s. ix. d.}$   
Towne of Whitstaple.  $\text{viij. l. xv. s.}$   
Towne of Natington.  $\text{xj. s. iiij. d. ob. q.}$   
Sum.  $\text{riiij. l. xviij. s. j. d. ob. q.}$

Hundreth of  
Bregge.

Towne of Patriksborne.  $\text{iiij. l. xviij. s.}$   
Towne of Bekeborne.  $\text{iiij. l. xviij. s.}$   
Towne of Bregge.  $\text{xv. s.}$   
Towne of Blackmanbury.  $\text{xxviij. s.}$   
Towne of litle Harden.  $\text{xxviij. s.}$   
Towne of Natindon.  $\text{xxviij. s.}$   
Towne of great Harden.  $\text{xxix. s.}$   
Sum.  $\text{riiij. l. ij. s.}$

Towne of Sefalter.  $\text{iiij. l. vij. s. viij. d.}$

Summe of this whole Lathe of S.  
Augustines.  $\text{CCCCxxviij. l. xv. s.}$

The

The Lathe of Shepway.

Hundredeth of S. Martine. { The towne of Newchurche. xx.s.iiij.d.  
The towne of S. Maries. xliij.s.  
The towne of Hope. xij.p.vij.s.x.d.ob.  
The towne of S. Martine. xliij.s.ij.d.  
The towne of S. Clement. l.s.iiij.d.ob.  
The towne of Iuechurche. lxxvij.s.j.d.  
The towne of Medley. iiij.s.ij.d.  
Sum. xxiij.p.xliij.s.xj.d.

Hundredeth of Langport. { The towne of S. Nicholas. xviij.s.  
The towne of Lyd. ix.p.ij.s.iiij.d.  
The towne of Rompney. xiiij.s.iiij.d.  
The towne of Hope. xxix.s.  
Sum. xij.p.viiij.d.

Hundredeth of Alonsoredge { The towne of Snargate. lviij.s.xj.d.  
The towne of Brenset. iiij.p.ij.d.  
The towne of Brokeland. lxxviij.s.  
The towne of Fayrefeld. xliij.s.ij.d.  
The towne of Snaue. xxxij.s.vj.d.ob.  
The towne of Iuechurche. xxxj.s.iiij.d.  
The towne of Newchurche. vij.s.i.d.ob.  
Sum. xviij.p.x.s.x.d.

Hundredeth of Byrcholte Francheffe. { The towne of Aldington. iiij.p.x.s.ob.  
The towne of Mersbam. viij.s.x.d.  
Sum. iiij.p.viiij.s.x.d.ob.

D.iiij.

The

Hundredeth of  
Newchurch.

The towne of Bylsington. liij. s. viij. d.  
The towne of Newcharche. xxxij. s. ii. d.  
The towne of Roking. l. s. vj. d.  
The towne of Snaue. viij. s. iiij. d.  
The towne of S. Marie. xxxij. s. iiij. d.  
Sum. ix. l.

Hundredeth of  
Stowting.

The towne of Elmested. lxxij. s. ix. d.  
The towne of Scelling. xix. s. ij. d.  
The towne of Waltham. xij. s. vij. d.  
The towne of Stowting. xxx. s. xj. d.  
The towne of Horton. liij. s. viij. d. ob.  
The towne of Stanford. xxvj. s. x. d. ob.  
Sum. xj. l. vj. s.

Hundredeth of  
Loningbo-  
rough.

The towne of Eleham. xvi. l. xij. d.  
The towne of Acryse. vij. s. viij. d.  
The towne of Hardresse. xxx. s. iiij. d.  
The towne of Stelling. xxx. s. j. d. ob.  
The towne of Lyminge. ix. l. xv. s. viij. d.  
The towne of Paddlesworth. } xvij. s. iiij. d. ob.  
Sum. xxx. l. ij. s. j. d.

Hundredeth of  
Strete.

Towne of Limeane. lxxv. s. j. d.  
Towne of Aldington. xxiij. s. vij. d. ob.  
Towne of Sellinge. vj. l. xj. s. ix. d.  
Towne of Bonington. xij. s. ix. d.  
Towne of Herste. xviij. s. vj. d. ob.  
Towne of Westinghanger. xvij. s. xj. d. ob. q  
Sum. xxiij. l. xvij. s. viij. d. ob. q

Hundredeth of  
Oxeney.

Towne of Wyttesham. lvi. s. j. d.  
Towne of Stone. lxxviij. s. iiij. d.  
Towne of Ebbene. xij. s. vj. d.  
Sum. vij. l. vj. s. xj. d.



# The Particular of Kent.

31 The Lathe  
of Shepway

Hundreth of Heane. {  
Towne of Saltwood.  $\text{viij. l. viij. s. viij. d.}$   
Towne of Lymeane.  $\text{v. s. j. d.}$   
Towne of Postling.  $\text{iiij. l. r. s. rj. d.}$   
Sum.  $\text{rj. l. iij. s. viij. d.}$

Hundreth of Hame. {  
Towne of Warehorne.  $\text{liij. s. v. d.}$   
Towne of Shaddockherst.  $\text{v. s. ii. d.}$   
Towne of Roking.  $\text{xxix. s.}$   
Towne of Snaue.  $\text{r. s. ij. d.}$   
Towne of Orlaston.  $\text{ix. s. ij. d.}$   
Sum.  $\text{Cb. s. rj. d.}$

Hundreth of Worthe. {  
Towne of Dymchurch.  $\text{lxj. s. r. d.}$   
Towne of Bormershe.  $\text{iiij. l. viij. s. iiij. d.}$   
Towne of Newchurch.  $\text{vj. s. ij. d. ob.}$   
Towne of Estbredg.  $\text{xl. s. j. d.}$   
Towne of Blackmanstone.  $\text{xij. s.}$   
Towne of Westheathe.  $\text{xxij. s. ij. d. q.}$   
Towne of Lymen.  $\text{xxix. s. iij. d. ob.}$   
Towne of Aldingweke, and Organsweke.  $\text{xxij. s. v. d.}$   
Sum.  $\text{xiij. l. iij. s. iiij. d. q.}$

Hundreth of Folkestone. {  
Towne of Lyden.  $\text{xxxiij. s. j. d. ob.}$   
Towne of Swyngheld.  $\text{Cvj. s. ix. d.}$   
Towne of Akkam.  $\text{xiiij. l. xviij. s.}$   
Towne of Folkestone.  $\text{ix. l. v. s. v. d. ob.}$   
Towne of Hawking.  $\text{xxv. s. vj. d.}$   
Towne of Arysse.  $\text{xix. s. iiij. d.}$   
Towne of Newington.  $\text{viij. l. xiiij. s. iij. d. ob.}$   
Towne of Cheriton.  $\text{iiij. l. ij. s. iij. d.}$   
Sum.  $\text{xlvi. l. ij. s. ix. d. ob.}$

Summe of this whole Lath of  
Shepway.  $\text{CCij. l. xij. s. ix. d. ob. q.}$

# 32 The Particular of Kent.

## The Lathe of Scray, or Shervvinhope.

**Hundreth of**  
*Charte.*

<i>Ashtifforde.</i>	<i>iiij. l. ix. s.</i>
<i>Charte.</i>	<i>iiij. l. xviij. s. iiij. d.</i>
<i>Betrisden.</i>	<i>iiij. l. ij. s. iiij. d.</i>
<i>Hothesfelde.</i>	<i>xl. s. viij. d. ob.</i>
<b>Sum.</b>	<i>liij. l. ix. s. ij. d. ob.</i>

**Hundreth of**  
*Longbridge.*

<i>Willesbronghe.</i>	<i>liij. s. vij. d.</i>
<i>Kenington.</i>	<i>iiij. l. x. s. vij. d.</i>
<i>Seuington.</i>	<i>xviij. s. vij. d. q.</i>
<i>Kingfnothe.</i>	<i>xxij. s. vij. d.</i>
<i>Marsham.</i>	<i>xij. s. x. d. ob.</i>
<i>Hynxsell.</i>	<i>xiiij. s. vij. d. ob.</i>
<i>Ashtifforde.</i>	<i>liij. s. q.</i>
<b>Sum.</b>	<i>xij. l. xij. s. vij. d. ob.</i>

**Hundreth of**  
*Byrcholte.*

<i>Westbraborne.</i>	<i>xxij. s. v. d.</i>
<i>Hastingleyghe.</i>	<i>xxij. s. vij. d. ob.</i>
<i>Bircholte.</i>	<i>xx. s. iiij. d. ob.</i>
<i>Eastbraborne.</i>	<i>xix. s. viij. d. ob.</i>
<b>Sum.</b>	<i>iiij. l. xiiij. s. ob.</i>

**Hundreth of**  
*Boughton vn*  
*der Bleane.*

<i>Graueney.</i>	<i>v. l. viij. s. iiij. d.</i>
<i>Harneshill.</i>	<i>iiij. l. xiiij. s. x. d.</i>
<i>Sellyng.</i>	<i>ix. l.</i>
<i>Boughton.</i>	<i>ix. l. v. s. vij. d. ob. q.</i>
<b>Sum.</b>	<i>xxviij. l.</i>
	<i>viij. s. ix. d. ob. q.</i>

*Teneham.*

# The Particular of Kent.

33 The Lath  
of Scray, or  
Sherwin-  
hope.

**Hundreth of**  
**Teneham.**  
Teneham. ix. l. ij. s. ij. d.  
Linstede. ix. l. ix. s. iij. d.  
Eastchurche and Stonepit. xxij. s. iij. d.  
Hedcorne. x. s.  
Dodington. vi. l. x. s. ij. d.  
Iwade. x. s.  
Sum. xxvi. l. x. s.

**Hundreth of**  
**Calehill.**  
Nasbe. xx. s. ij. d.  
Felde. xxiiij. s. viij. d.  
Haylathe. xxxvj. s. x. d.  
Sandpit. xxvi. s. vj. d.  
Charte. xl. s. x. d.  
Welles. xviij. s.  
Charing. xvj. s. vj. d.  
Sandhill. xxvj. s. vj. d.  
Alton. xvi. s. x. d.  
Eastlenham. xxxv. s. viij. d.  
Stanforde. xl. s. iij. d.  
Pluckley. iij. l.  
Edisley. xxxv. s.  
Halmgarfe. xlv. s. iij. d.  
Sednor. xliij. s. ij. d.  
Halmeste. l. s. viij. d.  
Saint Johns. vij. s. vj. d.  
Grenehill. xij. s. iij. d.  
Sum. xxix. l. x. s. x. d.

Stones



The Lathe  
of Scray, or  
Sherwin-  
hope.

34

# The Particular of Kent.

Hundzethof  
Feuersham.

Stone. xxxviij. s.  
Preston. v. p. viij. s. xj. d.  
Stalliffeld. xij. s.  
Luddenham. iij. p. vj. s. viij. d.  
Ore. x. s.  
Hartie. xxij. s. xj. d.  
Dawington. iij. p. ij. s. viij. d.  
Ospringe. iij. p. ij. s. v. d.  
Feuersham. ix. p. xxiij. d. ob.  
Godneston. xxix. s. viij. d.  
Selling. xxxviij. s. j. d.  
Sheldwicke. iij. p. viij. s. v. d.  
Throwly. v. p. xviij. s. viij. d.  
Badlesmere. xxij. s. ij. d.  
Leueland. vj. s. x. d.  
Neuenham. xij. s. v. d.  
Norton. xxx. s.  
Boreffield. xiiij. s. iij. d.  
Boughton Malherb. xj. s. viij. d.  
Eseling. iij. p. j. s. j. d.  
Sum. liij. p. iij. s. ix. d. ob.

Hundzethof  
Tenterdene.

Tenterdene. xij. p. viij. s. j. d.  
Ebnye. xxxviij. s. x. d.  
Sum. ciiii. p. iij. s. xj. d.

Hundzethof  
Roluinden.

Roluinden. iij. p. xj. s. x. d.  
Benyndene. lviij. s. viij. d.  
Sum. vj. p. x. s. vj.

Bedyndene.

35 The Lathie  
of Scray, or  
Sherwin-  
hope.

Hundzethof { Newendene. viij. s.  
Sandherst. rrr. s. r. d.  
Selbrittæne. { Hawkherst. v. s. viij. d. ob.  
Benyn den e. rrr. s. ij. d.  
Sum, iij. l. r. s. viij. d. ob.

**C.ij.**

Gowdherst.

The Lathe  
of Scray, or  
Sherwin-  
hope.

36

# The Particular of Kent.

Hundreth of  
Mardene.

Gowdherst. xxxviij. s. iij. d.  
Stapleherst. xviij. s. ix. d.  
Marden. xix. s. viij. d.  
Sum. iij. l. xiiij. s. viij. d.  
Newendene. xxiiij. s. xj. d. ob.

The Balywike of Kay, in the  
Hundred of Mylton.

Tong. xliij. s. ix. d.  
Rodmersham. xix. s. vj. d. ob.  
Kingslowne. vj. s. vj. d.  
Borden. viij. s. vj. d.  
Tunstall. iij. l. xiiij. s. iij. d.  
Bredgar. ix. s.  
Morston. xxvj. s.

Sum. ix. l. vj. s. viij. d. ob.

The Balywike of Shepey,  
in the Hundred of  
Mylton.

Hundreth of  
Mylton.

Mynster. xj. l. ix. d.  
Eastchurche. xj. l. xiiij. s. x. d. ob.  
Wardon. iij. l. vj. s. iij. d.  
Lesdon. iij. l. xviij. s. ix. d.  
Sum. xxx. l. xviij. s. viij. d. ob.

The Balywike of West, in  
the Hundred of Mylton.

Raynham. ix. l. xij. s. vj. d. ob.  
Upchurche. vj. l. x. s. x. d.  
Hartyp. iij. l. xij. s.  
Newenten. iij. l. iij. s. iij. d.  
Halstone. xvij. s.  
Stokebury. ix. s. v. d.  
Sum. xv. l. xvij. s. j. d. ob.

The



# The Particular of Kent.

37

The Lathe  
of Scray, or  
Sherwin  
hope.

The Balywike of Kay, in  
the Hundred of  
Mylton.

Sedingborne. *viij. l. viij. s. ij. d.*

Bapchilde. *iiiiij. l. ob.*

Tong. *xlviij. s. ij. d.*

Rodmersham. *lv. s. v. d. ob.*

Bredgar. *ix. s. viij. d.*

Tunstall. *viij. s. viij. d.*

Morston. *viij. s. viij. d.*

Elmesley. *xxviij. s. r. d.*

Mylstede. *xxxiij. s. viij. d.*

King Salowne. *xxi. s. ob.*

**Sum. *xx. l. xviij. s. ob.***

Hundreth of  
Mylton.

The Balywike of Borden,  
in the Hundred of  
Mylton.

Mylton. *viij. l. r. s. viij. d. ob.*

Stokebury. *xx. s.*

Bredgar. *iiij. l. xv. s. iiij. d.*

Bycnore. *xiiij. d.*

Borden. *iiiiij. l. r. s. r. d.*

Sedingborne Parva. *viiiij. s. viij. d.*

Tunstall. *xv. s. viij. d.*

Newington. *xliij. s. ix. d.*

Bobbing. *liij. s. v. d.*

Halstowe. *xliij. s. iiij. d.*

Iwade. *xxviij. s. ix. d.*

**Sum. *xxviij. l. viij. s. iiij. d. ob.***

**C. iiij.**

**Cantham.**

The Lathe  
of Scray, or  
Sherwin  
h. ope. ad  
38

# The Particular of Kent.

Hundreth of  
Felberoughe

Cartham. Crv. s. iij. d.  
Godmersham. Cr. s.  
Chiltham. r. l. s. iij. d.  
Sum. xxj. l. vij. s. j. d.

Hundreth of  
Wye.

Bewbree. vj. l. viij. s. iij. d.  
Trentworthe. l. s.  
Socombe. iij. l. vj. s. iij. d. ob.  
Gotley. r. l. s. iij. d.  
Bempston. r. s. vj. d.  
Walmington. r. s. vij. d.  
Deane. r. s. ij. d. ob.  
Shoenden. r. l. s. iij. d.  
Hellynge. v. s. ob.  
Eastwell. lb. s. iij. d. ob.  
Towne. xxxviij. s. iij. d. ob.  
Cockliscombe. r. l. s. iij. d.  
Brompsforde. r. l. s. iij. d.  
Tokingham nothing, because  
it is in decay.  
Sum. xxvj. l. xij. d. ob.

The town of Offprege. v. l. ij. s. ij. d.

The Hundreth of Marden. vij. l. vj. s. r. d.

Summe of this whole Lathe of  
Scray. CCCxij. l. xviij. s. r. d. ob. q.

The

# The Particular of Kent. 39

## The Lathe of Aylefforde.

Hundreth of { The towne of } viij. l. x. s.  
Chetham. { Chetham. }

Hundreth of { Gillingham & } xv. l. x. s. ob.  
Gillingham, & { Greane. }

Berstede. xviij. s. iiij. d.

Ulcombe. li. s.

Otham. xx. s. vi. d.

Wormesell. xliij. s. viij. d.

Thorneham. xli. s. iiij. d.

Hedcorne. xliij. s.

Charte. xxxv. s. i. d.

Boughton Maleherbe. xviij. s.

Boughton Mouchelsey. xliiij. s. iiij. d.

Holingborne. iiij. l. xliij. s. iiij. d.

East Sutton. xxxix. s. iiij. d.

Hundreth of { Frenstede. } l. s.

Eythorde.

Leneham. vi. l. viij. s.

Harryesham. lxiiij. s.

Otterinden. xli. s. ij. d.

Sutton valance. xlv. s. xj. d. ob. q.

Leedes. xlv. s. viij. d.

Bromesfeld. iiij. s. vi. d.

Stokebery. xxxvi. s.

Langley. xv. s. iiij. d.

Wychelynge. iiij. s. xj. d.

Aldington. xxxv. s. viij. d.

Byckmore. l. s. iiij. d.

Sum. xxxix. l. xviij. s. v. d. ob. q.

Maydestone.



The Lath  
of Ayles-  
ford.

# 40 The Particular of Kent.

Hundreth of  
Maydstone.

Maydstone.  $\text{rxx. lxx. s. ij. d.}$   
Loose.  $\text{xxxiij. s. iij. d.}$   
Lynton & Crookherst.  $\text{l. s. viij. d.}$   
Westre.  $\text{xlviij. s. ij. d.}$   
Stone.  $\text{lxxviij. s. ij. d.}$   
East Farleyghe.  $\text{xlvi. s. j. d. ob.}$   
Detlinge.  $\text{lxx. s. iij. d.}$   
Boxley.  $\text{lxx. lxx. s. iij. d.}$   
Sum.  $\text{xxxiij. lxxviij. s. iij. d. ob.}$

Hundreth of  
Chamell.

Chalke.  $\text{lix. s.}$   
Hallinge.  $\text{xxij. s.}$   
Shorne.  $\text{lxx. lxx. s. iij. d.}$   
Cowlunge.  $\text{xxxiij. s. viij. d.}$   
Higham.  $\text{lxx. lxx. s. iij. d.}$   
Denton.  $\text{xlvi. s. vi. d.}$   
Merston.  $\text{viii. s. i. d. ob.}$   
Frendsbury.  $\text{lxx. lxx. s. i. d. ob.}$   
Cookstone.  $\text{lxx. s. ii. d.}$   
Cobham.  $\text{Cvi. s. viii. d.}$   
Strode.  $\text{lxx. lxx. s. viij. d.}$   
Clyffe.  $\text{vi. lxx. s. x. d.}$   
Stoke.  $\text{xxvi. s. x. d. ob.}$   
Sum.  $\text{xl. lxx. s. ii. d. ob.}$

The towne of }  
Mallinge.  $\text{lxx. lxx. s. viij. d.}$

Huntington

# The Particular of Kent.

41 The Larhe  
of Aylef-  
forde.

**Hundreth of**  
**Twysford.**  
Huntington. xv. s.  
Yaldinge. lxxviij. s. iij. d.  
East Peckham. lxxviij. s. j. d.  
Netlested. vij. s. vi. d.  
Watlinbury. vij. s. ob.  
West Farley. vij. s. iij. d.  
Testan. iij. s. vj. d.  
Marden. viij. s.  
Brenchesley. iij. s.  
Tudeley. xvij. s.

Sum. r. l. xv. s. viij. d. ob.

**Hundreth of**  
**Littlefeld.**  
Mereworth. xvij. s. iij. d. q.  
East Peckham. xliij. s. vij. d.  
West Peckham. xxviij. s. iij. d.  
Of the Baro- }  
nie of Hadlow. } xxiiij. s. viij. d.

Sum. v. l. xliij. s. xj. d.

**The halfe Hundreth of Westbarnsted.**

Westbarnsted. xl. s. j. d. ob.

**Hundreth of**  
**Brenchesley.**  
Brenchesley. lxxiiij. s. iij. d.  
Horsmondene. Cxi. s. iij. d.  
Hotbybroughe. xlvij. s. xj. d.  
Bayham. xxiiij. s. vj. d. ob.  
Lamberherst. xvij. s. iij. d.  
Beane croche. ix. s. ij. d.  
Taperegge. ix. s. ij. d.  
Sum. xliij. l. xliij. s. viij. d. ob.

**Hundreth of**  
**Wacheling-**  
**Stone.**  
Borden. lviij. s. ij. d.  
Spelherst. xxx. s. ij. d.  
Stoningley in Pepingley. xxxviij. s. ix. d.  
Sheyborne Ruschall. clij. s. ix. d. q.  
Tudeley. xxxiiij. s. r. d. ob.  
Atherste. ij. s.  
Sum. ix. l. xix. s. viij. d. ob. q.

ff.

South.

The Lathe  
of Ayles-  
ford.

42

# The Particular of Kent.

The Lowy  
of Tunbrigge

Southe. .iij. l. r. iij. s. ij. d.  
Hilden. .iij. l. v. s.  
Hadlowe. .iij. l. r. s. r. d.  
Tunbrigge. .xliij. s. r. d. ob.  
Sum. r. iij. l. r. iij. s. r. d. ob.

Hundreth of  
Wrotham.

Wrotham. r. l. iij. s. j. d. ob.  
Stansted. .liij. s. iij. d.  
Iteham. lxxv. s. iij. d. ob.  
Shibborne. .xxiiij. s. r. d.  
Sum. r. vij. l. vj. s. vij. d.  
Sum. r. vij. l. vj. s. vij. d.

Hundreth of  
Larkefeld.

Byrlinge. lxxv. s. vj. d. ob.  
Pedelfworthe. .xxiiij. s. ij. d. ob. q.  
Layborne. .xvj. s. rj. d.  
S. Leonarde. .xvj. s. ij. d. ob. q.  
Ryashe. .xxvj. s. vij. d. ob. q.  
Addington. .xix. s. j. d. ob. q.  
Offam. .xiiij. s. ix. d.  
Trotty schyffe. .xvij. s. vij. d. q.  
Snothelande. .liij. s. ix. d. ob.  
Woldham, with  
the Parish of } .xxviij. s. r. d. ob.  
S. Margaret.  
Allington. r. s. ij. d.  
Dytton. v. s. vij. d.  
Eftemallinge. .vii. l. ij. s. ob.  
Borham. .xliij. s. ob.  
Acleford. .Cxxv. s. v. d. ob. q.  
Rugmerhyll. .xx. s. iij. d.  
Horsmondene. .xxiiij. s. vij. d. ob. q.  
Huntington. .viij. s. ij. d. ob. q.  
Sum. .xxvij. l. vj. s. iij. d. ob.

The



# The Particular of Kent.

43

The Lathe  
of Ayles-  
forde.

Hundreth of  
Hoo.

The towne of *S. Warburge.* *lx. l. ij. s. viij. d.*  
The towne of *S. Marie.* *liij. l. xiiij. s. iij. d.*  
The towne of *All Saints.* *Cxj. s. iij. d.*  
The towne of *Stoke.* *xxiii. s. vj. d. ob.*  
*Halsto.* *lvij. s. r. d. ob.*  
*West Peckham.* *xxviij. s. vj. d. ob.*  
*Cobham.* *xxix. s. vij. d. ob.*  
*Sum.* *xxv. l. xij. s. r. d.*

Hundreth of  
Toltingtrow.

*Mepeham.* *vj. l.*  
*Luddesdon.* *xl. s.*  
*Telesfeld.* *xliij. s. viij. d.*  
*Gore.* *lxiiij. s. vij. d.*  
*Gransend.* *l. s. vj. d.*  
*Torne.* *xlviij. s. vj. d.*  
*Mylton.* *l. s. vj. d.*  
*Sum.* *xx. l. xij. s. ix. d.*

Summe of this whole Lathe of  
*Aylesford.* *CCC. l. xvj. s. xi. d. ob.*

*A. G.*

The

The Lathe of Sutton  
at Hone.The towne of Rokesley. *xxx. s. r. d.*Bexley. *vi. l. xij. d.*North Craye. *xx. s.*Orpington. *liij. l. xij. s. r. d.*Foryscraye. *xxij. s. v. d.*Chellefeld. *lxxij. s. viij. d.*Farneburghe. *xlvi. s. iij. d.*Codeham. *lxxij. s. ij. d.*Hundredeth of  
Rokesley.West Wickham. *xxxviij. s. iij. d.*S. Marie Craye. *lxx. s. d.*Downe. *liij. s. iij. d.*Hese. *xxij. s. viij. d.*Keston. *xxij. s. iij. d.*Heuer & Lingell. *xxvij. s. iij. d.*Nokeholte. *xx. s.*Pollescraie. *xlviij. s. viij. d.*Chesilhurst. *xlvi. s. iij. d.*Sum. *xxxviij. l. ix. s. iij. d.*

The

# The Particular of Kent.

45 The Lathe  
of Sutton  
at Hone.

Hundreth of  
Axston.

Towne of Southfleet. *liij. l. xj. s. vj. d. ob.*  
Sutton. *xxj. s. vj. d. ob.*  
Fawkeham. *xxix. s. ij. d. ob.*  
Longefeld. *xxij. s. vj. d.*  
Harteley. *xxx. s. vj. d.*  
Ashe. *lxxix. s. ij. d. ob.*  
Rydley. *rbij. s.*  
Kingsdowne. *xlj. s. iij. d.*  
Maplescombe. *rbj. s. viij. d.*  
Farmingeham. *vs. d. ob.*  
Stone. *lxxij. s. ix. d. ob.*  
Swanescomb. *lxj. s. ob.*  
Darrent. *xxviiij. s. ij. d. ob.*  
Horton. *liij. l. ix. s. vj. ob.*  
Eynesforde. *xxvij. s. xj. d.*  
Lullingstone. *xlviij. s. ij. d. ob.*  
Sum. *xxix. l. x. s. viij. d.*

Hundreth of  
Coddeshethe.

The towne of Shorham. *lxxviij. s.*  
Halsted. *xlviij. s. iij. d.*  
Otteford. *xxij. s. ij. d.*  
Woodland. *vij. s. viij. d.*  
Sundrishe. *x. s. viij. d.*  
Seuenocke. *liij. l. xv. s.*  
Kemsynge. *xxix. s. x. d.*  
Seale. *lix. s.*  
Cheneninge. *xxix. s. viij. d.*  
Leighe. *xlviij. s.*  
Spelherst. *vs.*  
Sum. *rbviij. l. xliij. s. iij. d.*

The



The Lathe  
of Sutton  
at Hont.

46

# The Particular of Kent.

Hundreth of  
Somerdene.

The towne of Cheneing. xvj. s. iij. d.

Spelherste. xij. d.

Coueden. ix. s. iij. d.

Leighe. vj. s.

Penseberste. v. s. vj. d.

Heuer, with the Bozowe  
of Tmbridge. } vj. s.

Sum. xlv. s.

Hundreth of  
Westram.

Towne of Etonbridge. xxij. s.

Westram. xij. s. ij. d.

Coueden. vij. s.

Brasted vpland. xij. s. iij. d.

Sum. iij. l. x. s. vj. d.

Hundreth of  
Bromley and  
Beckenham.

Towne of Bromley. viij. l.

Beckenham. Cx. s. vj. d.

Sum. xij. l. x. s. vj. d.

The towne of Brasted. xxvj. s. v. d. ob.

Hundreth of  
Blackheath.

Towne of Lewesham. x. l. ij. s. ij. d.

Lee. ij. s. x. d.

Ketbrooke. xxvij. s. vij. d.

Eltham. vij. l. xvj. s.

Chesylherst and  
Noringham. } xij. s. vij. d.

Westgrenewich. lv. s. x. d.

Charleton. xlvij. s. vij. d.

Wolwyche. xij. s. x. d.

Eastgrenewiche. vij. l. iij. s. ij. d.

Sum. xxxvij. l. x. s. vij. d.

Towne

# The Particular of Kent.

47

The Lathe  
of Sutton  
at Home

Hundreth of  
Lytle and  
Lesnes.

The towne of Erythe.  $\text{xlviij. l. iij. s. iij. d.}$   
Craford.  $\text{vi. l. xvi. s.}$   
Plumsted.  $\text{vi. l. xix. s.}$   
Sum.  $\text{xxviij. l. xix. s. iij. d.}$

The towne of Dertford.  $\text{xlviij. l. iij. s. viij. d.}$

Summe of this whole Lathe of Sutton  
at Home.  $\text{Cxxxix. l. xv. s. iij. d.}$

Fran

## Fraunchises.

Of the Duchie.

Of the Archebifhop.

Of the Bifhop of Roche-  
fter.Of the Deane of Canter-  
bury.

Of Otford.

Of We.

Of Aheford.

Of M2otham.

Of Eltham.

Of Dpyenge.

*Knights fees in olde time,*

254. and Di. whereof. 27.

belonged to the Archebi-  
fhop, eyght to the Bifhop  
of Rochefter, and the reft  
to the King.*Forreftes and Parkes.*South Frythe, for pothe  
Frythe. 3. parkes.

Otford, two.

Knoll.

Cromebidge.

Mantbyft, difparked.

Menchirft.

Wrafte dif.

Wenden dif.

Wener dif.

Wopam dif.

W2otham dif.

Wghtam dif.

Wage dif.

Woftern dif.

Wutton dif.

Wangley dif.

Woling.

Wyzling.

Wobham.

Walington dif.

Wewood dif.

Wrenewiche.

Eltham. 3.

Wshotwe.

Wouthparke.

Wullingftone.

Walehyl.

Wades.

W. Auguftines.

Wedgebury.

Weftenhanger.

Walden.

Wanifwell.

Wungerthall.

Wye dif.

Wolkfton dif.

Whozland.

Stone



# The Particular of Kent. 49

Stonehyt, dis.

Stolwing.

Saltwood.

Posting.

At Ashford.

Sissingherst.

Claffenbury.

Drenboth. 2. dis.

## Hilles of name.

Shooters hyll

Red hyll.

Cade hyll.

Cockshot hyll.

Shorne hyll.

Northdownes.

Worley hyll.

Boughton hyll.

Byrling hyll.

Kener hyll.

Kaynam downe.

Pyll hyll.

Baram downe.

South downe.

## Ryvers.

Thamis.

Kauensbozne.

Cray.

Darent.

Medwey.

Rother.

Lymen.

Bewl.

Genlade.

Wantlume.

Stowze.

## Bridges as

Depeford

Lewsham

bpō Kanent.

Crayford.

upon Cray.

Cato bridge

Libridge.

Byatbridge

Wingford

Walding.

Teston

Farley

Maydstone

Aileford

Rochester

upon Medwey.

Shorham

Ainsford

Farninghā

Dartford

bpō Darent.

Chaford.

Lamberhirst.

Bewl.

Hetcorne.

Pewendene.

Ashford.

Canterburie.

G.

Cities.

Cities.		
Canterburie.		
Rochester.		
	Tuesday, at	Wrotham.
		Donoy.
		Sandwiche.
Wednesday, at		Canterbury.
		Grauesend.
		S. Mary Cray.
Thursday, at		Paydstone.
		Sandwyche.
Friday, at		Canterburie.
		Rochester.
		Lunbridge.
Markets,		Kumney.
upon.		Hythe.
		Douer.
		Sandwyche.
		Feuersham.
Saturday, at		Hylton.
		Alheford.
		Cranebroke.
		Lenham.
		Mallyng.
		Sennock.
		Dartford.

# The Particular of Kent. 50

## Fayres at

Ashford. 27. July, being  
 S. Kuffines day.  
 Bromley. 1. februarye,  
 being S. Widges day: and  
 the. 25. of July, being Saint  
 James day.  
 Brastede, on Thursday  
 in Rogation weeke.  
 Charte the great. 25.  
 Marche, being the Annun-  
 ciation of the blessed virgine  
 Marie.  
 Charing. 23. April, being  
 S. Georges day. 13. October  
 being S. Edwards day. 18.  
 Octob. being S. Lukes day.  
 Caunterbury, the tues-  
 day in Whitson weeke. 27.  
 July, being the seauen shee-  
 pers day. 29. Sept. being  
 S. Michaels day: and. 29.  
 Decem. being S. Thomas  
 Becketts day.  
 Cranbrook. 29. May, being  
 S. Cozones day: and. 24.  
 June, being Midsummer day.  
 Chilham. 25. July, being  
 S. James day.  
 Charlton. 18. Octob. being  
 S. Lukes day.  
 Clyffe. 17. September,  
 the Purification, or Can-  
 dlemas day.  
 Douer. 25. July, being  
 S. James day. 24. August,  
 being S. Bartilmewes day:  
 and. 11. Nouemb. being S.  
 Martines day.  
 Fotherham. 14. februarye  
 being S. Valentines day:  
 and. 1. August, being Lam-  
 mas day.  
 Folkstone. 27. June, be-  
 ing S. Crescents day.  
 Gravesend. 25. January,  
 being S. Waules day: and  
 13. October, being S. Co-  
 wards day.  
 Hertesham. 24. June, be-  
 ing Midsummer day.  
 Hedcorne. 28. June, be-  
 ing S. Leos day.  
 Hide. 17. Nouemb. be-  
 ing S. Hughes day.  
 Lenham. 27. May, being  
 S. Bodes day: and. 21. Sep-  
 tember, being S. Mathews  
 day.  
 Lydde. 11. July: being S.  
 Benets day.  
 Maidstone. 1. May, being  
 Phillip and Jacobs day: 9.  
 June, being S. Edmundes  
 day: 6. October, being S.  
 Faithes day. 2. Feb. being  
 S. Clementes day.  
 C. is. Merc-



# 52 The Particular of Kent.

Mereworth. 10. August, being S. Laurence day.

Malling. 21. September being S. Mathew day.

August, being Lammas day. 6. November, being S. Lennards day.

S. Margarets neare Dartford. 20. Jul. being S. Margarets day.

Northfleete, the Tuesday in Easter wake.

Otford. 24. August, being S. Bartilmetus day.

Pluckley. 5. Decemb. being S. Nicholas day.

Rochester. 19. May, being S. Dunstons day: and. 30. November being S. Andrew day.

Romney. 1. August, being Lammas day.

Reculver. 7. September being the Nativitie of the blessed virgine Marie.

Sittingborne. 21. Sept. being S. Mathew day.

Strowde. 10. August, being S. Laurences day.

Sandwich. 23. November being S. Clements day.

Sandhyrst. 7. Decemb. being the even of the Conception,

tion,

Sennock. 6. Decemb. being S. Nicholas day: and

29. June, being S. Peters day.

Tunbridge, Ashwednesday: 24. June, being Prosermer day.

18. Octob. being S. Lukes day.

Tenterdene. 26. Aprill, being S. Cletes day.

Wye. 13. Marche, being S. Theodoros day.

Wrotham. 23. Aprill, being S. Georges day.

Boroughes.

Canterburie.

Rochester.

Maydstone, and the portetownes.

Castell at,

Canterburie.

Rochester.

Doner, and the Castell at the Key.

Leedes.

Tunbridge.

Hylton.

Grauesend.

Quynborough.

Colling.

Sandowne.

Dele.

Dele.  
 Walmer.  
 Saltwood.  
 Alington.  
 Shorham.  
 Ainsford.  
 Long.  
 Layborne.  
 Upnoze.

*Honourable houses, belonging  
 to the Prince, at*

Grenewiche.  
 Eltham.  
 Dartford.  
 Otford.  
 Knoll.  
 S. Augustines.  
 Dover castell.  
 Dele castell.

*To the Archbishop*

Canterburie.  
 Wingham.  
 Forde.

*To the Byshop of Roccheſter.*

Womley.  
 Roccheſter.  
 Halling.

*To men of honour,*

Berling

Cobham.  
 Coling.  
 Pensbyrſt.  
 Shorland.

*Houſes of poore people, with  
 prouiſion of lining, at*

Grenewiche.  
 Dypington.  
 Lullingſtone.  
 Shorham.  
 Sennock.

Roccheſter.  
 Great Chart.  
 Canterburie.  
 Sandwiche.  
 Douer.

*Houſes of poore people, with  
 out prouiſion.*

Dartford.  
 Whitwiche.  
 Cheſtnut wood.

*Religious houſes, that ſome-  
 time were, and their  
 yearly values.*

Wingham. 84.li. by yeare.  
 Wynter.  
 Wye Colledge. 93.li.  
 Horſton Priory. 95.li.  
 Billington Priory. 81.li.  
 Belwendene.

C. iij. Folk.

Folkstone. 41. li.  
 Douor Pryor. 170. li.  
 Peason dieu.  
 Hospitall there. 59. li.  
 Bradfoll Abbay of S. Ka.  
 digundes. 98. li.  
 Westlangdon. 56. li.  
 Worley. 204. li.  
 Leedes Pryor. 362. li.  
 Combtwell. 80. li.  
 Feuertham. 200. li.  
 Aminton Pryor there.  
 Maydstone col. 159. li.  
 Shepey. 129. li.  
 Potenden. 60. li.  
 Chrystes Churche.  
 S. Augustines.  
 I. Sepulcres. 29. li.  
 S. Gregories.  
 S. Tho. hos. 23. li.  
 S. James hos. 32. li.  
 S. Nicholas hosp.  
 109. li.  
 S. Maries without Cant.  
 Rochester pryorie. 486. li.  
 Cobham col. 28. li.  
 Strod. 52. li.  
 Malling Abbay. 218. li.  
 Wigham pryorie.  
 Tunbridge pryorie.  
 Ailefzord.  
 Dartford. 380.  
 Orenetwiche.  
 Peason dieu, at Wyprenge.  
 Leines Ab.

Schooles, at

Canterburie.  
 Rochester.  
 Sandwiche.  
 Cranbroke.  
 Great Charte.  
 Wyndene.  
 Tunbridge.  
 Maydstone.  
 Hennek.

¶ The names of suche of the  
 Nobilitie, and Gentry, as  
 the Heralds recorded, in  
 their visitation. 1574. To  
 the whiche I haue added  
 suche as I called to mynde,  
 and haue set a starre before  
 ech of them, that they may  
 be knowne from the rest.

A. M. M. M. M.

\* Syr Christopher Allen.  
 \* Albeley.  
 \* Richard Agall.  
 William Acher.  
 Christopher Abdy.  
 Richard Austyn.  
 \* Robert Alcock.  
 James Austyn.

B.

\* Richard Baker.  
 Nicholas Barham, Serje-  
 ant at the lawe.  
 \* Edward Boyes.  
 \* Boughton.

John





Fraunces Eglesfield.	Roger Verleckenden.
F.	* Christopher Warflete.
Sy: Thomas Fane.	* Honywood.
Thomas Fane.	* John Heyton.
George Fogge.	Thomas Honywood.
* Henry Fane.	Henry Haddes.
Thomas Fyneur.	John Harper.
Symond Fiseld.	Partyn Verleckenden.
Thomas Farby.	* Edward Hales.
Alexander Fisher.	* Richard Heron.
Thomas Flydd.	Kalf Hayman.
Robert Fylmer.	* Abacuk Harman.
John Franklyn.	* Thomas Hamon.
Moyle Fynche.	* William Holmden.
* Thomas Fisher.	* George Harte.
* Kasse Fynche.	* Sy: Humfrey Hybert.
G.	John Iden.
* The Lady Golding.	William Iley.
Sy: Thomas Gulesford.	Paul Ihonson.
Comund Gay.	* Partyn James.
George Goldwell.	K.
Thomas Greeke.	Sy: Thomas Kempe.
William Gybs.	* Richard Knatchbull.
Henry Gylman.	William Lonelace, Ser-
Thomas Godden.	ieant at the Lawe.
* Richard Garthe.	* Thomas Lonelace.
* Barnabe Coche.	John Lennard.
* Pozton Greene.	Richard Lone.
H.	Anthonie Light.
Sy: George Howard.	Thomas Lewson.
* Sy: Percuall Hart.	William Letoknoy.
Sy: James Hales.	Le.
William Hamon.	William
Richard Hades.	

\* William Lambade.

M.

\* Roger Panwood, Justice  
of the common place.

George Pulton.

Edward Ponings.

John Poyle.

William Pioleton.

Walter Peyny.

Anthony Peyny.

William Pount.

\* Edward Partyn.

Moyle.

N.

Syr Henry Neuill, Lozde  
Aburgenenny.

\* Alexander Neuill.

Valentine Norton.

\* Thomas Neuill.

\* Thomas Neuill.

O.

Henry Orenden.

John Owell.

P.

\* Thomas Potter.

\* Payne.

William Partridge.

Ciriac Petit.

Henry Petit.

William Petit.

William Pordage.

Richard Parkar.

\* James Peckam.

\* John Pet.

\* Palmer.

R.

\* Syr John Ryuers.

\* Thomas Randall.

Walter Roberts.

\* John Roberts.

William Roper.

Robert Rudstone.

Richard Rogers.

Robert Rychers.

William Raynes.

S.

\* Syr Henry Sidney.

Knight of the Garter,

Lord Deputie of Ire-

land, and Lord Pres-

ident of Wales.

Syr Warham Seintleger.

Syr Thomas Scot.

Anthony Sandes.

John and Edw. Sibyll.

Vincent S. Nicholas.

John Sidley.

Christopher Samson.

William Swanne.

William Swanne.

Thomas Stoughton.

T.

\* Charles



- \* Charles Scot.
- \* Francis Sandbache.
- \* Reynold Scot.
- \* Somers.
- \* Francis Shakerley.
- \* William Sydney.

T.

- John Tustone.
- Thomas Tourney.
- Roger Twiden.
- Spence Tichebourne.
- John Twyne.
- Thomas Tuffesham.
- William Tylghman.
- \* James Tebolde.
- John Tebolde.
- \* Robert Thomas.
- \* Francis Thynn.
- \* Richard Tomero.

W.

- Syr Thomas Wallinghā.
- Thomas Watton.
- \* Thomas Watton.
- \* Thomas Whetenhall.
- \* Ralfe Weldon.
- \* George Wyat.
- \* Thomas Wale.
- Thomas Willoughby.
- Francis Wilford.
- John Wybarne.
- Richard Waller.
- John Wylkyns.
- Thomas Wlaren.
- William Weston.
- Dauy Wylkyns.
- Robert Walker.
- \* Edward Wyat.
- \* Robert Wpleman.

The names of the Kentish writers,  
drawne (for the most part) out of  
the Centuries of Maister Iohn Bale,

<i>Androgeus, Comes.</i>	<i>Ioannes Cantianus.</i>
<i>Ethelbertus, Rex.</i>	<i>Hammo de Feuerham.</i>
<i>Lotharius, Rex.</i>	<i>Thomas Spottus.</i>
<i>Eadricus, Rex.</i>	<i>Simon Mephham.</i>
<i>Wightredus, Rex.</i>	<i>Petrus de Ikham.</i>
<i>Heddius Stephanus.</i>	<i>Guilielmus Pagham.</i>
<i>Tobias Cantianus.</i>	<i>Ioannes Tanetos.</i>
<i>Neotus Aldulphius.</i>	<i>Thomas Chillenden.</i>
<i>Serlo.</i>	<i>Guilielmus Starnfield.</i>
<i>Fridegodus.</i>	<i>Thomas Pontius.</i>
<i>Hammo.</i>	<i>Simon de Feuerham.</i>
<i>Folchardus.</i>	<i>Martinus de Clyuo.</i>
<i>Osternus.</i>	<i>Thomas de Stureia.</i>
<i>Eadmerus.</i>	<i>Reginaldus Cantuariensis.</i>
<i>Arnulphus.</i>	<i>Radulphus Strodius.</i>
<i>Elmerus.</i>	<i>Thimredus Douerius.</i>
<i>Odo Cantianus.</i>	<i>Guilielmus Thorne.</i>
<i>Alexander Cantuariensis.</i>	<i>Richardus Maidston.</i>
<i>Eadmundus Gryme.</i>	<i>Guilielmus Gillingham.</i>
<i>Radulfus Roffensis.</i>	<i>Ioannes Wrotham.</i>
<i>Richardus Pluto.</i>	<i>Ioannes Oldcastle, Dominus</i>
<i>Richardus Douerensis.</i>	<i>Cobham.</i>
<i>Sampson Durouernius.</i>	<i>Ioannes Langdene.</i>
<i>Radulfus Maidston.</i>	<i>Guilielmus Whyte.</i>
<i>Gernasius Dorobernensis.</i>	<i>Guilielmus Beckley.</i>
<i>Solitarus Presbyter.</i>	<i>Ioannes Capgraue.</i>
<i>Nigellus Wireker.</i>	<i>Guilielmus Stapilhart.</i>
<i>Alexander, Theologus.</i>	<i>Ioannes Fisher.</i>
<i>Simon Stokijs.</i>	<i>Ioannes Frithe.</i>

Simon Fyffe.

Thomas Wiat, Senior.

Leonardus Digs.

Ioannes Ponetus.

Richardus Turnerus.

Elizabetha, Re-  
gina.

Hitherto (almost altogether)  
out of Maister Bale : to  
the whiche, these may bee

added, that haue writen  
since.

Ioannes Colpeper.

Thomas Digs.

Thomas Harman.

Edouardus Deering.

Thomas Potter.

Reginaldus Scot.

Alexander Nenville.

Georgius Harte.

Guilielmus Darrel.

Thomas Twyne.

Hitherto of Kent in particularitie, and by way of  
Table : Whereof some part is drawne out of credible  
Records : part is spoken of mine owne knowledge, and  
part is fetched from other men by information. For  
the first sorte I holde my selfe sufficiently warranted :  
but in the other twaine, if either by want of memorie  
I haue not taken all, or by too muche credulitie haue  
mistaken any, I pray pardon for it, and desire the Rea-  
der either to correct, or supplie it, by his owne discretion  
and iudgement. Now a fewe wordes of the Welthe  
Hystorie, and then to the diuision of the Shyre & Coun-  
trie it selfe,

A



¶ A short counsell, as touching  
the Bryttishe hystorie.



¶ I beitt that I am iustly occasioned (befoze I make myne entrie) to speake largely, for confirmation of the credite of oure Bryttishe or Welshe hystorie, (the faith wherof is by William Petite, and Polydore Virgile called into question) for as muche, as I shal be enforced to vse it as a ground worke of my whole frame and building: yet for that I mynde not in any part of this my labour, to handle with many wordes, matters in controuersie, (being otherwise sufficiently charged with things moze incident to my purpose, and no lesse fit to be knowne.) And because also that matter hath alreadye founde moze learned and diligent patrones, I will with fewe wordes passe it ouer, contenting my selfe, if I shall haue added to other mens heapes, one small pzoise or twaine, whiche by chaunce I gleaned after them, and referringe suche as desire moze abundant testimonies, to the reading of Iohn Leland, and Syr Iohn ap Resc, two learned men, that haue plentifully wrytten therein.

The state of the matter is this, whether Geffrey Geffray of  
of Monmouthe be the authour of the Bryttish stoze (as Monmouthe  
William Newborow, and Polydore charge him) or the  
translatour thereof onely out of the Bryttishe, as him  
selfe in his booke professeth. Whereof must needes en-  
sue, That if the worke be his owne, it hath no moze  
credite, then he him selfe (being the autho?) coulde bring  
vnto it: But if he did only translate that, whiche Wal-  
ter the Archdeacon of Oxforde brought out of Norma-  
die, and deliuered vnto him, Then doth not y estimation  
depend

## 60 The Bryttysh hystorie.

depende vpon Geffray, but vpon some other (whatsoeuer he were) that first wzate it.

Now, that it may appeare vnto you, that he was only the interpreter of that whiche came out of Normandie, I will call to witnesse, Henrie the Archdeacon of Huntington, who liued in the time of king Henrie the first, and was somewhat befoze William Petites dayes, who (as him self confesseth) was bozne in the beginning of the reigne of king Stephan, about whiche time Geffray of Monmouthe was on liue also.

This Henrie (besides a learned hystorie of the realme) wzate thre seuerall treatises whiche I haue seene: One intituled, *De miraculis Anglia*: An other, *De serie Regū potentissimorum*: And the thirde, *De origine Regum Brytannorum*. In this latter, he sayth playnly. That at such time as he trauiayled towarde Rome, he founde (in an auncient Libzarie of the Abbay of Bec) an olde booke, intituled likewise, *De origine Regum Brytannorū*, the which beginning at the arrinall of Brute, ended with the actes of Cadwalader, and agreed thoroughout (as by collatio I collected) with this our Bryttishe hystorie, which I doubt whether Henrie of Huntington had euer seene. Nowe therfoze, if this were an olde booke in his time, it coulde not be newe in the dayes of Petite, that succēded him: And if the argument were wzitten befoze in the Bryttish tongue, it is very probable, that he was not the first authoz, but only the translatoz thereof in Latine. For further likelyhode whereof, I my selfe haue an auncient Bryttish, or Welsh copy, which I reserue for shew, and doe reuerence for the antiquitie, litle doubting, but that it was wzitten befoze the dayes of William Petite, who, as he was the first, So vpon the matter reckon I him the onely man, that euer impugned the Bryttishe hystorie. For as touching Polydore (though he were a  
man

Polydore.

# The Bryttish Hystorie. 61

man singularly well learned) yet since hee was of our owne time, and no longer since, his forces must of necessity be thought to bee bent, rather against the veritie, then against the antiquitie of that writing. Wherein if he shall seeke to discredit the whole worke, for that in some partes it containeth matter, not only unlikely, but incredible also: then shall he bothe depriue this Nation of all manner of knowledge of their first beginning, and open the way for vs also to cal into question the origine, and antiquities of Spaine, Fraunce, Germanie, yea and of Italie his owne countrie: in which, that whiche Liue repozteth of Romulus and Remus, Numa and Aegeria, is as farre remoued from all suspicion of truthe, as any thing, whatsoeuer y Galfride writeth, either of Brute, Merlin, or King Arthur himselfe.

Saying therefore, that euen as cozne hath his chaffe, and metall his dyosse, so can there hardly any wyter of the auncient hystorie of any nation be founde out that hath not his propre vanities mixed with sincere veritie: the part of a wise Reader shalbe, not to reiect the one for doubt of the other, but rather with the fire and fan, of iudgement and discretion, to trie and sift them a sinder. And as my purpose is for mine owne parte, to vse the commoditie thereof, so oft, as it shall like me: so my counsell shalbee, that other men will, bothe in this and other, obserue this one rule, That they neither reiect without reason, nor receiue without discretion, and iudgement.

Thus muche in my way, for assertion of the Bryttish hystorie I thought good to say once for all, to the ende that from henceforth (whatsoeuer occasion of debate shalbe offered, concerning eyther the veritie or antiquitie of the same) I neither trouble my selfe, nor farrie my Reader, with any further defence, or Apologic.



## 62 The Byshops See, and Diocesse, of Canterbury.

**H**E that shal aduisedly consider the plot of this Shyre, may finde thre diuerse (and those not vnfit) wayes, to deuide it: One, by breaking the whole into the East and West Kent: Another, by parting it, (as Watling streete leadeth,) into North, and Southe Kent: And a third, by seuering it into the two distinct Dioceses of Canterbury, and Rochester. Of these thre, I haue determined to chuse the last, both bycause that kinde of diuision hath as certaine limits, as any of the former, & so; that, it seemeth to me the moste conuenient seuerance, being wrought both by bounde of place, and of iurisdiction also. And because the See of Canterbury, is not onely the moze woorthy of the twaine, but also the Metropolitane, and chiefe of the whole realme: I haue thought good, in the first place, to shewe the beginning and increase of that Bishopricke, and afterward to prosecute the description and hystozye of the principal parts belonging to the same.

The order  
of this de-  
scription.

Flamines  
turned into  
Bishops.

It is to be scene, in the Britishe hystozye, and others, that at suche time as King Lucius (the first christened Prince of this land) had renounced the damnable darknes of Paganisme, and embraced the glorious light of the Gospel of God, he chaunged the Archeflamines of London, Doyke, and Caerleon, into so many Archebishops: and the Flamines, of other inferiour places, into inferiour Bishops, throught out his whole realme. Howbeit, this matter is not so cleare, but that it is encountered by William Petit, whiche (in the Prohemie of his hystozye) affirmeth boldly, that the Britons whiche professed Christian religion within this Island, before y<sup>e</sup> coming of Augustine, were contented with Bishops only, & that Augustine himselfe was the very first, that euer had the Archbishops Palle amongst vs. As touching Bishops it is euident by Beda him self, that both before, & in Au-

# The Bryttish Hystorie. 63

Augustines time, Wales alone had senen at the lest: but as for Archebishops (although for my owne opinion I thinke with William, the rather for y<sup>e</sup> I suppose, y<sup>e</sup> the simplicity of y<sup>e</sup> Brittain clergie, was not as the enamoured with the vain titles of the Romane arrogancy) yet to the end that the reader may be therby the moze iustly occasioned, to make inquisition of the trueth in that point, it shall not be greatly out of his way, to send him by Siluester Giraldus, Canbrensis, a man (considering y<sup>e</sup> age (excellently wel learned, & which liued about y<sup>e</sup> same time w<sup>th</sup> Willia<sup>m</sup> Petit, or Willia<sup>m</sup> of Newborow) as some call him. This man, in a booke which he entituled, *Itinerarium Wallie*, setteth forth mo<sup>st</sup> plainly the Archbishops, y<sup>e</sup> in olde time were at Caerleon, their translation from thence to Saint Davids, their transmigration from Saint Davids ouer the Sea into Normandie, and the whole Catalogue of their succession in each of those places. But here, some man, thinking me moze mindful to direct others, the careful to kepe mine owne wai, wil happily aske me, what pertineth it (I pray you to Canterbury, whether there haue ben Archbishops at London, Yorke, & Carleon, or no: yes (no doubt) it maketh greatly to our treatise of Canterbury: for, not onely y<sup>e</sup> fornamed Brittain hystorie, Mathew of Westminster, & Willia<sup>m</sup> of Palmes bury do shew manifestly, that Augustine by great iniury spoiled Londō of this dignitie of y<sup>e</sup> Archbishops chaire, bestowing y<sup>e</sup> same vpon Canterbury: but y<sup>e</sup> Epistle of Pope Gregorie himself also, (which is to be read in y<sup>e</sup> Ecclesiasticall storie of Beda) couinceth him of manifest presumption & arrogancie, in y<sup>e</sup> he sticke not to prefer his owne fantasie & liking befoze y<sup>e</sup> Pope his masters institution & commaundement. For Pope Gregory appointed two Archbishops, y<sup>e</sup> one at London the other at Yorke, whereof either should haue vnder him 12. inferiour Bishops, & whereof neither should be subject to other:

Londō spoiled of the Archebishopsricke.

## 64 The See of Canterbury.

only for Augustines honour) hee willed, that they all should bee vnder him during his lyfe. But Augustine not so contented, both remained resident during al his life at Canterbury, and befoze he died consecrated Laurence Archebishop there, least, eyther by his owne death, or want of another fit man to fill the place, the chaire might happely be carried to London, as Gregorie the Pope had appointed.

Mathew of Westminster saith, that Merlin had prophesied, *Dignitas Londonie adornabit Dorobriniam*. William Malmesbury writeth, that he did it, *Sedulitate Regis hospitii*, (meaning King Ethelbert) & *charitate ciuium captus*: But I thinke verely, that he ment thereby to leaue a glorious monument of his swelling pride & vanitie: whereunto I am the rather led, by the obseruation of his stately behauiour vsed towards the Bryttish Bishops, and some other of his acts, that saue greatly of vaine glory, ambition, and insolence. Whatsoeuer the cause were that moued him thus to apparell Canterbury with the Archebishop of Londons Palle, at Canterbury hath it continued euer sithence, sauing that at one time, Offa the King of Mercia (or middle England) partly of a disposition to honour his owne countrie, and partly of a iuste displeasure conceaued againste Lambright (or Ianbright, as some copies haue it, the thirtieth Archebishop,) for matter of treason, translated the honour of the See, eyther wholly, or partly, to Lichefield: But there it remained not long, for after the death of King Offa, Kenulfus his successour restored Ethelard to his place at Canterbury againe.

The increase of the Archebishopricke,

The whole Prouince of this Bishopricke of Canterbury, was at the firste diuided by Theodorus (the seuenthe Bishop) into five Diocesse only: howbeit in proceffe of tyme it grew to twentie and one, besides it selfe, leauing to Yorke (which by the first institution,



# Archebishoppes.

33

fution, should haue had as many as it) but Durham, Carleil, and Chester only. And whereas by the same ordinance of Gregorie, neither of these Archebishoppes ought to be inferiour to other, saue only in respect of the priozitie of their consecration, Lanfranc (th inking it good reason that he should make a conquest of the Englishe Clergie, since his maister King William had vanquished the whole nation) contended at Windsore with Thomas Norman (Archebishoppe of Yorke) for the primacie, and there by iudgement befoze Hugo the Popes Legate recovered it from him: so that euer since, the one is called *Totius Anglia primas*, and the other, *Anglia primas*, without any further addition. Of which iudgement (one for sooth) hath yeelded this great reason: that euen as the Kentish people, by an auncient prerogatiue of manhoode doe chalenge the first fronte in eache battaile, from the inhabitants of other countries: So the Archbishop of their shyre, ought by good congruence to be preferred befoze the rest of the Bishops of the whole Realme. For eouer, whereas befoze time, the place of this Archebishop in the generall Counsell, was to sit next to the Bishop of saint Ruffines, Anselmus (the Successour of this Lanfranc) for recompence of the good service that hee had done, in ruffling againste Priestes wyues, and resisting the King for the inuestiture of clerkes) was by Pope Urbane endowd with this accession of honour, that hee and his successours, should from thencefoorth haue place in all generall counsels, at the Popes right foote, who then said withall, *Includamus hunc in orbe nostro, tanquam alterius orbis Papam.*

Contentis  
for the Pri-  
macie.

1072.

The Arche-  
bishoppes  
place in the  
generall  
counsell.

1099.

And thus the Archebishops of Canterbury, by the fraude of Augustine, by the power of Lanfranc, and by the industrie of Anselme, were muche exalted: but how much that was to the greuous displeasure, and pining

34.

enuie,

ennie, of the Archbishops of Yorke, you shall perceiue by that whiche followeth.

Wrastling  
for the pri-  
macie.

King Henry the firste, kept (vpon a time) a statelie Christmas at Windfore, where (the maner of our kings then being at certeine solemne times to weare their crownes) Thurstine of Yorke (hauiing his crosse bozne vp before him) offered to set the crowne vpon the kings head: But William of Canterbury withstode it stoutly, and so preuayled by the fauoure of the king, and the helpe of the standers by, that Thurstine was not onely disappointed of his purpose, but he (and his crosse also) thrust cleane out of the dores.

1155.

William of Yorke (the next in succession after Thurstine, both in the See and Duarell) perceiuing that the force of his predecessor preuayled nothing, attempted by his own humble meanes (first made to the king, and after to the Pope) to winne the coronation of king Henry the seconde, from Theobald the nexte Archbishop of Canterbury: But when he had receiued repulse in that sort of suite also, and found no way left to make auengement vpon his ennemie, he returned home at wrothe, and (miring poyson in the chalice, at his Masse) wreaked the anger vpon himselfe.

1178.

After this, another hurley burley happened in a Synode, assembled at Westminster, in the time of king Henry the second, before Cardinal Hugo, (Pope Alexanders Legate) between Richard and Roger, then Archbishops of these two Sees vpon occasion, that Roger of York comming of purpose (as it should seme) first to the assembly, had taken vp the place on the right hande of the Cardinall, which when Richard of Canterbury had espyed, he refused to sit dolone in the second rowe, complayning greatly of this prejudice done to his See: where vpon, after sundry replies of speache, the weaker in disputation,

putation (after the maner of shrewd schole boyes in London streets) descended from hote words, to hottie blowes, in which encounter, the Archbysshop of Canterburie (throughe the multitude of his meynie) obtained the better: So that he not onely plucked the other out of his place, and (trampling vpon his body with his his fæte) al to rent and tare his Casule, Chimer, and Rochet, but also disturbed the holy Synode therewithal, in suche wise that the Cardinall for feare, betooke him to his fæte, the company departed their businesse vndone, and the Bysshops themselues moued suite at Rome, for the finishing of their controuerſie. By these, & such other successes, on the one side, the Bysshops of Canterburie following, tooke suche courage, that from thenceforth, they would not permit the Bysshops of Yorke to beare vp the crosse, either in their presence, or prouince: And on the other side, the Bysshops of Yorke conceiued suche griefe of heart, disdaine, and offence, that from time to time, they spared no occasion to attempt both the one & the other.

Whereupon, in the time of a Parleament, holden at Londõ, in the reigne of King Henrie the third, Boniface (Archbishop of Canterbury) interdicted the Londoners, because they had suffered the Bysshop of Yorke to beare vp his crosse whiles he was in the citie. And much to doe there was (within a few yeeres after) betwene Robert Kylwarby of Canterburie, and Walter Giffard of Yorke, because he of Yorke aduanced his crosse, as he passed through Kent towarde the generall Counsell.

1268.

The like happened also, at two other seuerall times, betwene Friar Peckam (Archebysshop of Canterburie) and William Winkewane, and Iohn de Roma (Archbysshops of Yorke) in the dayes of King Edward the firste. At the length, the matter being yet once more set on foote

1272.

The end of the strife for the supremacie.

A.ij.

be,



betwene Simon Islepe (the Archebishop of this countrie) and his aduersarie (the incumbent of Yorke for that time) King Edward the thirde, in whose reigne that variance was reuined, resumed the matter into his owne hande, and made a finall composition betwene them, the which he published vnder his broade seale to this effect: first, that eache of them should freely, and without empeachment of the other, beare vp his crosse in the others Prouince, but yet so, that he of Yorke and his successours for euer, in signe of subiection, should within two monethes after their inthronization, either bying, or sende, to Canterbury, the Image of an Archebishop bearing a crosse, or some other Jewell wrought in fine golde, to the value of fourtie poundes, and offer it openly there vpon Sainct Thomas Becketts shryne: then, that in all Synodes of the clergie, and assemblies where the King should happen to be present, he of Canterbury should haue the right hand, and the other the lefte: finally, that in broade streetes, and highe wayes, their crossebearers should go togeather, but that in narrowe lanes, and in the entries of doores and gates, the crossier of Canterbury should go befoze, and the other followe, and come behinde.

So that (as you see) the Bishoppes of Canterbury euermore preuayling by fauour and obstinacie, they of Yorke were driuen in the end, to giue ouer in the plain field, for very dispaire, wanhope, and wearinesse.

But heare by the way, I woulde faine, for my learning, knowe of these godly Fathers, or rather (since themselves can not now make answer) of some of their vngodly fauourers, whether this their Helena, this crosse (for the bearing whereof they contended so long, and so bitterly, that a man might doubt with the Poet, *Peccat uter Cruce dignius*) whether (I say) it were eral-

ted,

ted, as the signe of that Crosse whereon Christ triumphed ouer the Diuel, or els but for a flagge and antsigne of their owne pride, whereby they sought to triumphe and insult the one ouer the other? And againe, if it were Christes crosse, then why they did forbid it to bee aduanced, at any time, by any person, or in any place? And if it were but their owne, then why they did, and yet doe, commaund vs simple soules, not only with greate humilitie, but with diuine honour also, to prostrate our selues, and to adoze it? I am sure they may be ashamed to affirme it to bee the one, & I thinke they wilbe ashamed to confesse it to be the other. I wil ceasse therfore to bze it any further, & wil prosecute the Catalogue of the Archebishoppes of this See, since the arriuall of Augustine. In the which, the first seuen, be of that number which Pope Gregorie sent hither out of Italic: The next twentie thre, and Stigande, were Saxons: all the residue, Normanes & Englishmen. And bycause there is some variance as touching the times of their continuance and sitting, I purpose to shew (vnder one view) the opinion of two sundrie authours, so farre forth as they haue spoken therof, that is to say, William of Malmesbury, and an auncient Chronicler of Couentrie, (whose name I haue not hytherto learned) and in the residue to follow our owne late and receaued writers.

I.iii.

An-

## The beginning of The yeres of their

their gouernements,

Continuance in go-

after the Annales of  
Canterbury.uernment after the  
opinion of

An. Do.

Wil. Malm.

Chro. Couen.

599. Augustine, tohome  
our Louanistes call, &  
Englishe Apostle,

16.

16.

612. Laurence,

5.

5.

617. Mellite.

5.

5.

624. Iustus.

3.

9.

626. Honorius.

26.

20.

653. Deusdedit, or Deodat  
the first Saxon.

10.

9.

Wighard, whiche dy-  
ed at Rome befoze  
his consecration.

22.

22.

668. Theodore a Gracian  
bozne, and the last of  
those that came out  
of Italic.

691. Brightwald.

37.

38.

731. Tatwine.

3.

4.

737. Nothelinus, or Iocelin

5.

7.

741. Cuthbert & first that  
was buryed in Chri-  
steschurche, and that  
obtained churchyards  
for England.

17.

17.

759. Bregwine.

3.

3.

774. Lanbright, or Jan-  
bright. in his tyme the  
Sec was translated to  
Lichefield,

17.

17.



# Archebishops.

71

An. Do.	Malm.	Cont.
790. Aethelwardus, here couered the See to Canterbury againe.	23.	23.
Wulfredus, or Wifred	28.	28.
830. Fegeldus, or Swithre- dus.	thre monethes.	
831. Celnodus, or Eilno- thus,	41.	41.
890. Etheredus, or Ethel- dredus.	18.	18.
Pleimundus, one of the learned men, & in- structed king Alfred.	34.	34.
925. Athelmus	12.	13.
947. Wulfhenius, or Wul- fhelmus.	13.	14.
956. Odo, or Odofegodus.	5.	20.
958. Elffius, or Elffinus, or Elfinus, whiche dyed befoze his consecra- tion, in his iourney towards Rome; in reuenge (as they say) bicause he came in by Simonie, and spoyned at the Tumb of his predecessor.		
Brithelmus, was elec- ted: but king Edgar relected him.		
970. Dunstanus, the fa- mous Juggler.	26.	26.

An. D.

Malm.

Malm.

Conens.

989. Ethelgarus.

1.

1.

991. Siricius, by his aduice  
King Etheldred  
gaue to the Danes a  
great summe of mo-  
ney.

5.

5.

996. Alfricus.

1004. Aelfegus, hee was  
slaine by the Danes.

6.

6.

1012. Liuingus, or Ethel-  
stanus.

7.

7.

Eilwardus.

1020. Egelnothus.

18.

18.

1038. Eadsius, or Edsinus,  
who for siknes comit-  
ted charge to Siwar-  
dus, the Abbat of A-  
bingdon, & after Wi-  
shoppe of Rochester  
whiche neuerthelesse  
vouchsafed not to  
finde him necessaries.

11.

11.

1050. Robertus Gemeti-  
censis, the first for-  
man, aduanced by  
King Edward & con-  
fessor.

12.

12.

1053. Stigandus, deposed  
by the conquerour.

17.

17.

1072. Lanfrancus, in his  
time the Bishoppes  
Sees were first remo-  
ued from villages, to  
Cities.

19.

19.

An. Do.

Malm.

Conent.

1093. Anselmus, in his time  
latwe was first made  
to diuorce Priestes  
from their wiues.

16.

16.

1114. Radulphus Roffensis,  
surnamed Nugax.

9.

1122. Willimus de Corueil,  
he crowned Stephan,  
against his fayth giue  
to Maude the Em  
presse.

15.

1138. Theobaldus, he was  
endowed firste, with  
the title of Legatus  
Natus, by Pope Inno  
cent the second.

23.

1162. Thomas Becket, the  
first Englishman af  
ter the Conquest.

8.

Robertus, the Abbat of Bec  
was elected, but he  
refused it.

1173. Richardus, the Pryor  
of Douer.

9.

1183. Baldwinus, the bishop  
of Worcester: he dy  
ed in the expedition,  
that king Richard the  
first made into Syria,  
e was befoze at great  
contention with the  
Mongkes.

7.

Reginaldus, he dyed befoze

R.

con



- consecration.
1193. Hubertus.
1205. Stephanus de Langton, the cause of the trouble of king Iohn.
1228. Gualterus de Euesham, elected, but refused, bothe by the king and Pope, for y<sup>e</sup> insufficiencie of learning.
1229. Richardus Magnus.
1233. Iohannes, the Subprior of Christs church, was elected after the Pope had refused one Ralph Neuel, but this Iohn resigned, in whose place Iohn Blund was chosen, but that election also was repealed.
1234. Edmundus de Abingdon, the one & twentie Bishop of Cant. that the Popes had canonized. He departed the realme, & died for anger of a repulse.
1244. Bonifacius, uncle to Elenor, the wife of Henric the thirde.
1270. Willelmus de Chilterden, elected, but

Malm.

Conem.

13.

21.

2.

7.

36.

be

# Archebishops.

75

he resigned to the Pope, who chose Kilwardby.

1272. Robertus Kilwardby, *Malm.* *Convent.* 6.

1278. Iohannes Burnel, Bishop of Bath elected, but the Pope refused him, and appointed Friar Peckam.

1279. Iohannes de Peckam a friar *Mmor*, born in Suffex. 13.

1292. Robertus de Winchelsey, a notable traitor to the King, & true servant to the Pope. 19.

Thomas de Cobham, elected, but refused by the Pope, he was commonly called, *Bonus Clericus*.

1312. Walterus Reignold. 14.

1328. Symon de Mepham. 5. Thus farre out of the storie of Couentrie.

1334. Iohannes de Stratford. 29.

1350. Iohannes Offord, of Vfford.

Thomas Bradwardine, he erected the Black friars in London.

1350. Symon Islepe, he founded Canterbury Colledge in Oxford. 17.

1367. Symon Langham. 2. 1369.

*An. Do.**Malm.**Cont.*

1369. Wilhelmus Witlesey.

5.

1375. Symon Sudbury.

6.

1381. Wilhelmus Courte-

15.

nay.

1396. Thomas Arundel at-  
tainted of treason, by  
Parleament, in the  
one and twentie yere  
of Richard the second.

18.

Rogerus Walden, in the ex-  
ile of Arundel: but de-  
posed: Then made  
Bishop of London, &  
again depose, and  
died in the seventh  
yere of Henric the  
fourth.1414. Henricus Chicheley,  
built Alsoules, and S.  
Johns Colledge in  
Oxford, and the Col-  
ledge of Higham.

29.

1443. Iohannes Stafford.

3.

1452. Ioannes Kempe.

3.

1455. Thomas Bourchier.

33.

1486. Ioannes Moorton,  
buiylded muche at  
Knol, and repayzed  
Lambeth.

14.

Thomas Langton elected,  
but he died befoze co-  
secration.1500. Henricus Deane, of  
Deny.

6.

Wil-



Willielmus War-  
ham, builded Otforde  
house.

28.

Thomas Cranmer, he  
was burned for the  
trueth.

Reginaldus Poole.

3.

Mathæus Parker.

Thus haue you the succession of seuentie Archbishops,  
in the recital whereof, I doe (of purpose) spare to dispute  
the variance arising amongst writers, as touching the  
continuance, & true times of their gouernment, whiche  
discrepance, groweth partly, for the defaulte of the au-  
thors themselves, not obseruing the due accompte of  
yeares, and partly by the vnskill of suche as haue vntru-  
ly copied out their woorkes: I willingly reserue also for  
other places, sundrie the hystories of their liues and do-  
inges, bothe bicause I thinke it fruitlesse, to reconcile  
suche manner of disagreements, and also, for that (as I  
saide before of the Kings) I deeme it impertinent to my  
purpose, to speake further of any thing, then the very  
place in hand, shall iustly giue me occasion.

It followeth therefore, that according to promise, I  
handle suche particular places within this Diocese, as  
are mentioned in hystorie, in whiche treatie, I will ob-  
serue this order. First to begin at Tanet, and to peruse  
the East and Southe shores, til I come to the limits, be-  
tween this Shyre, & Sussex: then to ascend Northward,  
and to visite such places, as lye along the bounds of this  
Diocese & Rochester, returning by the mouth of Med-  
way to Tanet again, whiche is the whole circuite of this  
Bishopricke: and lastly, to describe suche places, as lye  
in the body and midst of the same.

The ordre  
of this de-  
scription of  
Kent.

*Tanet*, called in Brytish, *Inis Rhuo-*  
chym, of the Shore Rutupi: it is named of some  
writers, in Latine (or rather Greeke) *Thana-*  
tos, in Saxon, *tenet*, in  
stead of *panet*.

No snakes  
in Tanet.



Vlius Solinus (in his description of England) saith thus of Tanet: *Thana-*  
*natos nullo serpiter angue, & asportata*  
*inde terra angues necat.* There be no  
snakes in Tanet (saith he) & the earth  
that is brought from thence will kill  
them. But whether he wrote this of  
any sure vnderstanding that he had of the quality of the  
soyle, or onely by coniecture at the woord *Θάνατος*  
which in Greeke signifieth death, or killing, I wote not,  
& much lesse dare I determine, bycause hitherto neither  
I my selfe haue heard of any Region hereabout (onely  
Ireland excepted) which beareth not both snakes and o-  
ther venomous wormes, neither am I yet perswaded,  
that this place borrowed the name out of the Greeke,  
but rather tooke it of the prope language, of this oure  
native countrie: For *panet*, in the Saxon, or olde Eng-  
lishe tongue, soundeth as muche as, moysted, or wa-  
tered, whiche derination, holwe well it standeth with  
the situation of Tanet, being *Peninsula*, and watered (in  
manner) round about, I had rather without reasoning,  
referre to euery mans iudgement, then by debate of  
many woordes, eyther to trouble the reader, or to in-  
terrupt mine owne order. Leaving the name there-  
fore, I will resorte to the thing, and shewe you out  
of Beda, and others, the content and stoarie of this  
Ile,

There

There lyeth (saith Beda, speaking of the place where King Ethelbert entertained Augustine) in the East part of Kent, an Iland, called Tanet, containing (after the manner of the Englishe accompte) sixe hundred families, or Hides of land (as the Saxon booke of Beda hath) whiche be in deede after the opinion of auncient writers, ploughlandes: It is diuided from the continent, or mayne land, by the riuer called Wantsume, whiche is about thre furlongs broade, and to bee passed ouer in two places onely: Hereunto if you adde the opinion of Polydore, the description wilbe the more euident. It conteyneth (saith he) about nyne myles in length, and not muche lesse in breadth, and it was some time diuorced from the continent, by a water, but nowe it is almoste vnited againe. Thus muche for the description.

As touching y<sup>e</sup> hystorie, you may read in Geffray of Monmouth, that after such time as the Brytons had deposed Vortiger their King, for that he brought in the Saxons, whiche beganne soone after they<sup>r</sup> entrie to shewe themselves in deede, suche as they were in name, (not shieldes against the Pictes and Scots, but swords to shew the Brittan bloud) Vortimer his sonne (whome they placed in his seate) so streightned the Saxons in this Ile, (the whiche, as William of Malmesbury writeth, Vortiger had giuen them to inhabite, at their first Arriual) that for a colour they sent Vortiger to treat with him of peace, and in the meane whyle for feare, conueyed them selues into they<sup>r</sup> Shippes, and sayled homeward againe. The same Author reporteth, that after this, Cadur, (the Duke of Cornewall) by commaundement of King Arthur, chased the Saxons into Tanet, where he slew Childric their leader, and receiued many of the residus

For (Seax)  
in their lan-  
guage sig-  
nifieth a  
sword, or  
axe, or bat-  
chet.



to grace and mercy.

853.

864.

980.

Notwithstanding the Saxons themselves, after that in process of time, they had gotten the dominion over the Britons, enjoyed not the possession of Tanet in much better quiet then the Britons had done before them. For in the dayes of King Athulf, (the father of Alfred) the Danes fought in Tanet against Ealhere, (the Duke, or captain of Kent) and Huda, (the Duke of Surrey) & slaying them bothe overthrew their powers, and possessed the Ile. After this, in the time of the same King, they sojourned with their armie a whole wynter in Tanet: and lastly (in the reigne of King Etheldred) they herried, spoyled, and sacked it in such sort, that the religious persons were constrained to abandon the place, so I finde, that shortly after, King Canutus gave the body of Mildred, and all the landes belonging to Mynster Abbay (that the was in this Ile) to the Monkes of saint Augustines at Canterbury.

But, for as much as good order requireth, that I should tell you of the foundation, before I speake of the fall, you shall heare out of William Thorne, (one that made an appendix to the hystorie of Thomas Spot, both Monkes of Saint Augustines) the occasion of the first fabulous beginning of this Abbay.

The occasion of the building of Minster Abbay.

596.

Certain sernaunts, or officers (saith he) of Egbricht (the third King of Kent after Ethelbert) had done great iniurie to a noble woman (called Domneua, the mother of Saint Mildred) in recompence of whiche wrongs the King made an Herodian othe, and promised vpon his honour, to giue her whatsoever she would aske him.

The woman (instructed belike by some Monkish counsellour) begged of him so much ground to build an Abbay vpon, as a tame deere (if she nourished) would runne over

ouer at a breathe: Hereto the King had consented forthwith, sauing that one Tymor (a counseler of his) standing by, blanted him of great inconsideration, for that he woulde vpon the vncertaine course of a Deare, departe to his certaine losse, with any part of so good a soyle, but the earth (sayth William Thorne) immediatly opened, and swallowed him aliue, in memorie whereof, the place till his time, was called Tymor sleape. Well, the King and this Gentlewoman proceeded in their bargaine, the Wynde was put forth, and it ranne the quantitie of fourtie and eight ploughlands, befoze it returned.

And thus Domneua (by the help of the King) builded at Mynster (within that pzeinc) a Monasterie of Nonnes, vpon suche like discretion, (you may be sure) as Ramsley Abbay was pitched, euen where a Bull by chaunce scraped with his fote, and as Rome it selfe (for whose saueur these follies be deuised) was edified, where the she Wolfe gaue Romulus and Remus sucke.

For it was  
called Ro-  
ma, of Ru-  
ma, a pappe  
or dugge.

680.

Ouer this Abbay, Mildred (of whome we spake) the daughter of Meruaile, (that was sonne to Penda, King of midle England) became the Lady and Abbasse: who bicause she was of noble linage, and had gotten together seuentie women, (all whiche Theodorus the seuenth Bishop) beiled for Nonnes, she easily obteyned to be registred in our Englishe Kalender, & to be worshipped for a Saint, both at Tanet, while her body lay there, and at S. Augustines, after that it was translated: And no maruell at all, for if you will beleue the authour of the worke called (*Nona Legenda Anglia*) your self wil easily vouchsafe her the honour.

This woman (sayth he) was so mightily defended with diuine power, that lying in a hote oue thre houres together, she suffered not of the flame: She was also endued with suche godlyke vertue, that comming out of  
L. Fraunce,

S. Mildreds  
miracles.

Fraunce, the very stone whereon she first stepped at Ippedfleete in this Isle, receiued the impression of her foete, and reteined it for euer, hauing besides this propertie, that whether so euer you remoued the same, it woulde within short time, and without helpe of mans hande, returne to the former place againe : And finally, she was so diligently garded with Gods Angel, attending vpon her, that when the diuell (finding her at prayers) had put out the candel that was befoze her, the Angel forthwith lighted it for her againe.

1085.

And this (no doubt) was the cause, that the Religious persons of S. Augustines, and of S. Gregories at Canterbury, fell at great dissention for her, eche affirming, that after the spoyle of Tanet, her bones were remoued to their Monasterie: the one clayming by King Canutus, as we sayd befoze, and the other deriuing from Archebishop Lanfranc, who (as they affirmed) at the dotation of their house, bestowed vpon it (amongest other things of great price) the translated reliques of Mildred, and Edburgaes bodyes.

1116.

Howsoever that were, they bothe made marchandise of her myzacles, and the Monkes of S. Augustines perceiuing, that by the dissolution of the Monasterie, and the absence of the Saintes, their towne of Mynster, in Tanet was falne to decay, of verie conscience, and for pitiees sake, by the meane of Hughe their Abbat, procured at the handes of King Henric the first, the graunt of a Market, to be holden there, whiche I wote not whether it inioueth to this day, or no.

Thus much of the Isle and Mynster Abbay. Now a worde or two touching Ippedfleete, wherof I spake befoze, and of Stonor another place within the Isle, and then I will leaue Tanet, and procede in my iourney.

Ippedfleete, This Ippedfleete, is the place wher Hengist and Horsa (the



(the Saron captaines) came first on lande, and it is of diuers Chronicles diuersly termed, some calling it Ippinesfleete, others Heoppinesfleete, and others Wippedfleete, These of the last sorte write, that it toke the name of one Wipped, (a noble man amongst the Saronis) who onely was slaine on that parte, when Aurel. Ambrose (the leader of the Britons) lost twelue of his principall chieftains in one conflict. In dede, the name soundeth, the place where Wipped, or Ipped swymmed, 473. whiche I coulde haue agreed to be the same, that is at this day called, Wapfleete in Essex, (the rather for that Ralph Higde writeth, that the Britons neuer inuaded Kent, after the battayle at Craforde, whiche was before this ouerthrowe that I last spake of.) Howbeit since the writer of our holy Legend layeth it in Tanet, I am contented to subscribe.

In this Ile lyeth Stonor, sometime a haven towne also: for in the reigne of William Rufus, there arose a suite in lawe, betwene the Londoners, and the Abbat of S Augustines (then owner of the place) as touching the right of the haven of Stonor, wherein by the fauorable aide of the Prince, the Monkes (as Thomas Spot, their owne Chronicker reporteth) preuailed, and the Citizens had the ouerthrowe. Not long after whiche time, they obtained of King Henric the first, a fayre to be holden yerely at this towne, five dayes together, before and 1090. after the feast of the translation of S. Augustine. 1104.

Nowe woulde I forthwith leade you from the Ile of Tanet, to the ruines of Richeborow, sauing that the Goodwine is before myne eye, whereof I pray you first hearken what I haue to say.

# The Goodwine, or Good- wyne Sandes.

Earle God-  
wine and  
his sonnes.



Here lined in the time of King Edwarde (commonly called the Confessour) a noble mā, named Godwine, whose daughter Edgitha, the same King, by great instance of his nobilitie, (being otherwise of him selfe disposed to haue lined sole) tooke vnto his wife. By reason whereof, not onely this Godwine him selfe (being at the first but a Cowheards sonne, and after ward aduanced to honour by King Canutus, whose sister by fraude he obtained to wife) became of great power and authoritie within this Realme (but his sonnes also being five in number) were by the kings gyfte, aduanced to large liuelyhodes and honourable possessions. 1050. For Goodwine was Earle of Kent, Sussex, Hamshire, Dorsetshire, Deuonshire, and Cornwall: His eldest sonne Swane, had Oxfordshire, Barkeshire Gloucestershire, Herefordshire, and Somerset: Harold, helde Essex, Norfolk, Suffolke, Cambridgeshire, & Huntingdonshire: Tosti, had Northumberland: And Gurte, & Leofwine, possessed other places. &c. But as it is hard in great prosperitie to keepe due temperance, for, *Superbia est vitium rebus solenne secundis*: So this man and his sonnes, being puffed vp with the pryde of the Kings fauour, their owne power, pollicie, and possession, contemned all other, and forgotte them selues, abusing the simplicitie of the King by euill counsel, treading vnder foote the nobilitie by great disdaine, and oppressing the common people by insatiable rauine, extortion, and tirannie. So that immediatly, and at once, they pulled vpon their heades, the heauie displeasure of the Prince, the immoderate hatred of the noble men, and the bitter execration and

and curse of the common sort. Whereupon the king for a season banished them, the nobles never after liked them, and the poore people not onely railed vpon them while they lived, but also by deuised tales (as the manner is) laboured to make them hatefull to all posteritie after their death. And amongst other things, touching Godwynne him selfe, they feygned, that he was choked at Winchester (or Windfore, as others say, for liers can not lightly agree) with a morsel of bread, and that this his land in Kent sonke sodainly into the Sea. Neyther were these things continued in memory, by the mouths of the vnlearned people only, but committed to writing also, by the hands and pens of Monkes, Frears, and others of the learned sort. So that in course of time, the matter was past all peradventure, and the things believed for vndoubted veritie.

But whatsoeuer hath bene heretofore thought of these matters, hauing now iust occasion offered mee to treat of the thing, I wil not spare, to speake that which I haue read in some credible writers, and whiche I doe thinke meete to be beleued of all indifferent readers.

Siluester Giraldus (in his *Itinerarie* of Wales) and many others, doe write, that about the end of the reigne of King William Rufus, (or the beginning of Henric the first) there was a sodaine and mightie inundation of the Sea, by the which a great part of Flaunders, and of the lowe countries thereabout, was drenched, and lost, so that many of the inhabitants (being thereby expelled from their seates) came ouer into England, and made suite to the same King Henric, for some place of dwelling within his dominion. The King pitying their calamitie, and seeing that they might bee profitable to his Realme, by instructing his people in the art of clothing, (wherein at that time they chiefly excelled,) first placed

L.iii.

them

II00.

The cause  
of Good-  
wyn Sandes



them about Carlile in the North countrie, and afterwarde (vpon cause) remoued them to Rosse and Hauerford in Wales. Now at the same tyme that this happened in Flaunders, the like harme was done in sundry places, bothe of England, and Scotland, also, (as Hector Boethius, the Scottishe hystoriographer, moste plainly writeth) affirming, that (amongst other) this place, being sometyme of the possession of the Earle Godwine, was then first violently ouerwhelmed with a light sande, wherewith it, not onely remayneth couered euer since, but is become withall (*Nauium gurgis, & vorago*) a most dreadfull gulfe, and shippe swalower.

This thing, as I cannot but marueill how it hath escaped the pens of our own countrie writers (the rather for that some of them liuing about that time) haue mention of that harme in the lowe countrie: so I like not to accept it for assured trueth, considering either the authority of the writer him selfe, being a diligent and learned man, or the circumstances of the thing that he hath left written, beeing in it selfe both reasonable, & likely.

And thus I might wel make an end, but because I haue already take occasiō to accuse the of forgerie, which affirme Godwine to haue bene choked at the bourde, I trust it shalbe no great offence, (though beside purpose, yet for declaration of the trueth) to rehearse shortly, what some credible storiers haue reported of that matter also. And to the end that the trueth may appeare by collation of the diuers reportes, I will first shewe what the common opinion and tale of his death is, and then afterward what these other men write concerning the same. Ealred, the Abbat of Ryuauxe, (who tooke paynes to pen the hystorie of the same King Edwardes whole life, and of whom all others (as I thinke) learned this tale, saith: that while the King and Godwyne  
sate

The death  
of Earle  
Godwyne.

sate at the table, accompanied with others of the Nobilitie, it chaunced the Cupbearer (as he brought wyne to the board) to slip with the one foote, and yet by good strength of his other legge, to recouer him self without falling, whiche thing the Earle earnestly marking, sayde pleasantly, that There, one brother had wel helped another; mary (quoth the King) so might me mine, ne haddest thou bene Earle Godwine: casting in his dishe the murder of his brother Alfred, which was done to death at Elie by the counsell of Godwine, as hereafter in fitte place for it shall appeare. Hereat the Earle was soze moued, and thinking it moze then time to make his purgation, tooke a morsell of bread into his hand, and praying (with great and vehement obtestation) that it might choke him, if he by any meanes caused y slaught-  
 ter or consfeted thereto, he put the bread into his mouth, and was immediatly strangled therewithall.

Some write, that this bread was befoze accursed by Wulfstane, the holy Bishop of Worcester, after a certain manner then vsed, & called Copened, as in the table to y<sup>e</sup> Curled Saxons lawes is to be seene. But this Ealred affirmeth bread. that after the woords spoken by the Earle, the King him selfe blessed the bread with the signe of the crosse: And therfoze these men agree aswel together, as blessing and cursing be one like to another.

But letting that and them passe, heare (I beseech you) what Alfred of Beuerley (a learned man, that liued in the time of King Henric the first, somewhat befoze this Abbat Ealred) saith, touching this matter. *Godwinus graui morbo ex improviso percussus ac Regi ad mensam Wyntonie assidens, mutus in ipsa sede declinavit, ac postea in camerā Regis a filiis deportatus moritur. Quidam autem dicunt. &c.*

Godwine being sodainly stricke w a grievous disease, as he sate at y table with the King at Winchester, fel down

from his stole, and was carried by his sommes into the Kings chamber, where he dyed: but some say that he was choked &c. And to the same effect writeth Marianus the Scot. Simeon also, the Chaunter of Durham, whiche lived about the time of this Alfred, or rather before him, treating of this matter, hath these wordes.

*God vinus gravi morbo percussus, in ipsa sede declinavit, & post horis quinque moritur.* Godwyne being taken with a grienous disease, dropped down from the place where he sate, and dyed within five houres after.

Thus these men repozte another manner of his death, the one vsing no mention at all of any accursed bzeade, and the other reciting it but as a tale. And for the more plaine detection of the deceipt of this Abbat, he that wil read the second booke of William Malines. *De Regibus*, shall finde, that the occasion, and introduction of this matter (I meane, the slipping of the Kings Cupbearer, and the speache that proceeded therof, namely, that One brother had wel helped another) is woorde for woord stollen from thence, for William (whiche lived before Ealred) repozteth, that king Ethelstane, by perswasion of one that was his cupbearer, had banished Eadwine his owne bzother, for suspicion of treason, and had committed him to the Seas and windes in an olde, shaken, and fraile vessel, without saile, oare, or companion, (saue one Esquier only,) in whiche exile he perished, and that afterward the King (vnderstanding his bzothers innocencie, and forowing his owne rashnesse) tooke occasion by sight of his cupbearers foote slipping, to be auenged of the false accusation, even as it is here tolde of King Edward. But Ealred, forsothe, was so fully disposed to magnifie King Edward (bycause he so muche magnified the Monkishe and single life) that he sticked not at greater matters then this, affirming boldely that the same  
King



King while he hearde Masse at Westminster, saue be-  
 twene the Priestes handes, Christe blessing him with  
 his fingers : That at another Masse he saue the seuen  
 sleepers at Ephesus, turne them selues on the one side,  
 after they had slept seuentie yeares together on the o-  
 ther, (which, seeing it was within fife yeares of so many  
 as Epimenides slept,) Ealred (in my phansie) is woorthy  
 to haue the seconde game at the whetstone.) Fur-  
 thermore, that S. Iohn Baptist sent to King Edward, a  
 Ring of Golde from Ierusalem, whiche he him selfe had  
 sometime befoze giuen to a poore man, that asked almes  
 of him in the name of S. Iohn : And suche other matters  
 of like credite, whiche bothe for the vanitie of the things  
 them selues, being meete to haue place in Philopscudes  
 of Lucian, and for the desire that I haue to keepe  
 order, I will pretermitt, and re-  
 turne to my purpose.

The visions  
 of Edward  
 the confes-  
 four.

Epimenides  
 did slepe 75  
 yeares.

i. Loue, Ly.  
 or game for  
 the whet-  
 stone.

M. Riche-

# Richeborowe in Latine, *Urbs Ru-*

tupina: in Saxon (Reptacheſter) the name being forged (as I coniecture) either of the Bryttiſhe woord (Rwyd) whiche ſignifieth a net, in token that it ſtoode by fiſhing: or of (Rwydd) whiche ſignifieth ſpeede, by cauſe from thence (as ſome thinke) is the moſte ſhorte and ſpeedy cutte over the Seas.



Athew (¶ Monke of Weſtminſter, & Authour of the woork called, *Flores Hystoriarum*) taketh the place whiche Beda, Ptolome, and others call Rutupi, to be Sandwiche, and therefore he applieth to the one whatſoever he findeth of the other: but bicauſe Iohn Leland (a man generally acquainted with the antiquities of the Realme) affirmeth in his woork whiche hee intituled (*Syllabus in Genethliacon Eaduerdi*) *Rutupi* to haue been, where Richeborowe now is (to whiche opinion I rather incline) I thinke good to giue them ſeueral titles, and to ſpeake of Richeborowe by it ſelfe, leauing to fit place (for Sandwiche alſo) ſuche matter, as of right belongeth therevnto.

The whole ſhoare of Kent therefore, that lyeth ouer againſt Dunkircke, Calaiſe, and Boloigne, is of Cæſar, Iuuenal, Lucan, Ptolome, Antoninus, and others, called *Rutupia*, or *Rutupinum littus*, and that place of England whiche Beda taketh to be neareſt to the Morines (a people of Gallia Belgica, whiche at this day comprehendeth, Picardie, Boloigne, Artoys, and ſome parte of the lowe countries) is of Iohn Leland interpreted to be Richeborowe, not paſſe halfe a myle diſtant from Sandwiche toward the Eaſt.

The ſame man alſo,  
perſuaſ

persuaded partly by the viewe of the place it selfe, and partly by the authoritie of one Gotcelinus, supposeth, that Richeborow was of auncient time, a Citie of some price, and that it had within it a Palaice, where King Ethelbert receiued Augustine. As for the title of a Citie, I doubt not but that if the ruines of the auncient walles yet extant, or the remenants of the Romane rogne often found there, did not at all inforce the likelihood, yet the authoritie of Beda alone (which calleth it plainly a citie) would suffice: But whether it were the Palaice of King Ethelbert, when he entertained Augustine, he that shall aduisedly read the first Chapter of Beda his first booke of the Ecclesiastical storie, shall haue iust cause to doubt, for asmuch, as he sheweth manifestly, y the King came from his Palaice in the Continent (out of Thanet) to Augustine: & Leland himselfe confesseth, that Richeborow was then within Thanet, although that since that time, the water hath chaunged his course, and that it cleane out of the Island.

Now, where some men (as I said) haue taken it to bee Sandwiche, I take them to bee greatly deceaued.

Sandwiche,  
is not Rutupi.

For Richeborowe (being corruptly so sounded, for Reptsborowe) hath remayning in it, the very rootes (as I may speake it) of Reptachester: And Reptachester (saith Beda) and Rutupi Portus, are all one: So then (Chester) being touned to (Borow) (whiche be in deede two wordes, but yet in manner of one signification and effect) Rept, and Riche, haue some affinitie the one with the other, but neyther Riche, Repta, nor Rutupi, can haue with Sandwiche any manner of similitude. Thus muche of the name, and antiquitie of this poore Towne, whiche was in tyme of the olde Brytons, of great price, and the common Port or



place of arriuall out of Fraunce, whereof we finde no other note in latter hyſtozie, either bicauſe the ſame was long ſince (before the coming of the Saxons) neglected, when as the Romanes had loſt their intereſt within this Realme : Or elſe, for that ſoone after their arriuall it decayed, by reaſon that the water chaunged his courſe, and leſte it dry : So that nowe moſt aptly, that may be ſayde of this towne, neare to the Iſle Thanet, whiche Virgil ſome time wrote of Tened it ſelfe.

*Dives opum, Priami dum regna manebant,*

*Nunc tantum ſinus, & ſtatio male fida carnis.*

A wealthy land, while Priams ſtate, and kingdome  
vpriſt ſtoode,

But nowe a bay, and harbour bad, for ſhips to lye at  
roade.

But nowe I will make towarde Sandwiche, the  
firſt of the Portes (as my iourney lyeth) and by the way  
ſpeake ſomewhat of the Five Portes, in generall.

The

## The Cinque Portes.



I finde in the booke of the general suruey The anti-  
quitie of  
the Portes.  
of the realme, whiche William the Con-  
querour caused to be made in the fourth  
yere of his reigne, & to be called Domes-  
day, bycause (as Mathew Parise saith)

it spared no man (but iudged all men in-  
differently, as the Lord in that great day wil doe) that  
Douer, Sandwiche, and Rumney, were in the time of  
King Edward the confessour, discharged almoste of all  
maner of impositions and burdens (whiche other towne  
dyd beare,) in consideration of suche service to bee done  
by them vpon the Sea, as in their speciall titles shall  
hereafter appeare: wherevpon, although I might ground  
by reasonable coniecture, that the immunity of the haue  
Townes (which we nowe cal by a certaine number, the  
Cinque Portes) might take their beginning from the  
same Edward: yet for as muche as I read in the Char-  
tre of King Edward, the first after the conquest (whiche  
is reported in our booke of Entries) A recitall of the  
grauntes of sundrie Kinges to the Fiue Portes, the same  
reaching no higher, then to William the Conquerour,  
I will leaue my coniecture, and leane to his Chartre:  
contenting my selfe to yelde to the conquerour, the  
thanks of other mens benefites, seeing those whiche  
were benefited, were wisely contented (as the case then  
stoode) to like better of his confirmation or second gift,  
then of King Edwardes first graunt and endowment.

And to the end that I may proceede in some manner of  
array, I will first shew, which Townes were (at the be-  
ginning) taken for the Fiue Portes, & what others be now  
reputed in the same number: secondly, what service they

pp.iii.

ought,

ought, & did in times passed, & lastly what priuiledges they haue therfore, & by what persons they haue been gouerned.

Whiche be  
the Fiue  
Portes.

If I should iudge by the commune, and rude verse,  
*Douer, Sandwich, Ry, Rum, Frigmare ventus,*

I might say, that Douer, Sandwiche, Rie, Rumney, and Winchelsey, (for that is, Frigmare ventus) be the Fiue Portes: Againe if I should bee ruled by the Rolle whiche reciteth the Ports, that send Barons to the Parleament, I muste then adde to these, Hastings, & Hyde, for they also haue their Barons, as wel as the other: and so should I not onely, not shewe whiche were the first Fiue, but also (by addition of two others) increase bothe the number, and doubtfulnes. Leauing the verse therfore, for ignorance of the authour, and suspicion of his authoritie, and forsaking the Rolle (as not assured of the antiquitie) I will flye to Henrie Bracton, a man bothe auncient, learned, and credible, which liued vnder King Henrie the third, and wrote (aboue thre hundred years since) learnedly of the lawes of this Realme.

1250.

Citizens  
were called  
Barons, in  
olde time.

He (I say) in the third booke of his worke, and treatise of the Crowne, taking in hand to shewe the articles inquirable before the Iustices in Eire; (or Itinerant, as wee called them, bycause they vsed to ride from place to place throughout the Realme, for administration of iustice) setteth forth a speciall fourme of writtes, to bee directed severally to the Baylifes of Hastings, Hiche, Rumney, Douer, and Sandwiche, commaunding them, that they should cause twentie and foure of their Barons (for so their Burgeses, or Townesmen, and the Citizens of London likewise, were wont to be termed) to appeare before the Kings Iustices at Shipwey in Kent, as they accustomed to doe, there to enquire of suche pointes, as should bee giuen them in charge.

Whiche



Whiche done, he addeth mozeouer, that for so muche as there was oftentimes contention betwene them of the Five Portes, and the inhabitants of Yarmouth in Norfolk, and Donwiche in Suffolke, there should be seuerall writtes directed to them also, retournable befoze the same Iustices at the same day and place: reciting, that where the King had by his former writtes summoned the Ples of the Five Ports to be holden at Shipwey, if any of the same towne, had cause to complaine of any (beeing within the liberties of the saide Portes) he should be at Shipwey to propounde against him, and there to receaue accozding to lawe and iustice.

Contentio,  
betweene  
Yarmouth,  
and the five  
Portes.

Thus muche I recite out of Bracton, partly to shew that Shipwey was befoze King Edward the firsts time, the place of assembly for the Ples of the Five Portes, partly to notifie the difference, and controuersie that long since was betweene these Portes, and those other towne: But purposely and chiefly to proue, that Hastings, and Hithe, Douer, Rumney, and Sandwich, were in Bractons time, accompted the Five principall hauens or Portes, whiche were endowed with priuiledge.

Neither yet will I deny, but that soone after, Win-

1268.

chelsey and Rye might be added to the number. For I finde in an olde recozde, that King Henrie the thirde tooke into his owne handes (for the better defence of the Realme) the towne of Winchelsey, and Rye, whiche belonged befoze to the Monasterie of Fescampe in Normandie, & gaue therfoze in exchaunge, the Manor of Chiltham in Gloucester shyre, & diuers other landes in Lincolne shyre: This he did, partly to conceale from the Priors Aliens, the intelligence of the secrete affairs of his Realme, & partly bycause of a great disobedience

M.iii.

and

Winchel-  
sey first  
buidled.

1277.

and excesse, that was committed by the inhabitants of Winchelsey, against Prince Edward his eldest Sonne. And therefore, although, I can easely be led to thinke, y<sup>e</sup> he submitted them for their correction to the order, and gouernance of the Fiue Portes, yet I stand doubtfull whether he made them partners of their priuiledges, or no, for that had been a preferment, and no punishment: but I suspect rather, that his Sonne King Edward the first, (by whose encouragement and aide, olde Winchelsey was afterward abandoned, and the now Towne buidled) was the first that appareiled them w<sup>th</sup> that preeminence.

By this therefore let it appeare, that Hastings, Douer, Hithe, Rumney, & Sandwiche, were the first Ports of priuiledge, which (bycause they were Fiue in numb<sup>r</sup>e) bothe at the first gaue, and yet continue, to all the residue, the name of Cinque Portes, although not onely Winchelsey and Rye, be since that time, incozporated with them as principals, but diuers other places also (for the ease of their charge) be crept in as partes, lims, and members of the same. Now therefore, somewhat shalbe saide, as touching the seruices that these Portes of duetie owe, and in deed haue done, to the Princes: wherof the one (I meane with what numb<sup>r</sup>e of vessels, in what manner of furniture, and for howe long season, they ought to waite on the King at the Sea, vpon they<sup>r</sup> owne charges) shall partly appeare by that whiche we shall presently say, and partly by that whiche shall follow in Sandwiche, and Rumney: The other shalbe made manifest by examples, drawen out of good hystories: and bothe shalbe testified by the woozdes of King Edward the first in his owne Chartre.

The booke of Domesday befoze remembred, chargeth Douer w<sup>th</sup> 20. vessels at the Sea, wherof eache to be furnished

furnished with one and twentie men, for fiftene dayes together: and sayth further, that Rumney and Sandwiche answered the like service: But nowe whether this (like) ought to be vnderstode of the like altogether, bothe in respect of the number and service, or of the (like) in respect of service, according to the proportion of their abilitie onely, I may not hereby take vpon me to determine, For on the one side, if Rumney, Sandwiche, and the residue, should likewise find twentie vessels a pece, then (as you shall anone see) the five Portes were subiect to a greater charge at that time, then King Edward the first layd vpon them: And on the other side, if they were only chargeable after their proportion, then know I not howe far to burthen them, seeing the Record of Domesday it selfe, bindeth them to no certeintie. And therfore leauing this as I finde it, I must elsewhere make inquisition for more light some proofe: And firste I will haue recourse to King Edward the firste his Chartre, in which I read, that At ech time that the King passeth ouer the sea, the Portes ought to rigge vp fiftie and seven ships, (whereof euery one to haue twentie armed souldiers) and to mainteine them at their own costes, by the space of fiftene dayes together.

And thus it stode with the Portes for their generall charge, in the sixte yeare of his reigne, for then was this Chartre sealed: But as touching the particular burthen of eche one, I haue scene two diuers testimonies, of which the first is a note in Frenche (bearing the countenance of a Record) and is intituled, to haue bene renewed in the two and twentie yeare of the Reigne of the same King, by Stephan Penchester, then Constable of Douer Castle, in which the particular charge is set downe in this manner.

The Port of Hastings ought to finde thre ships.

R.

The



The towne of Peuenssey, one.

Buluerhithe and Petit Iahn, one.

Bekisborne in Kent, seuen.

Grenche in Kent, two men and armour, with the ships of Hastings.

The towne of Rye, five.

To it was Tenterdene annexed, in the tyme of King Henric the first.

The towne of Winchelsey, ten.

The Port of Rumney, foure.

Lydde, seuen.

The Port of Hythe, five.

The Port of Douer, nineteene.

The towne of Folkestone, seuen.

The towne of Feuersham, seuen.

The Port of Sandwiche, with Stonor, Fordwich, Dale, &c. five.

These Ships they ought to finde vpon fourtie dayes summons, armed and arrayed at their owne charge, and in eche of them twentie men, besides the Maister of of the Mariners: all whiche they shall likewise maynteine five dayes together at their owne costes, giuing to the Maister sixe pence by the day, to the Constable vs, pence, and to eache other Mariner iij. s. And after those five dayes ended, the King shall defray the wages.

The other is a Latine Custumall of the towne of Hyde, the whiche although it pretend not so great antiquitie as the first, yet sameth it to me to importe as muche, or moze likelyhode and credit: It standeth, thus.

These be the Five Portes of our soueraigne Lord the King hauing liberties, which other Portes haue not: Hastings, Romenal, Hethe, Douer, Sandwiche, the chiefe Townes.

The

The seruices due by the same.

Hasting shal finde. 21. ships, in euery ship. 21. men, and a Garcion, or Boye, whiche is called a Gromet. To it perteine (as the members of one towne) the Seashore in Seford, Peuenshey, Hodeney, Winchelsey, Rye, Ihame, Bekesbourne, Grence, Northie, Bulwerhethe.

Romenal. 5. ships, In euery ship. 21. men, and a Garcion:

To it perteine, as members thereof, Promhell, Lede, Eastwestone, Dengemareys, olde Rumney.

Hethe. 5. ships, as Romenal befoze. To it perteineth the Westhethe.

Douer. 21. ships, as Hasting befoze. To it perteine, Folkstane, Feuertham, and Sainct Margerets, not concerning the land, but for the goods and cattails.

Sandwich. 5. ships, as Romenal, and Hethe befoze. To it perteine Fordwiche, Reculuer, Serre, and Dele, not for the soyle, but for the goods.

Summe of the Ships. 57.

Summe of the men. 1187. and 57. Garcions.

This seruice, the Barons of the Fiue Portes do acknowledge to owe to the King, vpon summons yearely (if it happen) by the space of. 15. dayes together, at their owne costes and charges, accounting that for the first day of the. 15. in whiche they shall spread their sayles to goe towards those partes that the King intendeth: and to serue so long after. 15. dayes, as the King will, at his owne pay, and wages.

Thus muche out of these auncient notes, whereby your self may easely discerne the difference: but whether the one or the other, or (by reason of some latter designation) neither of these, haue place at this day, I must referre to them that be priuie & of counsell with y<sup>e</sup> Ports:

P. i i.

and

and so leauing this also vnderdecided, holde on the waye, wherein I am entred.

The good  
seruice of  
the 5. ports.

This dutie of attendance therfoze (being deuised for the honourable transportation, and salse conduct of the Kings owne person ouer the narrow Seas, the Portes haue not onely most diligently ever since that time performed, but furthermoze also, valiantly behaued themselves, against the enemye from time to time, in sundry exploits by water, as occasion hath ben proffered, or the necessitie of the Realme required.

1217.

*Muris ligne-  
is querendam  
saluam.*

And amongst other feates not vnworthy perpetuall remembrance, after such time as Lewes (the French Dolphen) had entered the Realme to ayde Stephan Langton the Archebishop, and the Nobilitie in the life of King Iohn, and had sent into Fraunce for newe supply of souldiers after his death, Hubert of Borrough (then Captaine of Doner) following the opinion of Themistocles, in the exposition of the Oracle of the wooden walles, by the aide of the Port towne, armed fourtie tall ships, and meeting with eightie saile of Frenchmen vpon the high Seas, gaue them a most courageous encounter, in whiche he tooke some, sounke others, and discomfited the rest.

1278.

King Henrie the thirde also, after that he came to ripper age, had great benefite by the seruice of the Cinque Portes: And King Edward the first in his Chartre, maketh their continuall faythfull seruice, (and especially their good endenour, then lately shewed againste the Welshmen) the principall cause and motiue of that his liberall graunt.

1293.

Furthermoze, about the midst of the reigne of the same King, a hundreth saile of the Hauie of the Ports, fought at the Sea with a flate of. 200. Frenchmen, all whiche (notwithstanding the great ods of the number) they



they tooke, and slewe, and sounke so many of the Maryners, that Fraunce was thereby (for a long season after) in manner destitute, both of Seamen and shipping.

Finally, and to conclude this part, in the dayes of King Henrie the fourth, the Paue of the Five Portes, 1406.  
vnder the conducte of one Henrie Paye, surprysed one hundreth and twentie Frenche Ships, all laden with Salte, Iron, Wyle, and no worse Merchandize.

The priuiledges of these Portes, being first graunted by Edward the Confessour, and William the Conquerour, and then confirmed and increased by Willia Rufus, Henrie the second, Richard the first, Henry the third & king Edward the first, be very great, considering either the honour and ease, or the freedome and exemption, that the inhabitants haue by reason of the same.

For they sende Burgesses to the Parleament, whiche by an honourable name be called Barons: They beare 4 foure staves of the Canapie ouer the Kings head at the time of his coronation, and they dyne at the vppermost table in the great hall, on his right hand: They themselves be exempted from all payments of subsidie: And they & Heires freed from wardship of body, notwithstanding any tenure. They bee empleadable in their owne Townes also, and not elsewhere: They haue amongst themselves in eache Porte, their particular place of iustice, and at Shipwey the general courte of their assemblie, where the Lord Warden taketh his othe at his first entrie into the office, & where they ought (of right) to holde all their generall Pless also, although they sit now for the moste part at Douer: They haue power (if iustice be not done them) to take the inhabitants of other Townes and Cities in Withernam: to gouerne Yarmouth: by their Baylife for one season of the yeare, to doe iustice vpon criminall offendours: To holde

Plac in Actions reall and personall, to take Conuſance by fine, to enfranchise villaines: & ſondrie other things, whiche bycauſe they be to long to be rehearſed at large, and lye not fitly in the way of my purpoſe, I will omit, and deſcend to the Wardeins of the Portes, reciting in a ſhort Catalogue, the names of ſo many of them, as I haue found to gouern, ſithence the arriuall of King William the Conquerour. And although it be no doubt, but that the Portes were vnder the gouernement of ſome, before the tyme of the conqueſt alſo, yet bycauſe King William was the firſt (ſo farre as I haue read) that made the office perpetuall, and gaue it the title whiche it now beareth (the name Wardein I meane, whiche came from Normandie and was not at all known to the Saxons) I thinke beſt to begin at his time. Againe, for aſmuche as the Conſtableſhip of the Caſtle of Douer, and this office, haue ben alwayes inſeparably matched together, and for that I ſhal haue fitte place to ſpeake of that hereafter, when I ſhall come to Douer, I will reſpit the rehearſall of bothe their originallſ til then: and here (in the meane ſeaſon) ſet down the race of the Wardeins by name only.

The names  
of the War  
deins of the  
Five Portes

John Fynes, created by William the Conquerour, Wardein of the Portes, and Conſtable of Douer, by giſte of inheritance.

James Fines, his Sonne, whiche dyed of Folkſton.

John Fynes his Sonne.

Walkelm, who deliuered it to King Stephan, and immediately after his death, abandoned the charge, and fled into Normandie.

Allen Fynes, reſtozed by King Henric the ſecond.

James Fynes, his Eldeſt Sonne.

Mathew Clere (as it ſhould ſeeme by Mat. Par. & Willia Petite) who impriſoned Godfrey, the Archbiſhop of Yorke

Yorke in Douer castle, as vnder that title shal appeare.  
William of Wrotham.

Hubert of Burgh, the Earle of Kent, who being deposed  
Bartram of Cryol succeeded.

Richard Gray, appointed by the Barons, that warred a-  
gainst King Henrie the third, who was depriued of  
his office by Hugh Bigot, because he let in the Popes  
legate by the Kings licence, and against the mind e  
of the pables.

Henrie Braybrooke.

Edward the first, in the lyfe of his father, who made  
Henrie Cobham his deputie, whose Sonne & Heire  
(called Iohn) founded Cobham College.

Roger Leyborne, in the tyme of King Edward the first.  
Stephan Penchester, in the tyme of Edward the first.

Sy<sup>r</sup> Robert Asheton.

Hugh Spenser, the younger, in the tyme of Edward the  
second.

Edmund of Woodstock, the Earle of Kent.

Reginald Cobham, in the tyme of Edward the third.

Bartholmew Burghalle, or Burgeherst, one of the first  
companions of the orde of the Garter.

Iohn Beauchampe, the Earle of Warwike.

Sy<sup>r</sup> Robert Herle, in the latter ende of King Edward  
the third.

Edmund the Earle of Cambridge.

Sy<sup>r</sup> Simon Barley, whome Thomas of Woodstocke  
beheaded.

Lord Henrie Cobham, the Sonne of Reginald Cobham.

Sy<sup>r</sup> Iohn Enros.

Sy<sup>r</sup> Thomas Beaumont.

Edward, the Duke of Aumarle and Yorke, whom King  
Henrie the fourth remoued, and substituted in place

Sy<sup>r</sup> Thomas Erpingham, for a season, but afterward,  
he gaue the office to,

P.iiii.

Prince



Prince Edward his Sonne, who when he was King in  
 possession, bestowed it vpon  
 Humfrey, the Duke of Gloucester.  
 James Fines, Lord Saye, whom Iacke Cade beheaded.  
 Edmond, the Duke of Somerset.  
 Humfrey, the Duke of Buckingham.  
 Simon Mountford, vnder King Henrie the first.  
 Richard Neuel, the Earle of Warwike.  
 William, the Earle of Arundel.  
 Richard, the Duke of Gloucester, called afterwarde  
 King Richard the third.  
 Sir William Scotte.  
 Henrie the Duke of Yorke.  
 James Fines, the Lord Saye.  
 Henrie in his fathers lyfe, afterwarde the eight King of  
 that name.  
 Arthur Plantagenet, Vicount Lisle, Bastard Sonne to  
 King Edward the fourth.  
 Sir Edward Poynings.  
 Henrie, the younge Earle of Richemond.  
 Sir Edward Guldeford.  
 George Boleyn, Vicount Rocheford.  
 Sir Thomas Cheynie, Treasurour of the household.  
 Sir Wiliam Cobham, Lord Cobham.

Thus much of the v. Portes, in general. Now of Sand-  
 wiche, the first of them in the order of my iourney, and  
 then orderly of so many of the residue, as I ye within the  
 Shyre that I haue presently in hand.

Sand-

*Sandwiche is called in Latine, Sabu-*  
*louicum, or Portus Rutupinus, in Saxon Sondpic,*  
*that is to say, the Sandie Towne, because the coast ther-*  
*about aboundeth withe Sande.*



**T**his Towne (as it appeareth by  
the report of Leland, and as it  
may seeme also by the name it  
selfe, being meere Saxon) began  
by the Saxons, after the fall of  
poore Richeborowe, which was  
in price while the honour of the  
Britons stood vp right, and was  
eyther abated by the furie of  
the Saxons, when they wonne that coast from them,  
or els came to ruine, by the alteration and vicissitude of  
the Sea, whiche peradventure choked the haven there,  
of with light sande, as it hath since that time done  
this at Sandwiche also.

King Canutus gaue (as some write) to Christes church  
in Canterbury, Sainct Bartholmews arme (if happely  
it were not a chaungeling: for Kings & great men were  
ostentymes after that sort deluded, though they in the  
meane time bought such reliques dearely, and thought  
that kinde of gifte moste princely) he gaue also a riche  
Pall, a Crowne of Golde, and this haven of Sandwiche,  
together with the royaltie of the water on eache side, so  
farre as (a shippe being on stote at the full Sea) a man  
might caste a thozte hatchet out of the vessell vnto the  
Bankes.

Reliques of  
great price.

The place it selfe grew in tyme to be wel peopled,  
and of worthynesse to be one of those Portes, that found  
fauour of priuilege, in consideration of their seruice  
at

The aunci-  
ent estate  
of Sand-  
wiche.

1064.

Sandwiche  
spoyled, &  
brent.

The schole  
at Sand-  
wiche.

at the Sea, for it appeareth by the booke of Domesday, that this was the estate of Sandwiche. It laye in a hundred belonging to it selfe, it did to the King suche like seruice by tenure, as Douer did: It was of the possession of Christes Church, as I haue shewed, and was appointed for the apparell of the Monkes of that house, to the whiche it yralded fourtie thousand herrings besides certaine money, and had in it three hundred and seven houses inhabited: And I finde not, but that the Towne continued in the like plight, long after the Conquest, (being somewhat amended also by the Staple, whiche King Edward the first for a season remoned thither) euen vntil the time of King Henric the first, in whose dayes Peter Brice (the Steward of Normandie) landed at Sandwiche, and with fire and sword, wasted the Towne in manner to ashes, and slewe the inhabitants almoste to the last man. Since whiche time, partly by the smarte of that wounde, but chiefly by the abundance of the light Sande (wherewith the Sea hath glutted the haven) it is declined to great decay, and were like to fall to extreme ruine, were it not that nowe presently it is somewhat relieved by the repaire of suche, as haue abandoned their Countrie for the freedome of their consciences, whose abode howe long it will be, the Lorde onely knoweth, for whose cause they suffer banishment.

There was in this Towne, before the generall suppression, a house of Carmelites, wherof I read none other good thing, saue that it brought forth the one learned man, called William Beeley, in the reigne of King Henric the first. But nowe lately (to repaire the losse of that dissolution) Maister Roger Manwode, a man bozne in the Towne, and aduanced by vertue and good learning to the degree of a Sericant at the Lawe, hath

for



for the increase of Godlinesse and good letters, erected and endowd a faire Free Schoole there, from whence there is hope, that the common wealth shall reape moze profite after a fewe yeares: then it receaued commoditie by the Carmelites, since the time of their first foundation.

This only is that whiche I had to say, either of the present, or passed estate of this place: whiche done, I will procede to the narration of suche other thinges, as long since happened thereaboutes, partly for the illustration of the antiquitie of the towne, & partly for setting forth of the comoditie of the hauen, but chiefly for the obseruation of the order whiche I haue begunne: whiche is, to pretermitt nothing (woorthie note) that I finde in storie, concerning the place that I take in hand.

But bycause that whiche I haue to say, dependeth altogether, (or for the greater parte) vpon the Hystorie of the Danes, whiche many yeares together disquieted this land, it shal bee fitte, as well for the better explication of the thinges presently in hand, as also for the moze easie vnderstanding of other matters, that must hereafter followe, to disclose (so compendiously as I may) the first beginning, proceeding, and ending, of the Danishe affaires, warres, and troubles within this Realme.

Aboute the yeare after Christe, seven hundredeth **787.**  
 foure score and seven, three vessels of the Northe East Countrie men (whose ancestors had before, within the compasse of one hundredeth and fourtie yeares, sacked Rome in Italie foure seuerall times, and whose offspring afterward wonne Normandie from the Frenche King) shewed them selues vpon the westerne shoare of England, being sent before hand (as it is supposed) to espie the comoditie of the hauens, the aduantage of arriual, the wealth and force of the inhabitants, & to the end to

The whole  
 hystorie of  
 the Danishe  
 doings in  
 England.

prepare the way for greater powers, then were appointed to followe.

These had no sooner set some of their men on lande, but the Reeue, or officer or Beorhtricke, or Brietricke (then King of the West Saxons) had knowledge therof: who came vnto them, and demaunding the cause of their arrival, would haue carried them to the Kings presence, but they in their resistance slew him, whereupon the people of the Countrey adioyning, addressed themselves to reuenge, and assembling in great numbers, beate them backe to their ships, not without the losse of some of their company.

And this was the first attempt, that euer the Danes (for so our hystories call by one general name, the Danes Norwais, Gottes, Vandals, & others of that part) made vpon England: after whiche tyme, what horrible inuasions, miseries, calamities, and oppressions followed, shall appeare anone.

795.

Not long after this enterprize, a fewe ships of them, made the lyke assay in Scotland, and within short space after that also, some other of them entred Tynemouth Hauen in the North parte of England, and taking some small booties, retourned to their vessels.

833.

Now by this experiment, they had gained sufficient knowledge of that, for whiche they first came, & therefore thinking it fit tyme to assay further, they rigged by a greater numbze of ships, armed more store of chosen Souldiers, entred the Riuer of Thamise with five and thirtie sayle, landed in despight of the people, fired, spoiled, herried, and preuailed so farre, that Egbert (who then had the Monarchie ouer all England) was faine to come with all his power to the reliefe and rescue.

But such was the will of God (for the punishment of Idolatrie and superstition, which then ouerwhelmed this

this Realme) that the Danes in stead of being discomfited by the Kings repaire, were merueilously encouraged by his misfortune. For, after that they had once gotten the better in the field against him, they were so embouldened therby, that notwithstanding he afterward, and some other valiant Princes following, by great prowesse, abated their furie in parte, yet, adioyning themselves to the Britons (that then were in great enmitie with the Saxons) and swarming hither out of their owne Countrey in such lightes, that the number of the slaine was continually supplied with greate advantage, they neuer ceased to infeste the Realme, by the space of thre hundredeth yeares and moze, during the reignes of fiftene severall Kings, till at the last, they had made Etheldred flye ouer into Normandie, & leaue them his Kingdome. During all whiche time, howe mightely their forces increased vnder Hinguar, Hubba, Halfden, Guthrum, Aulaf and Hasten, (their shawe being rysen from thre ships, to thre hundredeth and fiftie at the least) howe pitiously the East, West, Southe, and Northe parts of the Realme were wasted (the towne, Cities, religious houses, and Monasteries of eache quarter being consumed with flames) howe miserably the common people were afflicted, (men, women, and children on all sides going to wracke, by their tempestuous furie) howe marueilously the Kings were amased, (the arriuall of these their enemies, being no lesse sudaine, then violent) howe barbarously the monuments of good learning were defaced, (the same suffering moze by the immanitie of this one brutish Nation, then by all the warres and conquestes of the Pictes, & Scots, Romanes, and Saxons) and finally, howe furiously fire, and swoord, famine and pestilence, raged in euery place, God and men, Heauen and the elements conspiring (as it were)

The continuance of the Danes, in England



the fatall destruction of the Realme, I may not here stand to prosecute particularly: but (leaving eache thing to fitte place) I will procede with King Etheldred, and so to my purpose.

This man aboue all other, was so distressed by their continual inuasions, that since he wanted force to make his longer defence, he thought it best to giue money for their continuall peace. And therefore charging his people with importable tributes, he first gaue them, at five seuerall payes, 113000. l. & after ward promised the 48000. yearly: hoping that (for asmuch as they seemed by the manner of their warre, rather to seeke his coyne, then his kingdome, to rob, then to rule) at the least this way to haue satisfied their hunger: but like as the stone called, Syphinus, the more it is moisted, the harder it wareth: so no giftes could quenche the golden thirste of these greedy raueners, but the more was brought to appease them, the more stonie, and inextingable they shewed themselves, neuer ceassing (even against promises, othes, & hostages) to execute their accustomed crueltie.

The Danes,  
all slaine in  
one night.

Here vpon King Etheldred, hauing nowe exhausted his whole treasure of his Realme, and therefore more vnable, then euer he was, either by power, or praier, to help himself, or to relieue his subiectes, determined by a fine policie (as he thought) to deliuer bothe the one and the other. For whiche purpose, by the aduise of one Huna, (the generall of his armie) he wrote letters to eache part of the Realme, commaunding, that vpon S. Brices day (which is the morowe after Saint Martins night) the Englishe men should all at once set vpon the Danes, before they had digested the surfaite of that drunken solemnitie, and so vtterly kyll and destroy them. This his commaundement was receaued with suche liking, entertained with such secreacie, and executed with such

spede

1012.

Saint Martins  
drunkē  
feast.

spade and celeritie, that the Danes were sodainly, & in a manner wholly, bothe men, women, and children (like the Sonnes in Lawe of Danaus) oppressed at once in a night: only a few escaped by Sea into Denmarke, and there made complaint of King Etheldreds boucherie.

For reuenge whereof, Sweyn their King, bothe armed his owne people, & waged forreigne aide, and so (preparing a houghe armie) tooke shipping, and arriued, first here at Sandwiche, and after in the Northe Countrie: the terrour of whose coming was such, that it caused the Countrie people on all sides, to submitte themselves vnto him, in so much, that King Etheldred, seeing the cause desperate, and him selfe destitute, fled ouer into Normandie with his wife, and children, friends, & familie: After whiche his departure, although both he him selfe returned, and put Canutus (the next King of the Danes) to flight: and Edmund his Sonne also fought sundrie great battailes with him, yet the Danes preuailed so mightely vpon them, that three of them in succession, (that is to say, Canutus, Haroldus, and Hardicanutus) reigned Kings here in England almoste by the space of thirtie yeares together: so much to the infamous oppression, slavery, and thraldome of the English Nation, that euery Dane was (for feare) called Lord Dane, and had at his commaundement, wheresoeuer he became, bothe man and wyfe, and whatsoeuer else he found in the house. At the lengthe, God, taking pitie vpon the people, tooke sodainly away King Hardicanute: after whose death, the Nobilitie, & Commons of the Realme, ioyned so firmly, and faithfully, both hartes and hands, with their naturall and Liege Lord, King Edward: that the Danes were once againe (and for euer) expelled this Countrie, in so much y soone after, the name (Lord Dane)

1013.

Sweyn the Dane.

1014.

1042.

101

D. iiii.

Dane)

Hoctues-  
day.

Dane) being befoze tyme a woozd of great awe and honour, grewe to a terme, and by woozd of foule despight and reproche, being tourned (as it yet continueth) to Lourdaine: besides, that euer after, the common people in ioye of that deliuerance, haue celebzated the annuall day of Hardicanutus deathe, with open pastime in the streates, calling it, euen till this oure time, Hoctues-day, in steade, (as I thinke) of hucx tues dæg, that is to say, the skorning, or mocking Tuesday.

And nowe thus muche summarily being saide, as concerning the trueth of the Danes being here, who ruled in this land almoste thirtie yeares, and raged (without all rule) aboue thre hundred and fiftie: I will returne to Sandwiche, disclosing therein suche occurrents of the Danishe doings, as pertain to my purpose.

851.

In the yeare eight hundred, fiftie, and one, after Christ, Athelstane the Sonne of Ethelwulfe, & King of Kent (whome Mathewe of Westminster taketh, or rather mistaketh, for a Bishop) fought at the Sea befoze Sandwiche, against a great Paue of the Danes, of whiche he toke nine vessels, & discomfited the residue.

1006.

Prouision  
of armour.

Against another Flæte of the Danes whiche landed at Sandwiche in the yeare one thousand and sixe, King Etheldred made this prouision: that euerie thre hundred and ten Hydes of Land (whiche Henric Huntingdon, Mathewe Parise, and others, erpound to be so many plowlands) should be charged with the furniture of one ship, and euerie eight Hydes should finde one iacke and sallet, for the defence of the Realme: By whiche meane, he made redy a mighty nauie to the Sea: But what through the iniurie of sudaine tempest, and what by the defection of some of his Nobilitie, he profited nothing. King Canutus also, after that he had recreated the the woꝛse in a fight in Lincolne shyre, whiche dꝛewe to his

1014.

his



his ships, that laye in the hauen at Sandwiche, & there moste barbarously behaued himselfe, cutting of the handes and fete of suche as he had taken for hostage, and so departed al wrothe, and melancholike, into Denmarke, to repaire his armie.

The same man, at his returne hither tooke land, wit his power at this towne: and so did Hardicanutus, sonne after him.

Furthermoze, in the dayes of King Edward the confessor, two Princes, (or rather principall Pirates) of the Danes, called Lochen, and Irlinge, landed at Sandwiche, and laded their ships with riche spoyle, where with they crossed ouer the seas to Flaunders, and there made money of it. At this place landed Lewes the Frēch Dolphine, that ayded the Englishe Nobilitie against King Iohn, as we shall hereafter haue cause to shewe moze at large.

Finally, in the reigne of King Richard the seconde, certeine Frenche ships were taken at the Sea, whereof some were fraught with the frame of a timber Castle (suche another, I suppose, as Willia the Conquerour erected at Hastings, so sone as he was arriued) whiche they also ment to haue planted in some place of this Realme, for our anoyauce: but they failed of their purpose, for the Engyne being taken from them,

it was set vp at this Towne, &

bled to our great safe-

tie, and their

repulse.

P.

Eas-

1060.



Quing somewhat to say of Eastrye,  
I trust it shalbe no great offence, to  
turne oure eye a little from the  
shoare and talke of it, in our way to  
Deale.

659.

654.

A Courtlie  
Sycophant,

It is the name of a Towne, and  
Hundreth within the Last of Saint  
Augustines, and hath the addition of East, for difference  
sake, from Westrye (commonly called Rye) nere to Win-  
chelsey in Suffex. Mathewe of Westminster maketh  
report of a murther done at it, which because it tendeth  
much to the declaration of the auncient estate of y<sup>e</sup> town,  
I will not sticke to rehearse so shortly as I can. After  
the deathe of Ercombert, the seventh King of Kent, Eg-  
bert his Sonne succeeded in the kingdome, who caused  
to be vertuously brought vp in his Palaice (which was  
then at this Towne) two young Noble men of his own  
kinred, (as some say,) or rather his owne Brethren, (as  
William of Malmesbury writeth) the one being called  
Ethelbert, and the other Etheldred: these Gentlemen so  
prospered in good learning, courtlike manners, & feates  
of adinitie mete for men of their yeares and parentage,  
that on the one side, they gaue to all wel disposed per-  
sons, and louers of vertue great expectation, that they  
would become at the length men worthe of muche esti-  
mation and honour: and on the other side, they drew  
vpon them, the feare, misliking, and vtter hatred, of the  
naughtie, wicked, and malicious sort. Of the whiche  
nuber there was one of the Kings owne household, called  
Thunner, who (as vertue neuer wanteth her enuiers)  
of a certaine diuelishe malice, repynning at their lauda-  
ble increase, neuer ceassed to blowe into the Kings eare,  
moste vntrue accusations against them: And to the end  
that

that he might y rather prouoke the King to displeasure, he perswaded him of great daunger toward his estate and person by them : and for as muche as the common people (who moze commonly worship the Sunne rising, then going downe) had them in great admiration and reuerence, hee desired the King, that either he would send them out of the Realme, or be contented to winke at the matter if any his friends, for the loue of him, and suertie of his estate, should procure to dispatche them.

The King, somewhat prouoked by feare of his owne peril, (though nothing desirous of their destruction) euē as a litle water thzowen into the fire increaseth the flame, so by a colde denial, gaue courage to the attempt: & therfoze, Thunner espying fitte time, slewe the children, and buried their bodies in the Kings Halle, vnder the clothe of his estate. But it was not long, but there appeared in the house, a bzight shining pillar, replenishing eache cozner with suche terrible and fearefull light, that the seruantes shziked at the sight thereof, and by their noyse awaked the King: who, as sone as hee saue it, was touched with the conscience of the murther, wherevnto he had a litle befoze in hart consented, & calling in great haste for Thunner, examined him straightly what was become of the children, and when he had learned the trueth, he became mosse sorrowfull, and penitent therfoze, charging himselfe with the whole crime of their deathes, for that it lay wholly in him to haue saued their liues: Then sent he for Deodat, the Archebshop, and desired to vnderstand by him, what was best to be done for expiatio of the fault: this good father (thinking to haue procured some gaine to his Church, by veneration of y dead bodies, if happely he might haue gottē them thither) perswaded the King to incossen them, & to



A right po-  
pish mira-  
cle.

commit them to honourable buriall in Christeschurche at Canterbury: but (saith mine Autho<sup>r</sup>) when the hearse was readie, it would not be moued by any force toward that Church: as truly (I thinke) as the crosse of Waltham with twelue Oxen and so many Kyne, could not be stirred any other way, but toward the place appointed; or as the Image of Berecinthia, which the Romanes had brought out of Asia, could not be remoued till the Vestal virgin Claudia had set to her hand.

Hereupon the companie assayed to conuey it to Saint Augustines, but that all in vaine also: at the last, they agreed to leade it to the Monasterie of Watrine, and then (for sothe) it passed as lightly (saith he) as if nothing at all had bene within it. The obsequies there honourably perfourmed, the King gaue the place where this vision appeared to his sister Ermenburga, who (hauing a longing desire to become a veiled Nonne) had a litle before abandoned her husbands bed, and chusing out seuentie other women for her companie, erected there a Monasterie, to the name, and honour, of these two murdered Brethren. William of Malmesbury addeth moreouer, that the King gaue the whole Isle of Thanet also to his Mother, to appease the wrathe that she had conceaued for the losse of her Children.

*Dele*

# Dele. Dela in Latine, after Leland:

I coniecture that it tooke the name of the Saxon  
woord pille, whiche is a (plaine floore) or leuel, by rea-  
son that it lyeth flat and leuel to  
the Sea.



The Chronicles of Douer (as Leland  
reporteth, for I neuer sawe them)  
haue mencion, that Iulius Caesar be-  
ing repulsed from Douer, arrined at  
this place, and arraied his armie at  
Baramdowne; whiche thing how wel  
it may stand with Caesars owne re-

porte in his comentaries, I had rather leaue to others  
to decide, then take vpon me to dispute: being wel con-  
tented where certentie is not euident, to allowe of con-  
iectures, not altogether vehement.

Only of this I am well assured, that King Henrie  
the eight, hauing shaken of the intollerable yoke of the 1536.  
Popishe tyrannie, and espying that the Emperour was  
offended, for the diuorice of Queene Katherine his wife, King Hen-  
and that the Frenche King had coupled the Dolphine rie the 8.  
his Sonne to the Popes piece, and married his daugh- fortifieth  
ter to the King of Scots, so that he might more iustly sus- his Realme.  
pect them all, then safely trust any one: determined by  
the aide of God to stand vpon his owne gardes and de-  
fence, and therefore with all speede, and without sparing  
any cost, he builded Castles, platfourmes, and blocke-  
houses, in all needefull places of the Realme: And a-  
mongest other, fearing least the ease, and aduantage  
of descending on land at this part, should giue occasion  
and hardinesse to the enemies to inuade him, he erected  
(neare together) three fortifications, whiche might at all  
times

Sandowne  
& walmere

tymes kepe and beate the landing place, that is to say,  
Sandowne, Dele, and Wamere. This whole  
matter of Dele, Iohn Leland in Cygnea cantione, com-  
prehendeth featly in these two verses.

*Iactat Dela nonas celebris arces,  
Notus Casareis locus Trophais.*

Renowned Dele doth vaunt it selfe,  
with Turrets newly raist;  
For monuments of Cæsars hoste,  
A place in stoarie praist.

But what make I so long at Dele, since Douer (the  
impreignable Porte, and place so muche renowned for  
antiquitie) is not many myles of? I will haste me  
thither therefoze, and in the sight thereof  
unfolde the singularities of  
the place.

**Douer**



# Douer, called in Latine, Dorus, Du-

rus, Doueria, Dubris, and Dorubernia: In Saxon

Soppa. All whiche names be deriued either of the Brit-

the word (Dufir) whiche signifieth water, or of

the word (Dufirha) whiche betokeneth highe, or sleepe: for the si-

tuation of the place, (beeing a highe rocke, han-

ging ouer the water) might iustly giue occasion

to name it after either.



The treatise of this place, shall consist

of three speciall members, that is to

say, the Towne, the Castle, and the

Religious buildings. The Towne,

was long since somewhat estimable,

howbeit that whiche it had (as I

thinke) was both at the first deriued

from the other two, and ever since also continually con-

served by them: But whether I hitte, or misse in that co-

jecture, certaine it is, by the testimonie of the recozde in

the Erchequer, commonly called Domesday booke, that

the Towne of Douer was of abilitie in the time of King

Edward the Confessour, to arme perely 20. vessels to

the Sea by the space of 15. dayes together, eache vessel

hauing therein. 21. able men. For in consideration

thereof, the same King graunted to the inhabitants of

Douer, not onely freedom from payment of Tholl, and

other priuileges throughout the Realme, but also par-

doned them all manner of suite and seruice, to any his

Courts whatsoeuer. The Towne it selfe was neuer

thelesse (at those dayes) vnder the protection and gover-

naunce of Godwine, the Earle of Kent: for I read, that it

chauced Eustace, the Earle of Bolloine, (who had married

Goda, the Kings sister, to come ouer y seas into Englad,

1051.

The towne  
of Douer.

of a desire that he had to vilitte the King his Brother, and that whiles his herberger demeaned him selfe vnwisely in taking vp his lodgings at Douer, he fel at variance with the Townesmen, and slewe one of them: But *Nec est temeraria virtus*. For that thing so offended the rest of the inhabitants, that immediatly they ranne to weapon, and killing eightene of the Earles seruantes, they compelled him and all his meiney to take their seete, and to seeke redress at the Kings handes.

Godwine  
resisteth  
the King.

The King hearing the complaint, ment to make correction of the fault, but the Townesmen also had complained themselves to Godwine, who determining vnadvisedly to defend his clients and seruantes, opposed himselfe violently against the King his Leige Lord and Maister. So bee short the matter wared (within a while) so hote betwene them, that either side for maintenance of their cause, arraied and conducted a great armie into the field. Godwine demaunded of the King, that Eustace might be deliuered vnto him, the King commaunded Godwine (that armes laide aside) hee would answere his disobedience by order of the Lawe: and in the ende, Godwine was banished the Realme by the sentence of the King and Nobilitie, wherevpon hee and his Sonnes fled ouer the Sea, and neuer ceassed to vniquiet the King, and spoyle his subiects, til they were reconciled to his fauour, and restozed to their auncient estate and dignitie.

1295.

This towne, was so sore wasted with fire, soone after the comming in of King William the Conquerour, that it was wholly (saue onely nine and twentie dwelling houses) consumed, and brought to ashes. And in the time of King Edward the first also, whiles two of the Popes Cardinales were here in the treatie of an attonement, to be made betwene England and Fraunce  
the

the Frenchemen landed at Douer in a night, and burned a great part of the towne, and some of the religious buildings. So that in those times, it was much enpayred by those misfortunes. But nowe in our memorie, what by decay of the haven (whiche King Henrie the eight, to his great charge, but that all in vayne, sought to restore) and what by the ouerthrowe of the religious houses, and losse of Calais, it is brought in manner to miserable nakednesse and decay: whiche thing were the lesse to be pitied, if it were not accompanied with the ruine of the Castell it selfe, the decay whereof, is so much & more grievous, as the same therof is with our ancient stories (aboue al other) most blasing & glorious. The Castell of Douer (sayth Lidgate and Rosse) Douer Cas-  
was firste builded by Iulius Cæsar the Romane Empe-  
rour, in memorie of whome, they of the Castell kept till  
this day, certeine vessels of olde wine, and salte, whiche  
they affirme to be the remayne of suche provision as he  
brought into it. As touching the whiche (if they be  
natural, and not sophisticate) I suppose them more like-  
ly to haue bene of that store, whiche Hubert de Burgh  
layde in there, of whome I shall haue cause to say more  
hereafter: But as concerning the building, bycause I  
finde not in Cæsar his owne Commentaries, mention of  
any fortification that he made within the Realme: I  
thinke that the more credible reporte, whiche ascribeth  
the foundation to Aruiragus (a King of the Britons) of  
whome Iuuenal the Poet hath mention, saying to the  
Emperour Nero, in this wise,

*Regem aliquem capies, aut de temone Britanno  
Excidet Aruiragus, &c.*

Some King thou shalt a captaine take,  
or els from Bryttishe wayne  
Shall Aruiragus tumble downe.

D.

And

Iuuenal in  
the ende of  
his. 4. Sa-  
tyres



And of whome others write, that he founde suche fauour in the eye of Claudius the Emperour, that he obtained his daughter to wife. But whosoener were the authour of this Castell, Mathewe Parise writeth, that it was accounted in his time (which was vnder the reigne of King Henry the third) *Clavis, & Repagulum, totius Regni*, the very locke and key of the whole Realme of England. And truly it seemeth to me, by that which I haue read of King William the Conquerour, that he also thought no lesse of it: For at suche time as Harold, being in Normandie with him (whether of purpose, or against his will, I leaue as I finde it, at large) made a corporall othe, to put him in possession of the Crowne, after the death of King Edward: It was one parcell of his othe, that he should deliuer vnto him this castell, and the Well within it. The same King had no soner overthrowne Harold in the fiede, and reduced the Londoners to obedience, but forthwith he marched with his armie towarde Douer, as to a place of greatest importance, and spæde in that iourney, as is already declared.

1067. Not long after whiche time also (when he had in his owne opinion) peaceably established the gouernment of this Realme, and was departed ouer into Normandie, of purpose to commit the order of that countrie to Robert his sonne, diuers of the shyre of Kent, knowing right well, howe muche it might annoy him to lose Douer, conspired with Eustace, the Earle of Boloine, for the recouerie and surprize of the same. And for the better atchiuing of their desire, it was agréed, that the Earle should cresse the seas, in a night by them appointed, at whiche time they woulde not faile with all their force to make him, and so (ioyning handes) soudainly as layle and enter it. They met accordingly, and marched by

by darke night toward the Castell, well furnished with scaling ladders, but by reason that the watch had discried them, they not only sayled of that whiche they intended, but also fell into that whiche they neuer feared: for the Souldiours within the Castell (to whome Odo the Bishop of Borieux, and Hughe Mountfort, which then were with the King in Normandie, had committed the charge thereof) kept them selues close, and suffered the assaylants to approche the wall, and then, whiles they disorderly attempted to scale it, they set wide open their gates, and made a soudaine salie out of the péece, and set vpon them with suche furie, that they compelled Eustace with a fewe others, to returne to his Shippe, the rest of his companie, being eyther slayne by the sword, destroyed by fall from the Clysse, or deuoured by the Sea.

The same King also, being woorthely offended with the disobedience, auarice, and ambition of Odo (his Odo, the  
Earle of  
Kent. bastarde brother, whome he had promoted to the Bishopricke of Borieux, and to the Earldome of Kent,) for that he had not onely by rauen and extortion, raked together greate masses of Golde and treasure, whiche he caused to be grounde into fine powder, and (filling therewith dyuers pottes and crockes) had sunk them in the bottomes of Riuers, intending therewithall to haue purchased the Papacie of Rome: But also because he refused to render vnto him the Countie of Kent, and was suspected for aspiring to the Crowne of this Realme, consulted with Lanfranc (the Archebishop of Canterburie, and a professed ennemie to Odo) howe he might (safely and without offence to the Ecclesiasticall estate, for that hee was a Bishoppe) bothe conteyne that treasure within the Realme, and also deteyne his person from

D.ij. going

going into Italie, whether warde he bothe addressed him selfe with all speede, and gathered for his trayne, great troupes of valiaunt, and seruiceable men out of euerie quarter: Lanfranc counseled the King, to commit him to safe custodie, and for his defence armed him with this pretie shift: If it be layde to your charge (quoth he) that you haue layde violent handes vpon a sacred Bishop, Say, that you imprisoned, not the Bishop of Borieux, but the Earle of Kent. The King liked well the conceit, and causing Odo to be apprehended, caste him into prison, whence he was not deliuered, during al the time of his reigne. That done, he made diligent inquisitiō for the hourdes of golde, and by feare of torture, caused the Bishops seruants to be way the whole treasure.

Fynes, the  
first Consta-  
ble of Do-  
uer Castell,  
and the be-  
ginning of  
Castlegard.

When also toke he new order for the gouernement of this Shyre, and bycause he was perswaded, that nothing within the same was of more importance, then Douer Castell, he seised it into his handes, forthwith fortified it, and chose out a noble mā, called Iohn Fynes, (of whose prowesse and fidelitie he had made good tryal) and committing vnto him, not only the custodie thereof, but the gouernment of the rest of the Portes also, by gift of inheritance, he named him Constable of Douer, and Wardein of the Cinque Portes. And to the end that he shoulde be of sufficient abilitie to beare the charge of the defence thereof, he gaue him to the number of sixe and fiftie Knightes fees of lande and possession, willing him, to communicate some partes of that gift, to suche other valiaunt and trustie persons, as he should best like of, for the more sure conseruation of that his most noble and precious pcece.

He accordingly called vnto him eight other worthe Knightes, and imparting liberally vnto them, of that whiche he had receiued of the King, bounde them by te-

nure



nure of their lande receiued of the King, to mainteine one hundzeth and twelue souldiours amongst them: whiche number he so diuided by monethes of the yeare, that fise and twentie were continually to watche and warde within the Castell, for their seuerall stintes of time: and all the rest ready at commaundement, vpon whatsoeuer necessitie.

The names of these eight were, Willia of Albrance, Fulbert of Douer, William Arsicke, Galfride Peuerell, William Maynemouth, Robert Porthe, Robert Creuequer (called in the Latine Records, *De crepito corde*) that is, Crackt harte: And Adam Fitz Williams. Eche of al whiche, had their seuerall charges, in sundry towres, turrets, & bulwoks of the castel, and were contented of their owne dispencc, to mainteine and repaire the same, in token wherof, diuers of them beare the names and titles of these newe chosen Captaines, euen till this oure present time. And thus Douer being dispatched of a busie Bishop, fenced by the Kings appointment, furnished, fraught, and planted with a moste faithfull Constable, vigilant Captaines, and diligent warders, gayned and reteined the opinion and name of a most important, commodious, and necessarie pcece, not only with the native Princes and Nobilitie of our owne Realme, But also with suche fozeigne Potentates, as had warre and contention with vs: in so muche as in sundry troubles ensuing, at sundry times afterwarde within this Realme, it did plainely appeare, that this Castell was the chiefe marke, wherreat eche man directed his shot.

For King Stephan, in the contention that arose betwene him and Maude the Emperesse, for the title of the Crowne, thought that no one thing stode him moze in hande, then to get the possession of Douer Castell, and therfore he neuer ceased to sollicite Walkelm (that the

Estimation  
of Douer  
Castell.

1137.

D. iij.

had

had the custodie thereof, till he had obteyned it.

1217.

Lewes also, the French Dolphine, which by the instigation of the Pope, & inuitating of the Nobilitie, invaded King Iohn, (vpon such cause as shall hereafter appeare) hauing gained, partly by tenure, & partly by surrender of the Barons, that were of his faction, almost all the Castels and Holdes, lying on the Southe parte of the Realme, coulde not yet thinke him selfe assured, onlesse he had Douer also.

Hubert of  
Brough, a  
noble cap-  
taine.

For his father Philipe, hearing that he had the possession of sundry other strong places, and that he wanted Douer, Swore by Saint Iames arme, (whiche was his accustomed othe) that he had not gained one fote in Englande: and therefore, he made thither with all his power, and besieged it streightly: But that noble Captaine Hubert of Borroughe, (of whome I lately spake) whiche was in his time, Constable of the Castell, Wardein of the Portes, Earle of Kent, and chiefe Iustice of all Englande, defended it with suche couragious constancie, that it was bothe a comforte to the Englishe subiecte, and a wonder to the French enemye to beholde it: in so muche, as I can not woorthely impute the deliuerie of this Realme, from the perill of forreigne seruitude (wherein it then stode) to any one thing so muche, as to the magnanimitie of this man.

1263.

Of whome also (by the waye) I thinke good to tell you this, that in his time of Constableship at Douer, and by his meanes, the seruice of Castlegarde there, whiche had contayned (as I shewed before) from the time of William the Conquerour, was with the assent of King Henrie the thyrde, conuerted into a payment of money, the lande being charged with tenne shillings for euerie War-der, that it was bounde to finde, and the owners thereby discharged of their personall seruice, and attendance

tendaunce for euer : At whiche time also, he caused the same King to release by his free Chartre, the custome of Forrage due to this Castell, and that done, him selfe instituted newe lawes amongst the watchmen, and increased the number of the Warders. But nowe to my purpose againe.

Simon, the Earle of Leycester, and leader of the Barons warre againste King Henrie the thirde, euen at the first wrested the Castell of Douer, out of the Kings possession, and keeping the same during all his life, vled to sende thither (as vnto a place of most assuraunce) all suche as he had taken prisoners.

After his ouerthrowe, Edward (then Prince, and afterwarde the first King of that name) assailed it with all speede, and (by the ayde of the prisoners within, whiche had taken the great towre to his vse) obtained it : Where lefte he prisoned, Guy the sonne of this Simon, but he escaped sone after, by corruption of his keepers. 1266.

To make an ende, the Nobilitie of that time were fully perswaded, that bothe the safetie and daunger of the whole Realme, consisted in this one Castell : And therefore (saythe Mathewe Parise) at suche time as King Henrie the thirde, called ouer from beyonde the Seas his owne brother, Richarde (then King of the Romanes) the Noble men (who had him in some Jealousie) would not agree, that he, or any of his, should once enter within this Castell. Not without good cause therefore, hath Douer by greate preeminence, bene reported the chiefe of the Five Portes, assigned by lawes of Parleament, as a speciall place for passage and exchange, and by auncient tenure acknowledged for Lady and Maistresse of many Manors : To it alwayes some man of great apparaunce is appointed



as Captaine and gouernour. To it sundry Gentlemen of the Shyre, paye yet money for the auncient due tie of their attendance and seruice: And to it finally, the countrey men in all times of trouble, haue an especiall eye and regarde.

Reparation  
of Douer  
Castell.

As concerning the mayntenaunce of this Castell in fortification, and building, I finde not muche moze in storie, then I haue already opened, whiche happeneth the rather (as I thinke) for that many priuate persons within the Shyre of Kent, were of long time, not onely bounde by their tenures of Castle garde, to be ready in person for the defence, but also stode charged in purse, with the reparation of the same. Onely I reade in Iohn Rosse, that King Edward the fourth, to his great expence, (whiche others reckon to haue bene ten thousande poundes) amended it thzoughout: Having therfore none other memorabile thing touching the Castell it self, I will leaue it, and passe to the Religious houses.

S. Martines  
in Douer.

Lucius the first chzistened King of the Britons, builded a Church within Douer Castell, to the name and seruice of Christe, endowing it with the tolle or custome of the hauen there. And Eabaldus (the sonne of Ethelbert, the firste chzistened King of the Saxons) erected a College within the walles of the same, whiche Wygh-tred (a successeur of his) remoued into the towne, stozed with two and twentie Chanons, and dedicated it to the name of S. Martine: This house, was after ward new builded by King Henric the seconde (or rather by William Corbeil, the Archebishop in his time,) stuffed by Theobalde his successeur with Benedicte Monkes, and called the Pryorie of S. Martines, though commonly after ward, it obtained the name of a newe worke at Douer. Betwene this house and Christes Church in Canterbury (to the whiche King Henric the seconde had giuen

725.

131.

Contentiō  
betweene  
the Religi-  
ous persons  
for grises.

giuen it) there arose (as it chaūced vsually amongst hou-  
 ses of Religion) muche contention, for certaine superio-  
 rities of iurisdiction, and for voice and suffrage in the e-  
 lection of the Archebishop. For on the one side, the  
 Bp̄ of Douer, claymed to haue interest  
 in the choice of the Archebishop, whiche the Bp̄ of  
 Christes Church would not agree vnto: And on the  
 other side, the Bp̄ of Christes Church pretended to  
 haue such a soueraintie ouer S. Martines, that he would  
 not onely visite the house, but also admit Monkes and  
 Prioues at his pleasure, whiche the other coulde not  
 beare: So that they fell to suing, prouoking, and baw-  
 ling (the ordinarie and onely meanes, by which Monkes  
 vsed to trie their controuersies) and ceased not appea-  
 ling, and pleading at Rome, tyll they had bothe weary-  
 ed them selues, and wasted their money. Howbeit, as  
 it commonly falleth out, that where respect of money  
 and rewarde gaydeth the iudgement and sentence, there  
 the mightie preuaile, and the poore goe to wracke: So  
 the Monkes of Canterbury, hauing to giue more, and  
 the Pope and his ministers being ready to take al, poore  
 Douer was oppressed, and their Bp̄ in the ende con-  
 strained to submission. And here, bycause I am falne  
 into mention of controuersie betwene ecclesiastical per-  
 sons, of whiche sorte our hystories haue plentie, I will  
 touche in fewe wordes, the euill intreatie that William  
 Longchampe, the iolly Bishop of Elye, and Chaunceller  
 of al England, vsed toward Godfrey the Kings brother,  
 and Bishop of Yorke electe within this Bp̄rie.

King Richard the first, being perswaded by the Pope Longchamp  
 and his Clergie, to make an expedition for the reconerie the lustie bi-  
 shop of Elye,  
 of the holy lande, partely for the perfozmaunce of that  
 whiche the King his father had purposed to doe in per-  
 son, and partly for satisfaction of his owne bowe, (which

he made when he tooke the crosse, as they called it, vpon him) set to port sayle his kingly rights, iurisdicions, and prerogatiues, his crowne, landes, termes, customes, and offices, and whatsoeuer he had beside, to rayse money withall: and so committing the whole gouernement of his Realme, to William the Bishop of Ely his Chancellour, he committed him selfe, and his company to the winde and Seas.

This Prelate, hauing nowe by the Kings commission the power of a Viceroy, and besides, the Popes giste, the authozitie of a Legate and Vicar, and consequently, the exercise of both the swordes, so ruled and reigned, ouer the Clergie & Laity in the kings absence, that the one sort founde him more then a Pope, the other felt him more then a King, and they bothe endured him an intollerable Tyrant: for he not only ouer ruled the Nobilitie, and outfaced the Clergie, spoyling bothe the one and the other, of their liuings and promotions, for maintenaunce of his owne ryot, pompe, and ercesse: But also oppressed the common people, deuouring and consuming wheresoeuer he became, the victuall of the countrey, with the troupes and traines of men and hoxses (being in number a thousand or fiftene hundred) that continually followed him. Amongst other his practises, hauing gotten into his handes, the reuenues of the Archebishopricke of Yorke (whereof Godfrey, the Kings brother was then elected Bishop, and busie at Rome for to obtaine his consecration) and fearing that by his returne, he might be defrauded of so swaete a mozell, he first laboured earnestly to hinder him in his suite at Rome, and when he saue no successe of that attempt, he determined to make him sure, when soeuer he should returne home. And for that purpose, he tooke order with one Clerc, (then Sheriffe of Kent, and

Con



Constable of the castel of Douer, to whom he had giuen his sister in marriage) that he should haue a diligent eye to his arriuall, and that so soone as the Archebishop did set fote on lande, he shoulde strip him of all his ornaments, and commit him to safe custodie within the Castell. Whiche thing was done accordingly: for the Archebishop was no soner arriued, and entered the Church, to offer to Sainct Martine, sacrifice for his safe passage (as the Gentiles that escaped shipwacke, were wont to doe to Neptune: ) But Clerc and his compaignie came in vpon him, and doing the Chancellours commaundement, violently haled him and his Chaplaines to prison.

Hereat Iohn (then the Kings brother, but after ward King) taking iust offence, and adioyning to him for reuenge, the vttermoost aide of the Bishops and Barons, his friendes and alies, raised a great power, and in short time so strengthened the Chancellour, that he not only agreed to release Godfrey, but was fayne him selfe also (abandoning his late pompe and glozie) to get him to Douer, and lye with his brother Clerc, as a poore, priuate, and despoyled person.

Howbeit, not thus able to endure long, the note of infamie and confusion, whereinto he was salne, he determined within him self to make an escape, and by shift of the place, to shroud his shame, in some cozner beyond the Seas: And therfore, haueing his face, and attyring him selfe like a woman, he tooke a peece of linnen vnder his arme, and a yard in his hand, minding by that disguising, to haue taken bestell amongst other passingers vnknown, & so to haue gotten ouer: But he was not at the first, in al his authozitie, moze vnlike a good man, the he was now in this poore apparel vnlike an honest womā:

*R.ij.*

and

Religious  
houles in  
Douer.

The order  
of the Tem  
plers, when  
it began.

1096.

and therfore being at the verie first discovered, he was by certaine rude fellows openly vncafed, well bored about the eares, and sent to the nexte Justice, who conueyed hym to Iohn his great euemie. And thus was all the gaye glozie of this gallant brought to shame and confusion, his Perockes feathers pulled, his black fete belzaied, his fraude vnfolded, his might abated, and him selfe in the ende suffered to sayle ouer with sorow and ignominie. Besides this Wyorie of S. Martines, (which was valued at a hundreth fourescore and eight poundes by yeare) there was lately in Douer also an Hospitall, rated at fiftie nyne poundes: An other house of the same sorte, called *Domus Dei*, (or *Maison Dieu*) reputed worth one hundreth and twentie poundes: And long since a house of Templers (as they call it) the which (together with al other of the same kind throughout the Realme) was suppressed in the reigne of King Edward the seconde: The foundation of any of these, I haue not hitherto founde out, and therfore can not deliuer therof any certaintie at all: Onely as touching this Temple, I dare affirme, that it was erected after the time of Conquest, for as muche as I am sure, that the order it selfe was inuented after that Godfrey, of Bolcin, had wonne Ierusalem, whiche was after the coming in of the Conquerour. To these also may be added for neighbourhode sake (if you will) the Monasterie of S. Radegundes on the hyll, two myles off, valued at fourescore and eightene poundes by yeare. And here, hauing perused the Towne, Castle, and religious buildings, I woulde make an ende of Douer, saue that Mathewe Parise putteth me in mynde of one thing (not vnworthy rehearsall) that was done in this Temple: I meane, the sealing of that submission, whiche King Iohn made to Pandulph (the Popes Legate) wherein he yealded

ned his Realme tributarie, and him selfe an obediencia-  
rie, and vassall, to the Bishop of Rome: And by cause  
this was almost the last acte of the whole Tragedie, and  
can not well be vnderstande without some recourse to  
the former parts and beginning, and for that some men  
(of late time) haue taken great holde of this matter, to  
aduance the Popes authoritie withall, I will shortly  
(after my manner) recount the thing as it was done,  
and leaue the iudgement to the indifferent Reader.

After the death of Hubert (the Archebishop of Can-  
terbury) the Monkes of Christes Church agreed among  
them selues to chole for their Bishop, Reginald the  
Subprior of their house. King Iohn (hauing no notice  
of this election, wherein no doubt he receiued greate  
wrong, since they ought to haue of him their *Conge desli-*  
*er*) recommended vnto them, Iohn Graye, the Bishop of  
Norwiche, a man that for his wisdom and learning,  
he fauoured muche. Some part of the Monkes, taking  
soudaine offence at Reginalde (for that he had disclosed  
a secrete out of their house) and being glad to satisfie the  
Kings desire, elected this Graye for their Bishop also.  
Hereof grewe a great suite at Rome, betwene the more  
part of the Monkes on the one side, and the Suffraganes  
of Canterbury, and the lesse number of the Monkes on  
the other side.

1205.

The Pope  
and king  
Iohn fall  
out for Ste-  
phan Lang-  
ton.

The Pope (vpon the hearing of the cause) at the first  
ratifieth the election of Iohn Graye: Howbeit after-  
warde he refuseth bothe the electes, and preferreth Ste-  
phan Langton, whom the Monkes (by cause the matter  
was not before litigious enough) elected also.

Nowe King Iohn, hearing, that not only the election  
of Graye (contrarie to the Popes owne former determi-  
nation) was made frustrate, but that there was also  
hustle into his place a man familiarly entertained by

A. iij.

the



the Frenche King (his great enemy) disliked much of the choice, & forbad Stephan the elect, to enter the Realme: The Pope againe, who (as Mathewe Parise writeth) sought chiefly in this his choice, *Virum strenuum*, a stoute man, that is (in plaine speache) a man that could exact of the Clergie, keep in awe the Laitie, and encounter the King and Nobilitie) seeing his champion thus rejected, be ginneth to startle for anger: first therefore, he moueth the King by minacing letters to admitte Stephan, & (not so preuailing) he enterditteth him, & his whole Realme: And finally, bothe prouoketh al Potentates to make open warre vpon him, and also promisseth to the King of Fraunce, full and free remission of all his sinnes, and the kingdome of England it self, to inuade him: this done, he solliciteth to rebellion the Bishops, nobilitie, and commons of the Realme, losing the (by the plenitude of his Apostolicke power) from al duetie of allegiaunce toward their Prince. By this meanes diuine seruice ceased, the King of Fraunce armed, the Bishops conspired, the nobilitie made defection, and the common people wauered, vncertaine to what part to incline: To be short, King Iohn was so pressed with suspicion & feare of domesticall & forreigne enemies on al sides, that (notwithstanding he was of great and noble courage, and seemed to haue forces sufficient for resistance also, if he might haue trusted his souldiers) yet he was in the end compelled, to set his seale to a Chartre of submissiō, wherby he acknowledged himselfe to holde the Crowne of England of the Popes Mitre, & promised to pay yerely for the same and for Ireland, 1000. Markes, to y<sup>e</sup> holy father & his successors for ever: this Chartre, because it was after ward with great insultation and triumph closed in Golde, was then commonly called, Aurea Bulla, the Bull of Golde.

The Golden Bull.

Thus, omitting the residue of this storie, no lesse tragical

gical and troublesome, then that which I haue alreadie recited: I reposit me to all indifferent men, what cause Paulus Iouius, or any other popishe parasite hathe (by colour of this Bull) to claime for the Pope, superiouritie & Dominion ouer the King of this Realme, since Iohn without the assent of the estates, (I meane his nobilitie and commons) could not (in such a gifte) either binde his successors, or charge the kingdome.

And for plaine declaration, that his submission proceeded not with their consent, I read in a treatise of one Simon de Boraston (a frier & preacher, in the time of King Edward the third) the which he wrote concerning the Kings right to the Crowne of Ireland, that in the reigne of Henrie the third (whiche next of all succeeded King Iohn) there were sent from the King, the nobilitie and the commons of England, these noble men: Hughe Bigod, Iohn Fitz Geffray, William Cantlowe, Phillip Ballet, and a Lawier named William Powicke, to the generall Counsel, then assembled at Lions in Fraunce, of purpose, and with commission, to require that the saide Bull, sealed by King Iohn, might be cancelled, for as much as it passed not by the assent of the Counsel of the Realme: and the same Authour writeth, that the Pope for that tyme did put them of, by colour of more weightie affaires, whiche the Counsel had then in hand. I know, that it may wel be thought needlesse, to labour further in confuting a litle, so weightles: (for it is true, that Aristotle saith, *Stultum est, absurdas opiniones accuratius refellere*) It is but a follie, to labour ouer curiously, in refelling of absurdities. And therefore I will here conclude the treatise of Douer, and proceede particularly to the rest of the places that lye on this shoare.

Folkestone,

Folkstone in Saxon, folceſtane, *Id est*, Populi  
Lapis, or else, florſtane, whiche signi-  
fieth a rocke, or a flawe  
of stone.

640.

S. Eanſwide  
and her mi-  
racles.



Amongest the places lying on this shoare  
(worthy of note) nexte after Douer, fol-  
loweth Folkstone, where Eanfled, or ra-  
ther Eanſwide, the daughter of Ead-  
balde, the sonne of Ethelbert, and in or-  
der of succession, the ſirte King of Kent)  
long ſince erected a religious Pryorie of women, not in  
the place where S. Peters Church at Folkstone nowe  
ſtandeth, but Southe, from thence, where the Sea ma-  
ny yeares agoe hath ſwalowed and eaten it. And  
yet, leaſt you ſhoulde thinke S. Peters Parishe church  
to be voyde of reuerence, I muſt let you knowe of *Nona  
Legenda Anglia*, that befoze the Sea had deuoured all,  
S. Eanſwides reliques were translated thither: The  
authoꝝ of that worke repoꝛteth many wonders of this  
woman, as that ſhe lengthened a beame of that building  
thꝛee foote, when the Carpenters (miſſing in their mea-  
ſure) had made it ſo muche too ſhozte: That ſhe haled  
and dꝛew water, ouer the hilles againſt nature: That  
ſhe foꝛbad certain rauinous birdes the countrey, which  
befoze did muche harme there abouts: That ſhe reſto-  
red the blynde, caſte out the Diuel, and healed innume-  
rable folkes of their infirmities. And therefore af-  
ter her deathe, ſhe was by the policie of the Popiſhe  
prieſtes, and follie of the common people, honoured foꝛ a  
Saint.

A popiſhe  
policie.

And no marvail at all, foꝛ it was vsuall in Papiſtrie,  
not onely to magnifie their Benefactours of all ſoꝛtes,  
but to coſſie alſo (ſo many of them at the leaſte) as were  
of



of noble Parentage, knowing that thereby, triple commodity ensued: the first, for as much as by that meane, they assured many great personages vnto them: secondly, they drew (by the awe of their example) infinite numbers of the common people after them: And lastly, they aduentured the more boldly (vnder those honorable, and glorious names and titles) to publish their peuishe and pelting miracles.

And this surely was the cause that Sexburge in Shepie, Mildred in Tanet, Etheldred at Elye, Edith at Wilton, and sundrie other simple women of Royall blood in eache quarter, were canonized Sainets: for generally the Religious, of those tymes, were as thankfull to their Benefactors, as euer were the heathen nations to their first Kings and founders: The one sort Sanctifying suche, as did either builde them houses, or deuise them orders: And the other Deifying suche, as had made them Cities, or prescribed them Lawes and gouernement.

This was it that made Saturne, Hercules, Romulus, and others moe, to haue place (in common opinion) with the Gods aboue the starres, and this caused Dunstane, Edgar, Ethelwold, and others, first to be shyned here in earth, and then to sit amongst the Sainets in Heauen. But let me now leaue their policie, and returne to the Hystorie. The Towne of Folkestone was sore spoiled 1052. by Earle Godwine and his Sonnes, what time they harried that whole coast of Kent, for reuenge of their banishment, as we haue often before remembred.

The Hundred of Folkestone, contained in the time of King Edward the Confessor, a hundred and twentie ploughe landes, it had in it five Parishes Churches, it was valued at a hundred and ten poundes, & belonged to the Earle Godwine before named.

The Manor was giuen to William Albranc (of The Manor.)  
S. whom

whome, I made mention in Douer) with condition, to  
 finde one and twentie warders toward the defence of  
 that Castle, and it grewe in time to be the head of  
 an honour of Baronic, as in the Re-  
 cords of the Erchequer, re-  
 maineth as yet  
 to be  
 scene,

*Salt-*

## Saltwood.



That Saltwood was long sithence an Honor also, it may appeare by an auncient writ, directed by King Henrie the second from beyond the Seas, to King Henrie his Sonne, for the restitution of Thomas Becket & Archbishop, to all suche goodes, landes, and fees, as were taken from him, during the displeasure betwene them: whiche writ bothe for shewe of the auncient forme, and because it containeth the matter of hystorie, I wil not stick to exemplifie, word for word, as Mathewe Parise hath recorded it. *Sciatis, quod Thomas Cant. Episcopus pacem mecum fecit ad voluntatem meam, & ideo precipio tibi, ut ipse, & omnes sui, pacem habeant, & faciat ei habere, & suis, omnes res suas, bene, in pace, & honorifice, sicut habuerunt tribus mensibus, antequam exirent Angliam: faciatque venire coram vobis, de melioribus & antiquioribus militibus, de honore de Saltwood, & eorum iuramento faciat inquiri, quid ibi habetur de feodo Archiepiscopi Cant. & quod*

The Pontifical iustice, of William Courtney the Archbishop

recognitū fuerit esse de feodo ipsius, ipsi faciat habere, valete. But if this Recorde of the Kings, suffise not to proue the honour of this place, then here (I pray you) a woorde of the honourable (or rather the Pontificall) dealing of William Courtney the Archbishop, who taking offence that certaine pooze men, his Tenants, of the Manor of Wingham, had brought him rent hay and littar to Canterbury, not openly in cartes for his glorie, as they were accustomed, but closely in sackes upon their horses as their abilitie would suffer, cited them to this his castle, of Saltwood, and there after that he had shewed himself (*Adria iracundior*) as hote as a tolke with the matter, he first bound them by othe to obey his owne ordinaunce,

D.ii,

and



& then inioyned them for penance, that they should each one marche leisurely after the procession, bareheaded & barefooted, with a sacke of hey or strawe on his shoulder, open at the mouth, so as the stuffe might appeare hanging out of the bag to all the beholders.

Nowe I beseeche you, what was it els for this proude Prelate thus to insult ouer simple men, for so small a fault, (or rather for no fault at all) but *Laureolam in Mustaceis querere*, and no better.

Thus muche (at this present) of the Place, for as touching the first matter, concerning Thomas, that shall appeare at large in Canterbury following.

And therefore leauing on our right hand, the stately partes of Wy Edward

Poynings vnperfect buylding at

Ostenhangar, let vs see

what is to be said  
of Hyde.

Ostenhangar.

Hyde

# Hyde, is written in Saxon

141

hyde, that is, the Hauen: and called of

*Leland in Latine, Portus Hithinus,*

in some Recordes, Heithe.



The name of this place imposing (as it should seeme) by y<sup>e</sup> generalitie therof some note of woorthinesse, and the long continued priuileges thereunto belonging (it self being long since one of the five principal Portes) at the first led me (and happely may hereaf-

ter mone others also) to thinke that it had bene of more estimation in tyme past, then by any other thing nowe apparant may well be coniectured: Howbeit, after that I had somewhat diligently searched the Saxon antiquities, from whence (if from any at all) the beginning of the same is to be deriued, & had perused the booke of Domesday, wherein almoste nothing (especialy that might bee profitable) was pretermitted, and yet found litle, or (in manner) nothing, concerning this Towne committed to memorie: I became of this minde, that either y<sup>e</sup> place was at the first of litle price, and for the increase thereof indowed with Priuileges, or (if it had bene at any time estimable) that it continued not long in y<sup>e</sup> plight.

And truly, whosoever shall consider, eyther the vniuersall vicissitude of the Sea in all places, or the particular alteration, and chaunge, that in tymes passed, and now presently it woeketh on the coasts of this Realme, he will easely assent, that Townes bordering vpon the Sea, and vpholded by the commoditie thereof, may in short time decline to great decay, and become (in manner) worthe nothing at all. For, as the water either floweth, or forsaketh the, so must they of necessitie, either flourish, or fall: flowing (as it were) & ebbing with the Sea it selfe.

The necessitie of whiche thing, is

D.iii,

euery

The Cause  
of the decay  
of Hauens  
in Kent.

euery where so ineuitable, that all the Popish ceremonies of espousing the Sea (whiche the Venetians yearely vse on Saint Markes day, by casting a Golden ring into the water) cannot let, but that the Sea continually by litle and litle, withdraweth it selfe from their Cite, and threatneth in time, vtterly to forsake them.

Nowe therefore, as I cannot fully shew, what Hyde hath bene in times passed, & must referre to each mans owne eye to beholde what it presently is: So yet, will I not pretermitt to declare out of other men, such notes as I finde, concerning the same.

From this Towne (saith Henrie Huntingdon) Carle Godwine, and his Sonnes in the time of their exile, fetched away diuers vessels, lying at roade, euen as they had at Rumney also, whereof we shall haue place to speake more hereafter. Before this Towne (in the reigne of King Edward the first) a great flöte of French men shewed themselues vpon the Sea, of whiche one (being furnished with two hundzethe Souldiours) set her men on land in the Hauen, where they had no sōner pitched their foote, but the Townesmen came vpon the to the last man, wherewith the residue were so afraide, that forthwith they hōysed vp saile, and made no further attempt.

Hyde miserably scourged.

This Towne also was grievously afflicted, in the beginning of the Reigne of King Henrie the fourth, in so muche as (besides the furie of the pestilence, whiche raged all ouer) there were, in one day, two hundzeth of the houses consumed by flame, & five of their ships with one hundzeth men, drownded at the Sea: By whiche hurte the inhabitaunts were so wounded, that they began to deuise, howe they might abandon the place, and builde them a Towne else where: Wherevpon they had resolved also, had not the King by his liberal Chartre (which I haue seene vnder his seale) relea



released vnto them, for five turnes next following (onlesse the greater necessitie should in the meane time, compell him to require it) their seruice of five ships, of one hundred men, and of v. garsons, whiche they ought of duetie, and at their owne charge without the helpe of any other member, to finde him, by the space of fiftene dayes together.

Finally, from this Towne to Boloigne (which is taken to be the same, that Caesar calleth Gessoriacum) is the shortest cutte ouer the Sea, betwene England and Fraunce, as some holde opinion: Others thinke that to be the shortest passage, which is from Douer to Calais: But if there be any mā, that preferreth not haste before his good speede, let him (by mine aduise) pꝛoue a third way, I meane from Douer to Withsand: for if Edmund Badhenham, the penner of the Chronicles of Rochester, lye not shamefully, (whiche thing you knowe how farre it is from a wonke) then at suche time as King Henrie the second, and Lewes the French King, were after long warre reconciled to amitie: Lewes came ouer to visite King Henrie, and in his return homeward saluted saint Thomas of Canterbury, made a princely offer at his tūbe, and (because he was very fearefull of the water) asked of saint Thomas, and obtained, that neither he in that passage, nor any other from thenceforth, that crossed the Seas betwē Douer and Withsand, should suffer any manner of losse or shipwacke. But of this Saint (saying your reuerence) we shall haue fitte place

The shortest passage  
betwene  
England &  
Fraunce.

Thomas  
Becket  
graueth a  
petition af-  
ter his  
death.

to speake moze largely hereafter, and therefore

let vs nowe leaue the Sea, and

looke toward Ship-

wey.

S. iiii.

Ship-

*Shipwey, or Shipweyham, in the Re-*  
*cordes: commonly, Shipwey*  
*Crosse.*



**B**etwene Hyde and Westhanger, li-  
 eth Shipwey, the place that was of  
 auncient time honester to the Places  
 and assemblies of the Fiue Ports: al-  
 though at this day, neither by good  
 building extant, it be much glorious,  
 no, by any common meeting, greatly  
 frequented.

I remember, that I haue read in a booke of Priuile-  
 ges of the Fiue Portes, that certeine principall pointes,  
 concerning the Port towne, be determinable at Ship-  
 wey only: And likely it is, that the withholding of the  
 triall of causes from thence to Douer Castle, hath  
 brought decay and obscuritie vpon the place.

Of this place, the whole Last of Shipwey, (containing  
 twelue Hundrethes) at the first toke, and yet continu-  
 eth the name: At this place, Prince Edward, the Sonne  
 to King Henrie the third, exacted of the Barons of the v.  
 Portes their othe of fidelitie to his Father, against the  
 maintainers of the Barons warre: And at this place on-  
 ly our Limenarcha, or Lord Wardein of the Ports, recea-  
 ueth his oathe, at his first entrie into the office.

Lord War-  
 dein of the  
 Portes.

Shipwey,  
 sometime a  
 Hauē  
 towne.

Whether this were at any time a Harbortow for  
 ships, (as the Etymologic of the name giueth likelihoode  
 of coniecture) or no, I dare neither affirme nor denie, ha-  
 uing neither read, nor seen, that may lead me to the one,  
 or the other: only I remember, that Robert Talbot (a  
 man of our time, and which made a Commentarie vpon  
 the Itinerarie of Antoninus Augustus) is of the opinion,  
 that

that is was called Shipwey, because it lay in the way to the Hauen, where the ships were wont to ride: And that hauen taketh he to be the same, whiche of Ptolome is caled *καὶ Λίμνη*, *Nomus Portus*: of Antoninus, *Limanis*, The Hauē of our Chzonickers Limene Mouthe, and interpreted by Leland to betoken, the mouthe of the riuer of Rother, whiche now in our time openeth into the Sea at Rye, but befoze at Winchelsey.

The Hauē  
Limene, &  
the Towne  
Lymne.

This coniecture is grounded, partly (as you see) vpon the Etymologie of the name, partly vpon the consideration of some antiquities that be neare to the place, and partly also vpon the report of the countrie people, who holde fast y<sup>e</sup> same opinion, which they haue by tradition receaued from their Elders.

In dede, the name, bothe in Greeke, and olde English, whiche followethe the Greeke, that is to say, *Limen* and *Limene* Mouthe, doth signifie a Hauen, wherof the Town of Lymne adioyning, and the whole Deanrie, or limit of the Ecclesiastical iurisdiction, in whiche it standeth (so) that also is called Lymne, by likelyhoode tooke the name.

This Hauen (saith he) stode at the firste, vnder a highe Roke in the Parishe of Lymne, vnder the whiche there was situate a strong Castle for the defence of the Port, the ruines of whiche building be yet apparent to the eye.

There is extant also, a faire paved catwey, some myles of length, leading from Canterbury toward the same Port: and they of the Towne enioye the Priuileges of the Five Portes, and doe reserue a bzasen Horne, and a Pace, as ensignes of Castle Garde, and administration of Justice, in olde time exercised there.

Finally they as firme, that (the water forsaking them by litle and litle) decay and solitude came at the length vpon the place.

For, whereas at the first, ships were accustomed to

I,

dis



discharge at Lymne, the Sea afterwarde (either hindered by the sandes, or not helped by the fresh water) shod, tned his fludde, and caused the Merchants to unlade at Westhithe: Neither did it yet ascend so highe any long season, but by continuall decreasings, withdrew it self, & at the length compelled them to lay their wares on land at this Hithe, whiche nowe standeth in dæde, but yet without any great benefit of the Sea, for asmuche as at this day, the water floweth not to the Towne by halfe a myle and moze. These coniectures, & reports, be resonable, but yet, as I am sure that they be utterly at variaunce with that opinion, whiche Leland would plante of the present course of the Riuer of Rother (as wee will shewe in Newendene, when, wee shall come to the place) so am I in doubt also, what meanes may be found, to reconcile them with the relations of Aslerus Meneuensis, Henrie Huntingdon, & our olde Saxon Chronicles, al which seme to affirme, that Apledore stode vpon the water Lymen, whiche if it be so, then I see not (the places considered) howe this Towne of Lymne could euer be situated vpon the same Riuer.

Apledore.  
The Riuer  
Limen, now  
Rother.

Their woozdes in effect, be these. In the yeaere, after Christ, 893. the great armie of the Danes, lefte the East part of Fraunce, and came to Boloigne, & from thence with. 250. vessels sayled into the mouthe of the Riuer Lymen, in Kent, whiche floweth from the great woode that is called Andred: Thence they towed by their boates foure miles into that wood from the mouthe of the Riuer, where they found a Castle halfe built, and a fewe Countrie men in it, all whiche together with the Village, they destroyed, and fortified at a place called Apultree. By which it may in deed at the first face seme, that the Riuer Lymen led from Apledore to the Sea, & came not by Lymne: but yet that I may say somewhat for

foz Talbot, these woordes do not necessarily enforce so muche, foz that they be not, that they towed their ships vp to Apledore, but foure miles to the woode, and builded at Apledore, whiche they might well doe, although they had come in at Hithe. To the whiche sense also the woordes of Asserus Meneuensis (whiche liued in that verie time) do giue somewhat the moze place and libertie, whē he saith. They towed vp their ships, foure miles into the wood, where they thzewe downe a certaine Castle (halfe built, in whiche a fewe Churles of y<sup>e</sup> Countrie were placed) & the Towne also, & they raised an other stronger in a place called Apledore: foz these woordes (an other in a place strōger called Apledore) seem to impoſte, that Apledore was not the Towne foure miles within the Riuer's mounthe, whiche they pulled downe, but some other: Whiche, as foz the distance it might happely be Lymne y<sup>e</sup> we haue in hand: so bicause there is no apparant memoziall of any suche course of the Riuer, I will not affirme it to haue beēne the same, but referre the decision of the whole controuersie, to the learned and inquisitiue reader, that will bestowe his labour to trie, and trace out the very trueth.

T.ii.

Court

Courtopstrete, commonly: but  
truly Court at Strete.



He enemye of mankinde, and Prince of darkenesse, Sathan the Deuill, perceiuing that the glorious and bright shining beames of Gods holye truthe and gladsome Gospell, had pearced the mistie thicke cloudes of ignorance, & shewed (not onele to the people of Germanie, but to the inhabitants of this Islande also) the true way of their deliuerance, from damnable errour, idolatrie, and Popishe superstition: And fearing, that if he did not nowe bestir him busily, he was in perill to lose infinite numbers of his subiects, and consequently, no small parte of that his spirituall kingdome, practized most carefully in all places, with Monkes, Friars, Priestes, Pottes, and the whole rabblement of his Religious armie, for the holding of simple soules in wonted obedience, and the vpholding of his vsurped Empire in the accustomed glory, opinion, and reuerence. And for this purpose (amongst sundry sleights, set to shewe in sundry places, about the latter end and declination of that his reigne) one was wrought by the Holy maide of Kent, in a Chappel at this towne, in deuise as malicious, in dede as mischeuous, and in discouerie as notozius, as any other whatsoeuer. But bycause the midst, and end of this Pageant, is yet fresh in the knowledge of many on liuing, & manifested to al men in booke abroade: And for that the beginning thereof is knowne to verie fewe, and likely in time to be hid from all, if it be not by some way or other continued in mynde: I will labour only to bewray the same, and in suche sorte, as the maintainers thereof them selues haue



haue committed it to wꝛiting.

For not long since, it chaunced me to see a litle Pamphlet, containing foure and twentie leaues, penned I wote not by what doltishe dreamer, printed by Robert Redman, Intituled: A marueilous woorke of late done at Court of Streete in Kent, and published (as it pretendeth) to the deuout people of that time for their spirituall consolation: in whiche I founde the very first beginning, to haue beene as followeth.

About the time of Easter, in the seuentēthe yeare of 1525.  
the Reigne of King Henrie the eight, it happened a certaine maiden named Elizabethe Barton, then seruaunt to one Thomas Kob, of the Parische of Aldington, twelue myles distant from Canterbury, to be touched with a great infirmitie in her body, whiche did ascend at diuers times vp into her throte, and swelled greatly: during the time whereof, she seemed to be in grievous paine, in so muche as a man would haue thought, that she had suffred the panges of deathe it selfe, untill the disease descended, and fell downe into the bodie againe.

The holy  
Maide of  
Kent.

Thus she continued by fittes, the space of seuen monethes, and moze, and at the laste, in the Moneth of November (at whiche time also a yong Childe of her Maisters lay desperatly sicke in a cradle by her) she being bered with the former disease, as ked (with great pangs and groning) whether the Childe were yet departed this life, or no: And when the women that attended vpon them bothe in their sickenesse, answered no, she replied that it should anone: whiche woord was no sooner uttered, but the childe fetched a great sighe, and withall the soule departed out of the body.

This her diuination and sozetelling, was the first matter, that moued her hearers to admiration: But

after this, in sundry of her fits following, althoughe she seemed to the beholders to lye as still as a deade body (not mouing any part at all) as well in the traunces themselves, as after the pangs passed also, she told plainly of diuers things done at the Church, and other places where she was not present, whiche neuerthelesse she seemed (by signes proceeding from her) most liuely to behold (as it were) with her eye: She tolde also, of heauen, hell, and purgatorie, and of the ioyes, and sorowes, that sundry departed soules had, and suffered there: She spake frankly againste the corruption of manners and euill life: She exhorted repaire to the Church, hearing of Masse, confession to Priestes, prayer to our Lady and Saindes, and to be short, made in all pointes, confession and confirmation of the Popish Credo and Catechisme, and that so deuoutly and discretely (in the opiniõ of mine author) that he thought it not possible for her to speake in that manner.

But amongst other things, this one was euer much in her mouthe, that She woulde goe home, and that she had bene at home, whereas (to the vnderstanding of the standers by) she had neuer bene from home, nor from the place where she laye: whereupon being (in a tyme of another traunce) demaunded where That home was, she answered, Where she sawe and hearde the ioyes of heauen, where S. Michael wayed soules, where Sainct Peter carried the keyes, and where she her selfe had the companie of our Lady at Court of Strete, and had hartely besought her to heale her disease, who also had commaunded her, to offer vnto her a Taper in her Chappell there, and to declare boldly to all Christian people, that our Lady of Court of Strete, had receiued her from the verie point of death: and that her pleasure was, that it shoulde be rong for a miracle,

Whiche

Whiche wordes when her Maister heard, he sayde, that there were no Welles at that Chappell, wherevnto the Mayden answered nothing, but the voice that spake in her proceeded, saying, Our blessed Lady wil shew moe miracles there shortly, for if any departe this life soudainly, or by mischance, in deadly sinne, if he be vowed to our Lady heartely, he shal be restored to life againe, to receiue shrift, and housell, and after to depart this worlde with Gods blessing. Besides this, she tolde them what meate the Heremite of that Chappell of our Lady at Court of Strete had to his supper, and many other things concerning him, whereat they maruailed greatly.

And from that time forwarde, she resolved with her selfe, to goe to Court of Strete, and there to pray and offer to our Lady, whiche also she did accordingly: And was there delayde of her cure for a certaine season, but yet (in the meane time) put in assured hope of recouerie. During whiche meane while, the fame of this marueylous Mayden was so spread abroade, that it came to the eares of Warham the Archebishop of Canterbury, who directed thither Doctor Bocking, Master Hadleighe, and Barnes, three Monkes of Christes Church in Canterbury, father Lewes, and his fellowe, two obseruants, his Officiall of Canterbury, and the Parson of Aldington, with commission to examine the matter, and to in-  
fourme him of the truthe.

These men opposed her of the chiefe pointes of the Popishe beliefe, and finding her sounde therein, not only waded no further in the discoverie of the fraud, but gaue it great countenaunce, and ioynd with her in setting forth of the same: So that at her nexte voyage to oure Lady of Court of Strete, she entered the Chappell with *Aue Regina Calorum*, in pricksong, accompanied with these  
Com



Commissioners, many Ladies, Gentlemen, and Gentlewomen of the best degree, and three thousande persons besides, of the common sort of people.

There fell she eftsones into a marueilous passion before the Image of our Lady, muchelike a body diseased of the falling Euill, in the whiche she vttered, sundrye metricall and ryming speeches, tending to the worship of our Lady of Court of Strete (whose Chappell there, she wished to be better mainteined, and to be furnished with a dayly singing Priest) tending also to her owne bestowing in some Religious house, for suche (sayde she) was our Ladies pleasure, and to the aduancement of the credite, of suche feyned miracles, as myne authour reporteth. This done and vnderstode to the Archebishop, she was by him appointed to S. Sepulchres, a house of Monnes in Canterbury, where she laboured sundry times of her disease, and continued her wonted working of wonderous myzacles, resorting oftē (by way of traice onely) to our Lady of Court of Strete, who also ceased not to shewe her selfe mightie in operation there, lighting candels without fire, moystning womens breasts that before were drye and wanted mylke, restoring all sortes of sicke to perfect health, reducing the deade to life againe, and finally doing all good, to al suche as were measured and boyled (as the manner was) vnto her at Court of Strete.

Thus Elizabeth Barton was aduanced from the condition of a base seruaunt, to the estate of a glorious Monne. The Heremite of Court of Strete was enriched by dayly offering, S. Sepulchres got the possession of a Holy Mayden, God was blasphemed, the holy Virgine his mother misshonoured, the silly people were miserably mocked, The Bishops, Priestes, and Monkes, in the meane time with closed eyes wincking, and the Deuill  
and

and his lymmes, with open mouthe laughing at it. And thus the matter stode sundry yeares together, vntill at length, the question was moued about King Henries marriage, at which time this holy Mayden (not conceining her selfe within her former boundes of hypocrisie) stepped into this matter also, and feyned that she vnderstode by reuelation, that if the King proceeded to the diuorice, he shoulde not be King of this Realme one moneth after : Wherevpon, her doings were once againe examined (not by men giuen ouer to beleue illusions, but by suche as had the prudent power of prouing spirites) and in the ende her dissimulation was deciphered, her Popishe comforters were bewrayed, the deceiued people were well satisfied, these dangerous deceiuers were woorthely executed, and the Deuill their Spalster was quite and cleane confounded.

The circumstances of all whiche doing, I doe of purpose omit (knowing that it is in the statute of. 25. yeare of King Henrie the eight, and eche where else, in manner, to be read, and thinking my selfe to haue performed promise, in that I haue disclosed the first attemptes) and will nowe therefore make towarde  
Rumney.

Chap. 12

V.

Bilfing-

## Bylsington.



After the deceasse of King Edward the thirde, and against the day of the Coronation of King Richard the secunde whiche succeeded him, John the King of Castile and Lions, Duke of Lancaster, and Earle bothe of Leycester and Lincolne, clayming in the right of his Earldome of Leycester, to be highe Seneschall (or Steward) at that solemnitie, and thereby to haue the authoritie of hearing and determining of the claimes, of al such as by their tenure pretended to haue any office or fee at the Kings inthronization, amongst other suites receiued a petition, exhibited by Richard then Earle of Arundale and Surrey, in whiche the same Earle claimed the office of chiefe Butler, and recognised him self ready to personne the same. **W**herevpon, sozthwith one Edmund Staplegate, exhibited another petition, and likewise made his claime to this effect. **T**hat whereas he, the sayde Edmund helde of the King in chiefe, the Manor of Bylsington in Kent, by the service to be his Butler at the Coronation, as plainely appeared in the booke of Fees and Serieancies in the Exchequer: And whereas also by reason of that tenure, the late King Edward the thirde had both seised the landes of that petitioner (for so much as he was in his minority, at the time of the death of Edmund Staplegate his father) and had also committed the custodie of his body to one Iefferey Chawfier (to whome he payde. 104. l. for the same) he now proffered to doe that service, and prayed to be admitted to the office thereof, with allowance of the fees that belonged therevnto. **T**hese claimes and the replies also, bothe of the Earle,

and

Butler the  
Coronatio.



and of Staplegate, being hearde and considered, It was then order (partly for the shortnesse of the time, whiche would not permit a full examination of the matter, and partly because that on the Carles side it was proued, that his auncestors had bene in possession of that office, after the alienation of the Manor of Byllington, where as on the other part it appeared not, that the auncestors of Staplegate had euer executed the same) that (for the present Coronation) the Carle shoulde be receiued, and the right of Staplegate, and all others shoulde be neuer thelesse to them saued. Thus muche of the Manor of Byllington, (whiche lyeth here on the right hande) I thought meete to impart with you, to occupy vs withall in our way to Rumney: for as touching the Pryorie that there was, althoughe I suppose it to haue begon by the liberalitie of some of the Carles of Arundale, yet can I assure you of nothing touching it, saue onely of the yearely value, whiche you shall finde in the Particular of this shyre, amongst the rest of the suppressed houses.

V.ii.

Romney

# Rumney, called in Saxon,

Rumen ea; that is to say, *The large  
watric place, or Marishe*: It is  
written in the Records  
corruptly, *Rume-  
nal, and Ro-  
mual.*



**T**he participation of like Privilege, might wel haue moned me to haue placed the Portes together, but the purpose of myne order already taken, calleth me another way, and byndeth me to prosecute them, as they lye in order of my journey.

There be in Kent therfoze, two towne of this name, the Olde and the New Rumney, as touching the latter whereof I minde not to speake, hauing not hitherto founde eyther in Recorde or Hystorie, any thing pertaining therevnto: but that little whiche I haue to say, must be of olde Rumney, whiche was long since a principal Port, and giueth cause of name to the new towne, as it selfe first toke it, of the large leuell, and territozie of Marishe grounde that is adioyning.

This Towne (sayth the Recorde of Domesday) was of the possession of one Robert Rumney, and holden of Odo (then Bishop of Borieaux, Earle of Kent, and brother to King William the Conquerour) in the which the same Robert had thirtene Burgesles, who for their seruice at the Sea, were acquitted of all exactions, and customes of charge, excepte felonie, breache of the peace, and forstalling. It was sometyne a good, sure, and commodious Haven, where many vessels

sels bled to lye at Roade : For Henrie (the Arche-  
deacon of Huntingdon) maketh report, that at suche 1053.  
time as Godwine (Earle of Kent) and his Sonnes were  
exiled the Realme (vpon suche cause of displeasure, as  
hathe alreadie appeared in Douer) they armed vessels  
to the Sea, and sought by disturbing the quiet of the  
people, to compell the King to their reuocation : And  
therfore, (among sundry other harmes that they did on  
the Coast of this Shyre) they entred the hauen at Rum-  
ney, and lead away all suche Shippes, as they found  
in the Harboꝝow.

Thomas Becket (the Archebishop) hauing by fro- 1168.  
ward disobedience and stubborne pertinacitie, prouoked  
King Henrie the second to indignation against him, and Thomas  
Becket.  
fearing to abide the triall of ordinarie Justice at home,  
determined to appeale to the Popes fauour at Rome,  
for whiche purpose he secretly tooke boate at Rumney,  
minding to haue escaped ouer: but he was dzenen backe  
by a contrary wynde, and so compelled to land againste  
his will. The vnderstanding of whiche matter, so ex-  
asperated the King against him, that forthwith he sea-  
sed his goods, and gaue commaundement by his writte  
to the Sheriffes of all coastes, to make arrest of al such,  
as for any cause prouoked to the Pope. He caused al-  
so his subiectes (from twentie yeares of age vpyward)  
thzough out the whole Realme, to renounce by othe, all  
wonted obedience to the See of Rome, and sollicitied ear-  
nestly the Emperour Frederic, and Lewes the frenche  
King, to haue ioyned with him in deposing Pope Alex-  
ander, for that he so commonly receaued runnegates,  
and suche as rebelled against their lawfull Princes.

But suche was eyther the enimitie of Lewes the  
frenche King, against King Henrie the second, or his  
dull sight in discerning the profit of the whole Christian

The Popes  
authoritie  
was aboli-  
shed in Eng-  
land, in the  
time of  
King Hen-  
rie the se-  
cond.



common weale, that he refused to assist the other twain, by meanes whereof, both Frederic the Emperour, was afterward compelled to yelde him to the Pope, & King Henrie the second glad (withall submission) to reconcile himselfe to the Archebishops fauour.

Rumney  
Marsh.

Rumney Marsh is famous throughout the Realme, as wel for the fertilitie & quantitie of the soile & leuell, as also for the auncient and holesome ordinances there vsed, for the preservation and maintenance of y<sup>e</sup> bankes, and walles, against the rage of the Sea.

It containeth (as by due computation it may appeare) 24000. Acres: For the taxation of Rumney Marsh onely (not accompting Walland Marsh, Guilford Marsh, &c. amounteth to 50. pounds, after the rate of one halfe peny the Acre) and it is at this day gouerned by certaine lawes, made by one Henrie Bathe, a Justice and Commissioner for that purpose in the tyme of King Henrie the third.

Of whiche his statutes, experience in tyme hath begotten suche allowance, and liking, that it was afterward not onely ordered, that all the lowe groundes betwene Tanet in Kent, and Pemsey in Suffex, should be guided by the same: But they are also nowe become a paterne, and exemplar to all the like places of the whole Realme, to be gouerned by. The place is not much inhabited, because it is *Hyeme malus, Aestate molestus, Nunquam bonus*, Evil in Winter, grievous in Sommer, and neuer good. As Hesiodus (y<sup>e</sup> olde Poet) sometime saied of the Countrie where his ffather dwelt.

The three  
steppes of  
Kent.

And therefore, very reasonable is their conceite, whiche doe imagine, that Kent hath the three steps, or degrees, of whiche the first (say they) offereth Wealth without healthe, the second giueth bothe Wealth and healthe, and the third asoozeth healthe onely, and no Wealth.

For, if a man, minding to passe through  
Kent

Kent toward London, should arrive, and make his first step on land in Rumney Marsh, he shall rather finde good grasse vnder foote, then wholesome Aire aboue the head: againe, if he step ouer the Wylls, and come into the Weald, he shall haue at once the commodities, bothe *Celi, & Soli*, of the Aire, and the Earth: But if he leaue that, and climbe the next step of hilles, that are betwene him, and London, he shall haue woode, and coyne, for his wealth, and (toward the increase of his health) if he seeke, he shal finde, *Fanem in agro lapidoso*, a good stomake in the stonie field.

No marueile it is therefore, if Rumney Marsh be not thicke peopled, seeing most men be yet still of Porcius Cato his minde, who helde them starke madde, that would dwell in an vnwholsome Aire, were the soyle neuer so good and fertile. And this thing being well vnderstood to the estates of the Realme, they vsed in Parleamentes, to allure men hither, by exemption from payment of Subsidies, and suche like charges, wherewith the inhabitants of other places be burdened.

Neshe

## Neshe, called in Saxon

(Nerre) vvhich signifieth a Nebbe,  
or nose of the land, extended  
into the Sea.



This Cape lyeth in Walland Parthe, Southe from Rumney, and is of the number of those places, that Earle Godwine afflicted in the time of his banishment: from hence he passed toward Londō, and there (by the help of his confederates) shewed suche an assemblie, that the Bishops, and Noble men (for verie feare) became suters to the King for his peace, and in the ende procured it. Besore this Neshe, lyeth a flatte into the Sea, threating great daunger to vnadvised Saylers.

And nowe hauing thus viewed suche places a long the Sea shoare, as auncient Hystories haue put me in remembraunce of: I might readely take occasion, bothe to recommend vnto you, the vigilant studie of our Ancestors, in prouiding for the defence of the Sea Coastes, and withall shewe you a President or two of theirs, conteining the assesse of suche particular Watche and Warde, as they vsed there in the Reigne of King Edward the third, in whose time also it was first ordered, that Beacons in this Countrie should haue their pitche pots, and that they should be no longer made of wood-stakes or piles, as they be yet in Wilshire, and elsewhere. But because those assesses were not permanent, and alwaies alike (as not growing by reason of any tenure) but arbitrable from time to time, at the discretion of suche, as it liked the Prince to set ouer the Countrie in time, of warres, And for that also we at this day  
(God



U

(God be thanked therfore) haue besides the like watche,  
full indenuour of our present gouernours, sundrie stan-  
ding platformes (as you haue sene) erected to the very  
end, & mainteined at the continual charge of the Prince,  
I will not here stand vpon that matter, but forsaking the  
shoze, betake me Northward to passe along the Riuer  
Rother, whiche diuideth this Shyre from Suffex: where  
after that I shall haue shewed you Apledore, Stone,  
& Newenden, I will pearce through the Weald, to  
Medwey, and so labour to perfourme  
the rest of my purpose

The order  
of this de-  
scription,

X.

Aple-

## Apledore, in Saxon Apul-

epes, in Latine, Malus, that is,  
an Apletree.



At the time of King Alfred, that great  
swarme of the Danes whiche annoyed  
this Realme, and found not here wher-  
with to satissie the hungrie gut of their  
rauenous appetite, brake their compa-  
nie into twaine: whereof the one passed  
into Fraunce, vnder the conducte of Hasten, and the o-  
ther remained here vnder the charge of Guthrune.

The Danes  
doe spoile,  
Fraunce, &  
England, at  
one time.

This Hasten with his company, landed in Pontein,  
ranged ouer al Picardie, Normandie, Angeon, Poieton  
and passed ouer Loire, euen to Orleance, killing, bur-  
ning, and spoiling whatsoeuer was in his way, in so  
muche that besides the pitifull butcherie committed vpon  
the people, and the inestimable bootie of their goods  
taken away, he consumed to ashes aboue nine hundzeth  
religious houses, and Monasteries.

This done, he sent away 250. of his ships laden with  
riche spoile, whiche came hither againe, entring into the  
Riuer of Rother, (thē called as Leland wāneth, Lymen,  
at the mouth wherof olde Winchelsey sometime stode)  
and by soudaine surprize tooke a small Castle, that was  
foure or fīue miles within the land, at Apulre (as some  
thinke) whiche bycause it was not of sufficient strength  
for their defence and conuerture, they abated to the  
ground, and raised a newe, either in the same place, or  
els not farre from it.

Sho:tlly after commethe Hasten himselfe also, with  
rightie saile more, and sailing vpon the Riuer of Thamise,  
he fortifieth at Middleton nowe Mylton, ouer against  
the

## Apledore.

171 163

the Ile of Shepey: Which thing when King Alfred  
understoode he, gathered his power with all haste, and  
marchinge into Kent, encamped betwene the two  
hostes of his enemies, and did so beare him selfe, that in  
the end he constrained Hasten to desire peace, & to giue  
his owne othe and two of his Sonnes in hostage, for ob-  
seruation of the same.

But howe soone after, Hasten forgot his distresse,  
and howe little he esteemed either his owne trouth pligh-  
ted, or the lines of his children so pledged, it shall ap-  
peare when we come to fitt place for it: In the meane  
while I let you know, that the booke of Domesday  
speaking of Apuldore, laieth it in the hun-  
dred of Blackburne, and describeth  
it to containe eight Carnes,  
or ploughlandes.

X.ii.

Stone



Stone, in the Ile of Oxney, cal-

led in Saxon (Stana) that is, a stone, or as  
the Northren men yet speake,

A Steane.



In the dayes of King Ethel-  
dred, whē almost al parts  
of the Realme felt the Da-  
nishe furie, this place also  
was by them pitieously  
spoyled and bzent, whiche  
done, they departed to  
Sandwiche, and did there,  
as hath already appea-  
red,

enox

.X

Newen-

# Newendene.

173 165

Newendene, in Saxon, Nipeldene, that is, *The lowe  
or deepe valley*: Leland calleth it *Noniodu-  
num*, whiche worde is framed  
out of the Saxon Nipan-  
dune, & soundeth  
as much as *the  
Newe Hill*.



The situation of Newendene is such,  
as it maye likely enoughe take the  
name, eyther of the deepe and bot-  
tome (as I haue coniectured) or of  
the Hill and highe grounde, as Le-  
land supposed. For it standeth in  
the valley, and yet clymeth the hill:

So that the termination of the name may be Dene, or  
Dune, of the valley, or of the hill indifferently. Howe-  
beit, I would easily yeelde to Leland in this matter (the  
rather, because the common people of that quarter speak  
much of a sayre Towne, that sometime stode vpon the  
hill.) Sauiug that bothe many places there aboutes are  
vpon like reason termed Dener, and that Iohn Bale  
(who had sene an auncient byll of the house it selfe)  
calleth it plainly Newendene.

It is a frontier, and March Towne of this Shyre, The course  
by reason that it lyeth vpon the Ryuer, that diuideth of the Ry-  
Kent and Suffex in sunder, whiche water Leland affir- uer Lymen,  
meth to be the same, that our auncient Chronicles call nowe Ro-  
Lymene, though now of the common sorte, it is kno- ther.  
wen by the name of Rother only: It riseth (sayth he) at  
Argas hil in Suffex, neare to Waterdowne Forrest, and  
falleth to Rotherfield, thence to Hichingham, and so to  
Roberts bridge (corruptly so termed, for Rothersbridge)  
fro whence it descendeth to Bodyam Castell, to Newen-  
dene,

Æ. iij.

1241.

The first  
Carmelites  
in England.

dene, Oxney, and Apultree, and some after openeth into the Sea. The place is not notable for any other thing, then that it harboured the first Carmelite Fryars, that euer were in this Realme. For about the midst of the reigne of King Henric the thirde, that order came ouer the Sea, arrived in this lande, and made their nests at Newendene, whiche was befoze a wooddy, and solitarie place, and therefore (in common opinion) so much the more fit for Religious persons to inhabite.

They of that profession were called Carmelites, of a hill in Syria, named Carmelus, where at the first, a sort of men that liued solitarily, were drawne into companies by one Ioan (the Patriarche of Ierusalem) in the dayes of King Henric the firste: And after that coming into Europe, were by *Honorius Quartus*, the Pope, appointed to a rule and order, by the name of the Brothers of Mary, whiche title liked them selues so well, that they procured the Pope Urbane the sixte, thre yeares pardon, for all suche as would so call them: But certaine merry felowes, (seing their vanitie, and knowing how litle they were of kin to Mary the blessed Virgine) called them the brothers of Mary Aegiptiaca, the harlot, whereat the Pope was so offended, that he plainly pronounced them Heretikes for their labour. I read, that in the reigne of King Richard the seconde, one

William Starnesfeld was Wypp of this house, and that he committed to writing, the originall and beginning of the same, But hitherto (though to no great losse) it hath not chaunced me to see it.

The



**The Weald**, so named of the Sax-  
on worde *weald*, which signifieth *A woodie countrie*. The  
Britons called it *Andred*, of which worde the Sax-  
ons called it *Andneberleag*, in Latine, *Salus An-*  
*dred* the chase of Andred. This latter name  
was imposed for the exceeding great-  
nesse of it: for *Amhsed* in Brit-  
tish, is as much as great,  
or wonderfull.



¶ We then we are come to the Weald  
of Kent, which (after the common opi-  
nion of men of our time) is contained  
within very streight and narrow li-  
mits, notwithstanding that in times  
paste, it was reputed of suche exceeding  
bignesse, that it was thought to extende into Sussex,  
Surrey, and Hamshyre, and of suche notable fame with  
all, that it left the name to that part of the Realme, tho-  
rough which it passed: for it is manifest, by the auncient  
Saxon Chronicles, by Asserus Meneuensis, Henric of  
Huntingdon, and almost all others of latter time, that  
beginning at Winchelsey in Sussex, it reached in length  
a hundzeth and twentie myles towarde the West, and  
stretched thirtie myles in breadth towarde the Northe: Kent, why  
so called.  
And it is (in mine opinion) moste likely, that in respecte  
of this wood, that large portion of this Islande (whiche in  
Cæsars time contained foure severall Kings) was called  
of the Byttish word (Caine) *Cancia* in Latine, and now  
commonly Kent: Of which derivation, one other infallible  
monumēt remaineth, even til this day in Staffordshyre,  
where they yet call their great woodie Forrest, by the  
name of (Kanc) also,

On

On the edge of this wood (in Suffex) there stode some time a Citie, called (after the same) Andredes Chester, whiche Ella (the founder of the Southsaxon Kingdome) after that he had landed with his three sonnes, and chased the Brytons into the wood, rased, and made equall with the ground: And in this wood, Sigbert, a King of Westsex, was done to death by this occasion following.

755.

About the yeare after the Incarnation of Christe, seven hundredeth fiftie five, this Sigbert succeeded Cuthred his cousine in the kingdom of the Westsaxons, and was so puffed up with the pride of his dominion (mightily enlarged by the prosperous successes of his predecessor) that he governed without feare of God, or care of man, making lust his lawe, and mischief his minister: Whereupon one Cumbra, (an Earle and Counsellour) at the lamentable suite of the Commons, moued him to consideration: But Sigbert, disdainig to be directed, commaunded him most dispitefully to be slayne: Hereat the Nobilitie and Commons were so muche offended, that assembling for the purpose, they with one assent deprived him of his crowne and dignitie, and he (fearing worse) fled into the wood, where after a season, a poore Hogheard (sometime seruant to Cumbra) founde him (in a place, which the Saxon Hystories call Prifetsfode) and knowing him to be the same that had slaine his Master, slue him also without all manner of mercy.

The Weald  
was some-  
time a wil-  
dernesse.

The Hystorie of this Hoghearde, presenteth to my minde, an opinion that some men mainteine touching this Weald: whiche is, that it was a great while together in manner nothing else but a Desert, and waste Wildernesse, not planted with Townes, or peopled with men, as the outsidies of the Wyre were, but stoad and stuffed with heardees of Deare, and droues of Hogs onely: whiche conceit, though happely it may seeme to  
many

many but a Paradoxe, yet in mine own fantasie, it wanteth not the force of sounde reason to stande vpon: For, besides that a man shall reade in the Hystories of Canterbury and Rochester, sundry donations, in whiche there is mention onely of Mannage for Hogges in Amdred, and of none other thing: I thinke verely that it cannot be shewed out of auncient Chronicles, that there is remainyng in Weald of Kent, or Suffex, any one monument of great antiquitie. And truly this thing I my selfe haue obserued, in the auncient rentalles and surveys, of the possessions of Christes Church in Canterbury, that in the rehearsall of the olde rentes and seruices, due by the Tenaunts dwelling without the Weald, the entrie is commonly after this forme,

*De redditu.* vij. s. vi. d.

*De viginti ouis.* j. d.

*De gallinis & beneth.* xvi. d.

*Summa* viij. s. xj. d. *quieti redditus.*

This Beneth, is the seruice which the tenant doth, with his Carte & Ploughe.

But when they come to the Tenautes inhabiting within the Wealdy countrey, then the stile and Intituling, is first,

*Redditus de Walda,*

Then after that followeth,  
at Stile in loose. iij. s. iij. d.

*De tenementis Ioñis*

Without shewing for what auncient seruice, for what manner of custome, or for what speciall cause, the same Kent grew due and payable, as in the first stile or entrie is expessed.

Whereupon I gather, that although the proprietie of the Weald, was at the firste belonging to certaine known owners, as wel as the rest of the countrey, yet was it not then allotted into Tenancies, nor Manured like

P.

unto



unto the residue : But that euen as men were contented to inhabite it, and by p̄cemeale to rid it of the wood, and to b̄reak it vp with the ploughe : So this latter rent (differing from the former, bothe in quantitie and qualitie, as being greater than the other, and yealded rather as recompence for fearme, then as a quiterent for any seruice) did long after by litle and litle, take his beginning.

The boundes of the Weald.

And hereout also springeth the diuersitie of opinions, touching the true limits of this Weald : Some men affirming it to beginne at one place, and some at another, whereas (in my fantasie) there can be assigned, none other certaine boundes thereof, then suche as we haue befoze recited out of the auncient Hystories : For euen as in the olde time (being then a mere solitude, and on no part inhabited) it might easily be circumscribed : So since (being continually from time to time made lesse by industrie) it coulde not long haue any standing or permanent termes. And therefore, what so euer difference in common report there be, as touching the same, for as muche as it is nowe (thanked be God) in manner wholly replenished with people, a man maye more reasonably mainteine, that there is no Weald at all, then certainly pronounce, eyther where it beginneth, or maketh an ende.

And yet if question in Lawe shoulde fortune to be moued, concerning the limits of the Weald, (as in dede it maye happen vpon the Statute of Woods, and otherwise) I am of opinion, that the same ought to be decided by the verditte of twelue men, grounded vpon the common reputation of the countrey thereaboutes, and not by any other meanes.

But because I wote not, howe the naturall and aun-

cient

gent inhabitantes of this countrey will beare it,  
that a young Pouesse, and lately adopted  
Denizen, shoulde thus boldely deter-  
mine at their disputations, I will  
here (for a while) leaue the  
Weald, and go forth  
to the residue.

Y.ij. Farley

## Farley, in Saxon, fapplega, and

may be interpreted, the place of  
the Boares, or Bulles.



Fermes  
why so ter-  
med.

Arley, both the East and West, boz-  
dering vpon Medwey, belonged some  
time to the Monkes of Christes  
Churche in Canterbury, to whom it  
yealded in the dayes of King Edward  
the Confessour, twelue hundred  
Celes for a yearely rent. This I  
exemplifie to the ende that it may appeare, that their re-  
seruations (in auncient time) were as well in victuall,  
as in money, and that thereof the landes so leasde, were  
called Fermes, of the Saxon woꝛde, fœpmian; whiche  
is to fæde, or yeald victuall. Whiche Etymologie of  
the woꝛde, although it might suffice to the pꝛoofe of that  
matter, yet to the end, that my coniecture may haue the  
moze foꝛce, I will ad vnto it the authozitie of Geruasius  
Tilberienfis, a learned man, that flourished in the dayes  
of King Henrie the seconde, who in his Dialogue, of the  
obseruations of the Exchequer, hath in effecte as fol-  
loweth. Untill the time (sayth he) of King Henrie the  
first, the Kings vsed not to receiue money of their landes,  
but victuals, for the necessarie pꝛouision of their house.  
And towarde the payment of the Souldiours wages,  
and suche like charges, money was raysed out of the Ci-  
ties and Castles, in whiche husbandrie and tillage was  
not exercised. But at the length, when as the King,  
being in the partes beyonde the Seas, needed ready mo-  
ney, towarde the furniture of his warres, and his sub-  
iectes and farmers complayned, that they were grie-  
uously troubled by cariage of victuals, into sundry parts  
of



the Realme, farre distant from their dwelling houses.,

The King directed comission to certaine discrete persons, whiche hauing regarde of the value of those victuals, should reduce them into reasonable summes of money: The leueying of whiche summes, they appointed, to the Sheriffe, taking order withall, that he should pay, them at the Scale, or Beame, that is to say, that he, should pay six pence ouer & aboue euery pound waight, of money, because they thought, that the money in time, would ware so muche the woorse for the wearing. &c.

Thus farre Geruasius.

I am not ignozant, that Geruasius him selfe in another place of that Booke, deriueth the word (Ferme) from the Latine (Firma) Notwithstanding, for asmuche as I know assuredly, that the terme was vsed here amongst the Saxons, befoze the comming of the Conquerour, and that the Etymon therof, descended from the Saxon language (whereof happely Geruasius being a Nor-

man, was not muche skillfull) I am as bolde

to leaue his opinion for the deriuation,

as I was readie to cleaue to

his reporte for the

Hysto-  
rie.

Y.iii.

Maid-

## Maidstone, contractly for Med-

weys Towne: in Saxon *Medpegetun*, that is, the Towne vpon Medway: it is taken to be that whiche in Antoninus, is called *Duropronis*.

One auncient Saxon boke, which I haue scene writeth it thus, *Marghanstane*,

whiche is as muche to say, as

the mightie, or strong

stone: a name (belike)

giuen for the

Quarrey of

hard stone

there.



The name of this Towne (being framed, as the moste part thinke, out of the name of the water) might easily moue a man to iudge, that it had been long since the Principall towne vpon the Riuer whereon it is situated: The rather for that the Saxons

Townes  
named of  
the Riuers.

(in imposing the names of their chiefe places) vsed to borrowe (for the moste parte) the names of the waters adioyning, as Colchester was so by them called, of the water Colne: Ciceter (or rather Cyrenchester) of the water Cyren, in Latine *Corinthus*: Donchaster of the Riuer of Done: Lyncolne of Lindis: and (to come to our owne Shyre) Eilesford, of Eile, Dartford of Darent, Crayford, of Cray, and suche other.

Howbeit, for asmuche as I finde not this place, as boue once named in any auncient hystorie, and but seldom mentioned in any Records that I haue scene, I dare not pronounce it of any great antiquitie, but speak chiefly

chiefly of that whiche it hath gotten within the com-  
passe of late memorie.

In the time of King Edward the first therefore, this  
Towne was incorporated, and endowed with sundrie  
liberties, all whiche soone after it forfeited by ioyning  
in a Rebellion moued within this Shyre, vnder the  
Reigne of Queene Marie. Neuerthelesse, of  
late time the Quenees Maiestie (that now is) of  
her great clemencie, hath not onely restored to the  
Towne the former incorporation, but endowed it also  
with great Priuilege, appoynting the Maior with the  
authoritie of a Justice of the Peace, exempting the  
Townesmen from forreigne Sessions, and creating the  
Towne it selfe a Buroughe, enabled to haue voice in  
Parliament.

In it were foure principall ornaments of building,  
the College, the Bishops Palaice, the house of the  
Brothers of *Corpus Christi*, and the Bridge: Of whiche The Col-  
lege.  
the first, was built by Boniface (the Archebishop of Can-  
terbury, and Uncle to Eleonor, the wife of King Henrie  
the third) to the honour of Peter, Paule, and Saint Tho-  
mas (the Martyr, as they would haue it) and endowed 1260.  
with great possessions, by the name of an Hospitall, but  
commonly termed the newe woork. This had  
not stode fully a hundreth and fourtie yeares, but that  
William Courtney (a successour in that See, and a No-  
ble man, as the other was) pulled it downe, and erecting  
a newe, after his owne pleasure, gayned thereby the  
name of a founder, and called it, a College of Secular 1395.  
Priestes. The Palaice, that yet standeth, was begonne The Palaice  
by Iohn Vfford, the Archebishop, but for as much as he  
died, before he had brought the woork to y<sup>e</sup> midst, Simon  
Islepe (y<sup>e</sup> next in successio sauving one) took this matter in  
hand, & not onely pulled downe a house of the Bishops  
whiche,



1359.

The Schole

which had long before stode at Wrotham, but also charged his whole Province with a tenth to accomplishe it. I finde in a Recorde, that Thomas Arundell (an other Bishop of the same See) founded a Chaunterie at Maidston, which whether it be the same, that was sometime called the house of the Brothers, and but lately conuer-  
ted by the Townesmen into a free schoole, or no, I will not boldly affirme, but I thinke it rather so, then other wise. Of the Bridge I finde no beginning, but I suspect, that it rose by the Archebishops, whiche were not onely owners of the Palaice hard by, as you see, but Lords and Patroness of the whole Towne, and Church also.

The Riuer  
of Medway  
and wherof  
it tooke the  
name.

And thus muche onely of the Town: as touching the Riuer of Medway, it seemeth to haue beene so named, either because it stood in the midle of the Kentish Kings dome, or els so, that it ranne midde betwene the two Bishopricks: For the word (Midpex) signifieth nothing els, but the Midway as (Middeg) dothe noone, or Midday, onlesse happely some man would rather haue it called (Medpex) bicause of the meddowe that it maketh all along the course of the same.

This Riuer is increased by the foure principall Brookes that runne into it, whereof (to beginne at the West) the first springeth about Crowherst in Surrey (not farre from the head of Darent) it falleth to Etonbridge, and taking in the way Heuer, Penshreste, and Tunbridge, ioyneth with the second at Yealding.

The second ariseth at Blackbrooks in Waterdown forest, not fully a mile from Eredge, the Lord Aburgennies house, and commeth to Beyham, to Lamberhirst streete, and to a place in Scotney ground, called litle Suffex, where it meeteth with a small brooke called Beaul, (that springeth at Tishirst thre miles of, and giueth the  
name

name to Beauldbridge) from whence they ioyne in tourney to Horsmondon and Merden, and there mingling with the third, they runne altogether to Yalding.

The third Brooke taketh beginning aboute Greate Charte, and descendeth to Hedcorne, Stilebridge, and Merden.

The fourth, and last, breaketh out of the ground at Lincham, washeth the Castle of Ledes, a litle from whence it receaueth the small water of Holingburne, & in a companie of the same passeth toward Maidstone: At whiche place (as I thinke) the name of Medwey, first beginneth, the rather, bycause it hath there receaued all his helpes, and crossing the Shyre, as it were in the midst, laboureth from thence in one entier Chanel to finde out the Sea. For otherwise the Riuer it selfe is properly called Egle, or, Eyle, of whiche bothe the Towne of Ailessford, and the Castle of Alington (or rather Eylington) doe take their names. The Riuer  
Aile, or Eile

If I faile in this deriuation, the fault (for the firste part) is his that made the Chart of this Shyre, & then the follie is mine that followe him, but the trueth notwithstanding is easily to be found out, by any man

that wil make inuestigation and examine it,

and our trespass also herein more

veniall, for that we go not  
about to shadowe it.

Z.

Pic-

## Piccendene Hothe, commonly,

but aunciently written Pinenden, of Pi-  
nian, to punishe; and so it soun-  
deth the place of Ex-  
ecution, or  
punish-  
ment,

The name  
of Harlot,  
whereof it  
beganne.



Robert, & Duke of Normandie, had  
issue by a Concubine (whose name,  
as the Annales of S. Augustine  
reporthe, was Harlothe, and after  
whom, as I coniecture, suche incontin-  
ent women haue ever since been  
called Harlots) thre Sonnes, that  
is to say, William that after ward subdued this Realme,  
Robert, that was created Earle of Moretone, and Odo  
that was first consecrated Bishop of Baieux, then Earle  
of Kent, and lastly Lieutenaunt, or Vicegerent of this  
whole Realme, vnder William his Brother.

Odo the  
Earle of  
Kent.

Robert, was reputed a man of small courage, wise,  
dome, and learning, and therefore passed his time inglori-  
ously: But Odo, was found to be of nature so bu-  
sie, greedy, and ambitious, that he moued many Trage-  
dies within this Realme, and was in the end thzowen  
from the Stage, and driuen into Normandie, as hereaf-  
ter in fitte place shal be moze amply declared. In the  
meane while, for this present place, and purpose, I finde  
that during his aboade in Kent, he had so incroched vpon  
the landes and Priuileges of the Archebishopricke of  
Canterbury, and Bishopricke of Rochester, that Lan-  
franc (being promoted to that See of dignitie, and fin-  
ding the want) complained to the King, and obtained,  
that

The aunci-  
ent manner  
of the triall  
of right.



¶ with his good pleasure they might make triall of their right with him. To the which end also, the same King gave commission to Goisfrid (then Bishop of Constance in Normandie) to represent his owne person, for hearing of the controuersie: caused Egelric the Bishop of Chichester (an aged man, singularly commended for skill in the Lawes, and Customes of the Realme) to be brought thether in a Wagon, for his assistance in Counsell, commaunded Haymo (the Sheriffe of Kent) to summon the whole Countie to giue in euidence: and charged Odo his brother to be present, at suche time and place, as should be notified vnto him. Pinnendene Weathe (lying almost in the midst of the Shyre, and therefore very indifferent for the assembly of the whole Countie) was the appointed place, and therevnto not onely the whole number of the moste expert men of this Shyre, but of sundrie other Countries also, came in great frequencie, and spent thre whole dayes in debate of these Bishops controuersies, concluding in the end, that Lanfranc, and the Bishop of Rochester should be restozed to the possession of Detling, Stoce, Preston, Danitune, and sundry other landes, that Odo had withholden: And that neyther the Earle of Kent, nor the King him selfe had right to claime any thing in any the lands of the Archebishop, sauing only these thre customes, whiche concernie the Kings highe waies that leade from one citie to an other: that is to say: That if any of the Archebishops tenants should digge in suche a highe way, or fell a tree, crosse the same, to the hinderaunce of common passage, and be taken with the manner, or conuined thereof by Lawe, hee should make amendes to the King therefor:

And likewise when hee did committe bloudsheade, manslaughter, or any other criminall offence in suche

Z.ij.

were

were depzeended doing the fault, that the amēds ther-  
 of belonged to the King also: but in this latter case, if he  
 were not taken with the manner, but departed without  
 pledge taken of him, that then the trial and the amēds  
 pertained to the Archebishop him self, and that the King  
 had not to medle therewith. On the other side also  
 they agreed, that the Archebishop had many Priuile-  
 ges throughout all the Landes of the King, and of the  
 Carle, as namely, the amerciament of bloudshed from  
 suche time as they ceasse to say Alleluia in the Church  
 seruice, till the Octaues of Easter: the whiche howe long  
 it is, let them see whiche can turne the Pie and the Poz-  
 tuse: and at the least the one half of euerie amerciament,  
 due for the vnlawfull begetting of children, commonly  
 called Cydspite, whiche last thing, I do the rather note,  
 to the end that it may appeare, that in those dayes the  
 Bishops had not wholly gotten into their hands, the cor-  
 rection of adulterie and fornication, whiche of latter  
 times they haue chalenged from the Laitie, with suche  
 pertinacie: and whiche they haue punished (bothe in the  
 Laitie, and clergie) with suche lenitie, that not onely the  
 Princes commoditie is thereby greatly decreased, but  
 also incontinenzie in his subiects intollerably augmen-  
 ted. Neither is it to be proued by this testimonie only,  
 that suche was the order in olde time, but by the booke  
 of Domesday it selfe also, where it is plainly said. *De*  
*adulterio Rex habebit hominem, Archiepiscopus mulie-*  
*rem.* In case of adulterie, the King shall haue the man, &  
 the Archebishop the woman. &c. But to returne to  
 Pinnendene: the commoditie of the situation it selfe, and  
 the example of this notable assemblie, haue been y cause,  
 that not only the Sheriffes vse to holde their Countie  
 Courtes, but also to appoint the meeting for choise of  
 Knights to y Parleament, most comonly at this place.

The Clear-  
 gie haue in  
 croched vp-  
 on the  
 Prince, in  
 the punish-  
 ment of  
 adulterie.

Box.

Boxley, may take the name eyther  
 of the Saxon word (boxeleage) for the store of Box-  
 trees that peradventure sometime grewe there,  
 or of (buceyleag) whiche is as muche to say,  
 as a place lying in *Vmbelico*, in the  
 midst, or Nauell of the Shyre,  
 as in deede this Box-  
 ley dothe.



As touching the foundation of Boxley Abbaies do  
 Abbay, I finde an obscure note in aun- <sup>beget one,</sup>  
 cient Chronicles of S. Wereburges in <sup>another.</sup>  
 Chester, where it is thus reported, 1146.

*Anno, 1146 fundata est Boxleia in Can-*  
*cia, filia Clarenallis propria.* Whiche I

call obscure, because it appeareth not to me by the word  
 (*filia*) whether it be ment, that Boxley were erected by  
 the liberalitie of the Monasterie of Clareuallie, or else  
 instituted onely after the possession, rule, and order of  
 the same. For the like notes I finde in the same Chro-  
 nicle of diuers other houses within England, to whiche  
 the same Monasterie of Clareuale (and others also) were  
 like good mothers: and amongst the rest, that not many  
 yeares after, this Monasterie of Boxley it selfe was de-  
 liuered of suche another spirituall childe, called the Ab-  
 bay of Robertsbridge in Suffex.

1172.

Neuerthelesse, I make coniecture, that the authour  
 ment by (*filia*) nothing else, but that one Abbay eyther  
 furthered by exhortation the building of another, or else  
 furnished it after the building with Monkes of her own  
 brode: And for more likelyhooe that this shoulde be  
 his minde, Heare (I pray you) what he sayth in another  
 place, *Comes Cornubia fundauit Hayles, filiam Belliloci in* 1242.  
*Z. iij.* *Anglia,*



1144.

*Anglia*, whiche his wordes, distinguishe plainly betwene the founder that bare the charge of the building, and the Abbay, after the order and patterne wherof it was instituted. But leauing to comment any longer vpon that doubtfull texte, I will take to witnesse the Chronicles of Rochester, whiche (putting the matter out of doubt) saue plainly, that one William de Ipre (a noble man, and Lieuetenant to King Stephan, in his warres againste Maude the Emperesse) founded the Abbay of Boxley, and planted it with a Couent of white Monkes. And so haue you at once, the name of the Authour, the time of the foundation, and the rule of the profession, at Boxley: wherevnto if you shall adde the yearely value (whiche I reade in the Recorde to haue bene two hundredeth and foure poundes) you haue all that I finde wrytten concerning the same. But yet if I shoulde thus leaue Boxley, the fauourers of false and feyned Religion, woulde laughe in their sleeves, and the followers of Gods trueth might iustly crye out, and blame me.

For, it is yet freshe in mynde to bothe sides, and shall (I doubt not) to the profite of the one, be continued in perpetuall memorie to all posteritie, by what notable imposture, fraud, Juggling, and Legierdmain, the sillie lambes of Gods flocke were (not long since) seduced by the false Romishe Foxes at this Abbay. The manner whereof, I will set downe in suche sorte onely, as the same was sometime by them selues published in printe (as it is sure) for their estimation and credite, and yet remayneth deeply impzinted in the mynds and memories of many on liue, to their everlasting reproche, shame, and confusion.

The vngra-  
tions Rood  
of Grace.

It chaunced (as the tale is) that vpon a time, a cunning Carpenter of our countrey, was taken prisoner,

scner in the warres betwene vs and Fraunce, who (wanting otherwise to satisfie for his raunsome, and hauing good leysure to deuise for his deliuerance) thought it best to attempt some curious enterprise, within the compasse of his owne Art and skill, to make him selfe some money withall : And therefore, getting together fit matter for his purpose, he compacted of wood wyer, paste, and paper, a Roode of suche exquisite arte, and workmanship, that it not onely matched in comelynesse, and due proportion of the partes, the best of the common sorte : but in straunge motion, varietie of gesture, and nimblenesse of ioyntes, passed all other that befoze had bene seene : the same being able to bowe downe, and lift vp it selfe, to shake and stirre the handes and fete, to nod the heade, to rolle the eyes, to wagge the chappes, to bende the browes, and finally, to represent to the eye, bothe the proper motion of eche member of the bodye, and also a liuely, expresse, and significant shewe of a well contented, or displeased mynde, byting the lippe, and gathering a frowning, frowarde, and disdainefull face, when it woulde pretende offence : and shewing a most mylde, amiable, and smyling cheare and countenaunce, when it woulde seme to be well pleased.

So that now it needed not Prometheus fire, to make it a liuely man, but onely the helpe of the couetous Priestes of Bell, or the ayde of some craftie College of Monkes, to deifie and make it passe for a very God.

This done, he made shifte for his libertie, came ouer into the Realme, of purpose to vtter his Merchandize, and layde the Image vpon the backe of a Jade, that he draue befoze him. Nowe when he was come so farre as to Rochester on his waye, he wared  
dye

by reason of trauaile, and called at an alehouse for drinke to refreshe him, suffering his horse neuer thelesse to goe forwarde alone thorow the Citie.

This Jade was no sooner out of sight, but he missed the streight westerne way that his Maister intended to haue gone, and turning Southe, made a great pace toward Boxley, and being driuen (as it were) by some diuine furie, neuer ceased til he came at the Abbay church doore, where he so beate and bounced with his heeles, that diuers of the Monkes hearde the noyse, came to the place to know the cause, and (marueiling at the strangenesse of the thing) called the Abbat and his Couent to beholde it.

These good men seing the horse so earnest, and discerning what he had on his backe, for doubt of deadly impietie opened the doore, whiche they had no sooner done, but the horse rushed in, and ranne (in great haste) to a pillar (which was the verie place where this Image was afterwarde aduanced) and there stopped him self, and stode still. Nowe while the Monkes were busie to take off the loade, in commeth the Carpenter (that by great inquisition had followed) and he chalengeth his owne: The Monkes, lothe to lose so beneficiall a stray, at the first make some denyal, but afterwarde, being assured by all signes that he was the very Proprietarie, they graunt him to take it with him. The carpenter then taketh the horse by the heade, and first assayeth to leade him out of the Church, but he woulde not stirre for him: Then beateth he and striketh him, but the Jade was so restie and fast nayled, that he would not once remoue his fote from the pillar: At the laste he taketh off the Image, thinking to haue carried it out by it self, and then to haue led the horse after, but that also cleaued so fast to the place, that notwithstanding all that euer he  
(and



and the Monkes also, (which at the length were contented for pitie sake to helpe him) coulde doe, it woulde not be moued one inche from it, So that in the ende, partly of wearinesse in wrestling with it, and partly by perswasion of the Monkes, whiche were in loue with the Picture, and made him beleue, that it was by God him selfe destinate to their house, the Carpenter was contented for a peece of money, to go his way and leaue the Roode behinde him. Thus you see the generation of this the great God of Boxley, comparable (I warrant you) to the creation of that olde beastly Idol Priapus, of whiche the Poet sayth.

*Olim truncus eram ficulnus, inutile lignum.*

*Cum faber incertus SCAMNUM, FACERETNE PRIAPVM,*

*MALVIT ESSE DEVM: Deus inde ego sum. &c.*

A Figtree blocke sometime I was,

A log vnmete for vse:

Til Caruer doubting with him selfe,

WERTBEST MAKE PRIAPVS,

OR ELSE A BENCHE? resolude at last

To make a God of me:

Thencefoorth a God I am, of birdes

And theeues most drad, you see.

But what? I shall not neede to report, howe leudely these Monkes, to their owne enriching, and the spoyle of Gods people, abused this wooden God after they had thus gotten him, bycause a great sorte be yet on liue, that sawe the fraude openly detected at Paules Crosse, and others maye reade it disclosed in bookes extant, and commonly abroade. Neyther will I labour to compare it throughtout, with the *Troian Palladium*, whiche was a picture of woode, that coulde shake a speare, and rolle the eyes as liuely as this Roode did: and whiche falling from heauen, chose it self a place in the Temple,

Aa,

as

as wisely as this Carpenters house did : and had otherwise so great convenience and agreement with this our Image, that a man would easily believe the device had bene taken from thence : But I will onely note, for my purpose, and the places sake, that even as they fancied that Troy was upholden by that Image, and that the taking of it away by Diomedes and Vlysses, brought destruction (by sentence of the Oracle) upon their Citie : So the towne of Boxley (whiche stode chiefly by the Abbay) was through the disconerie and defacing of this Idol, and another (wrought by Cranmer and Cromwel) according to the iust iudgement of God, hastened to utter decay and beggerie.

S. Rumwald,  
and his mi-  
sacles.

And now since I amalne into mention of that other Image, whiche was honoured at this place, I will not sticke to bestowe a fewe wordes for the detection thereof also, as well for that it was, as very an illusion as the former, as also for that the use of them was so lincked together, that the one can not thoroughly be understood without the other : for this was the order.

If you minded to haue benefit by the Rode of Grace, you ought firste to be shryuen of one of the Monkes : When by lifting at this other Image (whiche was vntuly of the common sorte called Sainct Grumbald, for Sainct Rumwald) you shoulde make pꝛofe whether you were in cleane life (as they called it) or no : and if you so founde your selfe, then was your waye pꝛepared, and your offering acceptable before the Rode, if not, then it behoued you to be confessed of newe, for it was to be thought, that you had concealed somewhat from your ghostly Dad, and therefore not yet worthy to be admitted *Ad Sacra Eleusina*.

For none  
might enter  
into the  
Temple of  
Ceres in Eleusis, but  
such as were  
innocent.

Nowe that you may knowe, howe this examination was to be made, you must vnderstande, that this Sainct Rum-

Rumiwald was a prettie shorthe picture of a Boy Sainct, standing in the same Church, of it selfe so small, hollow, and light, that a childe of seven yeares of age might easily lift it, and therefore of no moment at all, in the hands of suche persons as had offered frankly : But by means of a pyn of wood, stricken thzough it into a posse (whiche a false knaue standing behinde, coulde put in, and pull out, at his pleasure ) it was to suche as offered faintly, so fast and brumoueable, that no force of hande coulde once stirre it : In so muche, as many times, it moued moze laughter, then deuotion, to beholde a great lubber to lift at that in bayne, whiche a young boy or wenche had easily taken vp before him.

I omit, that chaste Virgines, and honest married matrones, went oftentimes away with blushing faces, leauing (without cause) in the myndes of the lookers on, suspicion of vnclane life, and wanton behauiour : for feare of whiche note and villanie, women (of all other) stretched their purse strings, and sought by liberall offering, to make Sainct Rumiwalds man their good friend and Maister.

But marke here (I beseeche you) their prettie policie in picking playne folkes purses. It was in vaine (as they persnaded) to presume to the Roode without shifte, yea, and money lost there also, if you offer before you were in cleane life. And therefore, the matter was so handled, that without trebble oblation, (that is to say) first to the Confessor, then to Sainct Rumiwald, and lastly to the Gracious Roode, the poore Pilgrimes coulde not assure them selues, of any god gayned by all their labour : No moze then suche as goe to Parisgardein, the Well Hauage, or some other suche common place, to beholde Beare bayting, Enterludes, or fence playe, can account of any pleasant spectacle,

As, if,

vnlesse



vnlesse they first paye one penny at the gate, another at the entrie of the Scaffolde, and the thirde for a quiet standing. I my selfe can not coniecture, what reason shoulde moue them, to make this Sainct Rumwald the Touchstone of cleane life and innocencie, vnlesse it be vpon occasion of a myracle that he did, in making two holy Priestes to lift a greate stone easily, whiche befoze diuers laye persons coulde not stirre, with all their strength and abilitie: Whiche thing (as also his whole life and death) to the ende that the tale shall want no part of due credite, I will shortly recite, as in the woꝝke called *Nona Legenda Anglie*, I finde repoꝛted.

626.

The Nati-  
uitie of S.  
Rumwald.

A Pagan or vnchristened King of Northumberland, had married a Christian woman, daughter to Penda, the King of Midle Englande, who woulde not (by any meanes) be known carnally of her husband, til such time as he had condescended to forsake Idolatrie, and to become a Christian with her. The husband (with much to doe) consented to the condition, and she not long after waxed great with chylde, and as (vpon a time) they were ryding towarde their Father Kyng Penda, she fell into trauayle of chylde byrthe, and was deliuered by the waye (in a faire medowe) at Sutton of a man childe, whiche so sone as he was come out of his mothers belly, cried with a londe voice, thre seuerall times, *Christianus sum, Christianus sum, Christianus sum*. I am a Christian, I am a Christian, I am a Christian. And not ceassing thus, made sworthish plaine profession of his faith, desired to be baptised, chose his Godfathers, named himselfe Rumwald, and with his finger directed the standers by to fetch him a great hollowe stone, that he would haue to be vled for the Fonteyne vpon sondrie of the Kings seruauents, assayed to haue brought the stone, but it was so farre aboue al their

Aren.

strengthes, that they could not once moue it: When the  
 Childe perceaued that, he commaunded the two Priestres  
 (his appointed Godfathers) to goe and bring it, whiche  
 they did so, with moſte eaſily. This done he was  
 Baptiſed, and within three dayes after. (hauiug in the  
 meane while diſcourſed cunningly ſundrie miſeries of  
 Popiſhe religion, and bequeathing his bodie to remaine  
 at Sutton one yeare, at Brackley two, and at Buc-  
 kingham for euer after) his Spirit departed  
 out of his bodie, & was by the hands  
 of the Angels conueied  
 into heauen.

Aa.iii.

Milton

Mylton, in Saxon Midletun, so called  
of the situation, for it lyeth in the midst betweene  
two places, the termination of whose names  
be in tun also, that is to say, Newen-  
tun, and Marstun.



Then at suche time as King Alfred  
divided this Shyre into Lathes and  
hundzethes, the Towne of Midle-  
ton, or Milton (as we now call it, by  
our common manner of contraction)  
was in his owne hands, & therefore  
set forth in our aunient Hystories

by the name and title of, *Regia Villa de Middleton*. In  
whiche respect (of like) he gaue to the hundzeth, & name  
of the same Towne, as of a place more eminent then any  
other within that pzetincte. Kemsley Towne, in the  
Parishe of this Middleton, is the verie place, wherein  
the time and reigne of the same King Alfred, Hasten  
the Dane (that so much annoyed Fraunce) arrived and  
fortified, as we haue at full disclosed in Apledore before.

This Towne, continued of good estimation, untill  
the Reigne of King Edward the Confessor, in whose  
dayes, and during the displeasure betwene him, and  
Carle Godwine, suche as were of the deuotion of the  
Carle at home, burned the Kinges house at Middleton,  
while he and his Sonnes abroad ransacked, herried and  
spoiled the skirts, and out sides, of the whole Shyre be-  
sides, after whiche time, I haue not read, neither is it  
likely, that the place was of any price,  
or estimation.

893.

Kemsley  
Downe.

1052.

Sealing.



**Sedingbourne, in Saxon Sædunþur-**  
 na; that is, the Hamlet along the Bourne, or small  
 Riuer. One interpreteth it, as if it were, Seething-  
 bourne, Riuis Feruens, aut Bulliens, but  
 howe likely let others  
 see.



Do want of pertinent matter, tou-  
 ching either the beginning, in-  
 crease, or present estate of this  
 place, I am driven to furnishe the  
 roome with an impertinent Ser-  
 mon, that a Pytred Father of Ro-  
 chester long since bestowed vpon  
 his auditozie there. 1231.

In the time of King Henrie the  
 third, and after the death of Richard, the Archebishop of  
 Canterbury (surnamed the great) The Monkes of  
 Christes Church were determined to haue chosen for  
 their Archebishop, Ralfe Nouille, the Bishop of Chi-  
 chester, and Chancellour to the King: but Gregorie  
 the Pope, fearing that Ralfe would haue trauailed ear-  
 nestly for release of the tribute, whiche his innocent pre-  
 decessour had gained by King Iohns submission (for the  
 storie sayeth, that Nouille was a good man, and true  
 barded in his Countrie) bare the Monkes in hand,  
 that he was rashe in wooꝝde, and presumptuous in acte,  
 and therefore muche vnwoꝝthie of suche a dignitie:  
 Neuerthelesse, bicause he would not seeme vtterly to  
 infringe the libertie of their election, he gaue them free  
 licence to take any other man besides him. Wherea-  
 vpon, the Monkes agreed, and chose one Iohn, the Abbe  
 of their owne house,

Rowe

The Popish  
manner of  
preaching.

Now, when this man should go to Rome (as the manner was) for to buye his confirmation, Henrie (then Bishop of Rochester) addrested himselfe to accompanie him to his Ship, and when they were come to this Towne, the Bishop of Rochester stept into the Pulpit, like a pretie man, and gaue the Auditozie, a clerklly collation, and Preachment (after many other thinges) he brasse forth into great ioye, (as a man that had bene rapt into the third Heuen) and said. Reioice in the Lord (my brethren all) and knowe ye assuredly, that now of late in one day, there departed out of purgatorie, Richard (sometime) King of England, Stephan Langton, the Archebishop of Canterbury, and a Chaplein of his, to goe to to the diuine Maiestie. And in that day, there issued no moe, but these three, out of the place of paines: and feare not to giue full and assured faith to these my woordes, for this thing hathe beene now the third time reuealed vnto me, and to another man, & that so plainly, as from mine owne minde all suspicion of doubt is farre remoued.

Popish pur-  
gatorie, is  
deriued out  
of Poetrie.

These fewe words, I haue in manner translated out of Thomas Rudburne, and Mathewe of Westminster, to the end that you might see, with what wholesome and comfortable bread, the preaching Prelates of that time fedde their Auditories, and that you might hereby consider, that, *Si lux sit tenebra*, If the Bishops, the great torches of that time, were thus dimme, *Ipsa tenebra quanta?* What light was to be looked for at the litle candels, the soule Priestes, and seely Syr Iohns. Belæue me, if his Fatherhood had not plainly confessed, that he came to the knowledge of this matter by reuelatiō, I would easily haue belæued, that he had bene with Anchises in Hell, as Aeneas sometime was, where he learned, what soules should come next to life, and where he hard  
the

the liueliest description of Poetical, or Popish Purgatorie, (for all is one) that is any where to be found.

Whiche to the end that you may see what agreement there is betwene the olde and the newe Romanes, touching this article of religion, I will shewe it you, in a fewe of Virgils owne verses.

*Quin & supremo cum lumine vita reliquit,  
Non tamen omne malum miseris, nec funditus omnes  
Corporea excedunt pestes, penitusq; necesse est  
Multa diu concreta, modis inolescere miris.  
Ergo exercentur penis, veterumq; malorum  
Supplicia expendunt. Alia penduntur inanes  
Suspensa ad ventos, alijs sub gurgite vasto  
Insectum eluitur scelus, aut exuritur igni:  
Quiq; suos patimur manes. Exinde per amplum  
Mittimur Elysium, & pauci leta arua tenemus:  
Donec longa dies, perfecto temporis orbe,  
Concretam exenit labem, purumq; reliquit  
Etherium sensum, atq; aurai simplicis ignem.*

Whiche Thomas Phaer translated after this manner.

Moreover, when their end of life,  
and light doth them forsake,

Yet can they not their sinnes, nor sorowes all (poore soules) of shake,

Nor all contagions fleshly from them voides, but must of neede

Muchethings congendred long, by wondrous meanes at last out spread:

Therefore they plagued beene, and for their former faultes and sinnes,

Their sundrie paines they bide: some highe in aire doe hang on pinnes,

Bb.

Some



Some fleeting bene in floodes, and deepe  
 in gulfes themselues they tyer,  
 Till sinnes away be washt, or clen-  
 sed cleane with purging fyer.  
 Eche one of vs our pñance here  
 abide, that sent we bee  
 To Paradise at last: wee fewe  
 these fieldes of ioye do see.  
 Till compasse long of time, by per-  
 fect course hathe purged quite,  
 Our former cloddred spots, and pure  
 hathe left our Ghostly Sprite,  
 And senses pure of soule, and sim-  
 ple sparkes of heavenly light.  
 Powe therefore, if this Bishops Boetrie may be al-  
 lowed for diuinitie, me thinketh y with great reason I  
 may intreate, that not onely this woozke of Vir-  
 gils Aeneides, But Homers Iliades, Ouides  
 Fastes, & Lucians Dialogues also, may  
 be made Canonically: for these al  
 excell in suche kinde  
 of fiction.

Tong

# Tong Castle, or rather Thong

Castle, in Saxon þwangceastre, in Brittiſh

Caerkerry, of (Thwang, and Karry)

both whiche woords, ſignifie

a Thong of leather.



The Brittiſh Chronicle, diſcourſing þ  
inuitation, arriuall, & interteinment  
of Hengiſt and Horſa, the Saxon cap  
taines, mentioneth, that among o  
ther deuises (practiſed for their owne  
eſtabliſhment and ſecuritie) they beg  
ged of King Vortiger, ſo muche land  
to fortiſie vpon, as the hyde of a beaſt (cut into thonges)  
might incompaſſe, and that thereof the place ſhould bee  
called Thongraſter, or Thwangraſter: after ſuche a like  
manner, as Dido (long ſince beguiling Hiarbas, the  
King of Lybia) builded the Caſtle Byrſa, containing  
twentie and two furlonges in circuit, of whiche Virgil  
ſpake, ſaying.

*Mercatiq̃ ſolum facti de nomine Byrſam,*

*Taurino poſſunt quantum circundare tergo. &c.*

They bought the ſoile, & Byrſa it cald,

when firſt they did beginne,

As muche as with a Bul hide cut,

they could incloſe within.

But Saxo Grammaticus applieth this Act to the time  
of the Danes, affirming that one Iuarus (a Dane) obtai  
ned by this kinde of policie, at the handes of Etheldred, in the  
the Brother of Alfred to build a fort. And as theſe men North Cou  
agree, not vpon the builder, ſo is there variance betwéen  
trick.  
writtē Roſie, & comon ſpæche, touching þ true place of þ  
building: for it ſhould ſeem by Galfrid, Hector Boetius, &

Wb. ij.

Ric,

Ric Cirencester, y it was at Doncaster in the North Countrie, because they lay it in Lindsey, whiche now is extended no further the to the North part of Lincolne shyre: But common opinion (conceaued vpon report, receaued of y elders by tradition) chalengeeth it to Tong Castle in this Shyre: Wherevnto if a man do adde, that both the first planting, and the chief abiding, of Hengist and Horsa, was in Kent, and adioyne thereto the authoritie of Mathewe of Westminster: which writeth plainly, that Aurelius Ambrose, the captaine of the Britons, prouoked Hengist to battaile at Tong in Kent, he shall haue cause, neither to falsifie the one opinion lightly, nor to faithe the other vnadvisedly.

And as for mine owne opinion of Doncaster, (which is taken to be the same, that Ptolome calleth Camulodunum) I thinke verely, that it was named of the water Done, whereon it standeth and not of Thong, as some saie it. Whiche deriuation, whether it be not lesse violent, (and yet no lesse reasonable,) then the other, I dare refer to any resonable and indifferent Reader. To this place therefore, of right belongeth the storie of King Vortigers Massailing, whiche I haue already exemplified in the generall discourse of the ancient estate of this Countrie, and for that cause do

thinke it moze mete to referre you thither, then here to repeat it.

Ter-



# Tenham, in Saxon Tynham, that

is to say, a Towne (or Hamlet) of ten houses,  
as Eightam, had the name of Eahtham,  
a Hamlet (or Towne) of  
eight dwellings.



**T** Tenham was long since a mansion house, pertaining to the See of Canter- 1205.  
bury, where, in the time of King Iohn, Hubert the Archebishop departed this life, as Mathewe Parise reporteth, who addeth also, that when the King had intelligence of his death, he brast forth into great ioy, and sayde, that he was neuer a King (in dede) before that houre.

It seemeth, that he thought him selfe deliuered of a shrew, but little forsaue he that a shrewder shoulde succede in the rōme, for if he had, he woulde rather haue prayed for the continuance of his life, then ioyed in the vnderstanding of his deathe. For after this Hubert, followed Stephan Langton, who brought vpon King Iohn suche a tempestuous Sea of sorowfull trouble, that it caused him to make shipwacke, bothe of his honour, crowne, and life also: The storie hath appeared at large in Douer before, and therfore needeth not now be repeated.

Bb. iij. Shepey,

Shepey, in Latine, *Insula ouium*,

& *Oninia*, in Saxon, Sceapige, the  
Ile of Sheepe.

660.



Exburga (the wife of Ercombert, a King of Kent) following the ensample of Eanfwide, the daughter of King Ethelbald erected a Monastery of women in the Ile of Shepey, called Minister, whiche (in the late Just, and generall suppression) was founde to be of the yerely value of an hundred and twentie pounds.

832.

851.

855.

This house, and the whole Ile was scourged by the Danes, whome I may well call (as Attila, the leader of the like people, called him self) *Flagellum Dei*, the whip or flails of God, three times within the space of twentie yeares, and a litle more: Firste, by thirtie and five sayle of them, that arrived there and spoyled it: Secondly, and thirply, by the armies of them, that wintered their ships within it: Besides all whiche harmes, the followers of the Earle Godwine and his sonnes (in the time of their proscription) landed at Shepey, and harried it.

1052.

The English shepe  
and wooll.

It shoulde seeme by the dedication of the name, that this Ilande was long since greatly esteemed, eyther for the number of the Sheepe, or for the finenesse of the fleese, although auncient fozeigne writers ascriba not muche to any parte of all Englande, and muche lesse to this place, eyther for the one respect, or for the other: But whether the Sheepe of this Realme were in price befoze the coming of the Saxons, or no, they be nowe (God be thanked therfoze) woorthy of great estimation, bothe for the exceeding finenesse of the fleese (whiche passeth

# Shepey.

122

passeth all other in Europe at this daye, and is to be  
compared with the auncient delicate wooll of Tarentum,  
or the Golden Fleese of Colchos, it selfe) and for  
the abundant store of flockes, so increasing  
euery where, that not only this little

Isle, whiche we haue now

in hande, but the whole

realme also, might

rightly be cal-

led She-

pey.

Quin-



# Quinborowe, called in Latine,

*Regium Burgum, in Saxon, Cynningburi,*

*That is to say, The Kings  
Castle.*

King Hen-  
ry the eight  
fortifieth his  
Realme.



**A**t the West ende of Shepey, lyeth  
Quinborowe Castle, the occasion of  
the first building whereof, was this.  
King Edward the third, determining  
(aboute the thirteenth yeare of his  
reigne) to make demaunde of his  
right to the Crowne of Fraunce, first  
quieted Scotland by force, then entered amitie with his  
neighbourers of Holland, Seland, and Brabant, and last-  
ly (fortifying at this place for defence of the Thamise)  
made expedition by Sea, and lande, againste the  
Frenche King, and moued warre that had long continu-  
aunce, wherein, neuerthelesse after sundry discomfitures  
giuen, before Sluse, Cressley, Calais, and Poitiers, he  
was in the ende, right honourably satisfied.

1366.

1536.

During this building, William of Wickam (surnamed  
Perot) a man not so plentifully endowed with good lear-  
ning, as abundantly stored with Ecclesiasticall living,  
(for he had nine hundred pounds of yearly reuenue,  
fourteene yeares together, and was afterwarde by de-  
grees aduanced to the keeping, firste of the priuie, and  
then of the broad Seale) was Surueyours of the kings  
workes, whiche is the very cause (as I coniecture) that  
some haue ascribed to him the thanke of the building it  
selfe. This platfforme was repayed by King Henrie the  
eight, at suche time as he raised Blockhouses along the  
Sea coastes, for the causes already rehearsed in Dele.

Of Quinborowe, Leland sayth thus,

*Castrum Regius editum recipit  
Burgis fulmina dira, & insultos  
Tutos servat, ab impetu velenni.*

A Castle highe, and thundring shot,

At Quinbroughe is nowe plaste:

Whiche keepeth safe the Ilanders,

From euery spoyle and waste:

The name is fallen (as you see) by depauation of  
speache from Kingesborowe, to Quinborowe: howe  
it, the Etymologic is yet conserued, both in our ancient  
hystories, & in the stile of the Court (or Lawday) there:

I may adde, that in memorie of the first name, the

Ferrie or passage from the Ile to the

maine lande, is yet called The

Kings ferrie also.

Cc. Feuer

Fapperham;



So it is very likely, that the Towne of Feuerham receiued the chiefe nourish- ment of her increase from the Religi- ous house : So there is no doubt, but that the place was somewhat of price long time befoze the building of that

903.

Abbay there. For it is to be seene, that King Ethelstane helde a Parleament, and enacted certeine lawes at Feuerham, about sixe hundred and fortie yeares agoe, at which time (I thinke) it was some Manor house belong- ing to the Prince, the rather, for that afterwarde King William the Conquerour (to whose handes at length it came) amongst other things, gaue the aduowson of the Church, to the Abbay of S. Augustines, and the Manor

1072.

it self to a Normane in recompence of service. But what time king Stephan had in purpose to build the Abbay, he recovered the Manor againe, by exchange made with one William de Ippe (the founder of Boxley) for Lilly- church: and raising there a stately Monasterie (the tem- poralities whereof did amount to a hundred fiftie & five poundes) he stozed it with Cluniack Monkes.

1140.

This house, was firste honoured with the buriall of Adelicia the Quene his wife : When with the Sepul- ture of Eustachius his only sonne: and shortly after him selfe also was there interred by them. I reade none o- ther thing woorthy remembraunce touching this place, Saue that in the reigne of King Iohn, there brake out a

1154.

Monkes do  
contend  
with the  
King force-  
ably.

great controuersie betwene him and the Monkes of S. Augustines, touching the right of the Patronage of the Church of Feuerham. For, notwithstanding that King William the Conquerour, had giuen it to the Ab- bay (as appeareth befoze) yet, there wanted not some

1202.

( of whiche number Hubert the Archebishop was one )  
that



that whispered King Iohn in the eare, that the right of the Abnoulson was deuoluted vnto him: which thing he beleuing, presented a Clarke to the Churche, and besides commaunded by his writ, that his presentee should be admitted. The Abbat on y other side withstode him, & for the more sure enioying of his possession, not onely elected the Kings Clarke, but also sent thither diuers of his Monkes to keepe the Church by strong hand. When the King vnderstode of that, he commaunded the Sheriffe of the Shyre, to leuie the power of his countie, and to restore his presentee: Which commaundement, the officer endeououred to put in execution accordingly. But such was the courage of these holy monkes, that before the Sheriffe could bring it to passe, he was driven to winne the Church by assault, in the which he hurt and wounded diuers of them, and drewe and haled the reste out of the doores, by the haire and hailes.

Nowe it chaunced that (at the same time) Iohn the Cardinall of Saint Stephens, (the Popes Legate into Scotland) passed through this Realme, to whome (as he sojourned at Canterbury) the Monkes made their mone: and he againe, both incouraged them to sende their Pryor to Rome for remedie, & furnished them with his owne Letters, in commendation of their cause: In whiche, amongst other things, he tolde the holy father Innocentius plainly, that if he would suffer Monkes to be thus intreated, the Apostolique authoritie wold sone after be set at nought, not only in England, but in al other countries also. Hereupon the Pope sent out his commission, for the vnderstanding of the matter: but the Monkes (being now better aduised) tooke a shorter way, and sending to the King two hundredeth marks in a purse, and a faire Balfrey for his owne saddle, they bothe obteyned at his handes restitution of their right, & also wan him to be-

Cr.ij.

come

come from thenceforth their good Lord and Patrone.

But here (I pray you) consider with me, whether these men be more likely to haue been brought vp in the Schole of Christe, and Paule his Apostile (who teach, *Ne resistis malo: & vincas bono malo*) Or rather to haue drawne their diuinitie out of Terence Comedie, where the counsell is, *Adumus nos prospicere, quam hunc vlcisci accepta iniuria*, yea, and out of the worst point of all Tullies Philosophie, where he permitteth, *Lacessitis iniuria, inferre vim & iniuriam*, being they be so ready, not of euen ground onely, but before hande, not to answer, but to offer force and violence, euen to kings and Princes themselves. I wis they might haue taken a better lesson out of Terence him selfe, who aduiseeth wise men, *Consilio omnia prius experiri quam armis*, and therefore

I pitie their beating so muche the lesse. But by this and suche other Donkylbe

partes of theirs, you may

see, *Quid atum & ci- bus faciat abennus.*

Gen.

## Genlade, and Gladmouthe.

**B**Eda hath the mention of a water in Kent, running by Reculvers, whiche he calleth Genlade: This name was afterward sounded Yenlade, by the same misrule, that geap is nowe Yard, geoc Yoke, gyls Yeeld, gemen Yemen, and suche other. Henrie of Huntingdon also reporteth, that King Edward (the Sonne of Alfred) builded at Gladmouth: This place I coniecture to haue stode at the mouthe of that Riuer, and thereof to haue bene called first Genlademouthe, and afterward (by contraction, and corruption of speach) Glademouthe. For, to compound the name of a Towne, out of the mouthe of a Riuer adioining, was most familiar with our auncestours: as the name Exmouthe was framed out of the Riuer Ex: Dartmouthe of the water Dert: Stourmouth in this Shyre, of Stowre, and such other like: And no lesse common with vs of later time is it, to corrupt (by contraction) the true names almoste of al places, but especially of so many of the same, as consisted at the first of three sillables, or aboue.

The names of Townes framed out of the mouthes of Riuers. The corruption of our English speech.

For, of Medweys Towne, we make Maidstone, of Eglefford, Ailford, of Ottanford Otford, of Seuenocke Sennock, and so forth infinitely bothe thorough out this Shire, and the whole Realme: and that so rudely (in a great many) that hardly a man may know them to be the same: For Maildolphesbyrig we call Malinesbury, Eouesham Esham, and Hagustaldsham we cut of by the waste, and nickname it, Hexam: Perther hath this our manner of abbreviation, corrupted the names of townes and places only, but infected (as it were) with a certaine contagion, almoste our whole speache & language, calling that which in old time was heofod, now Head, Kyning King, Hlaford Lord, Sunu Sonne, and in



numerable suche other, so that our speech at this day (re)  
the moſte part) conſiſteth of wordes of one ſyllable.

Whiche thing Eraſmus obſeruing, merely in his Eccle-  
ſiaſt. Compareth the Engliſhe tongue to a Dogges bar-  
king, that ſoundeth nothing els, but Waw, waw, waw  
in Monosyllable.

If this rouseing arrow of mine own coniecture, haue  
miſſed the marke of Glademouth wherat I directed my  
ſhotte, yet will I picke at Yenlade with an other out of  
the ſame quiver, and happely go nearer it. Beda ſpea-  
keth there of the Northeaſt mouth of the ſtound Genlade;  
whiche ſpeache of his were yble, if that water had none  
other mouthe but that one. And therefore, hauing read  
that the Northweſt mouth of the ſame water, running  
betwene Shepey & Hoo, is called Yenlade alſo (though  
our Statute bookes, miſplacing ſome letters, name it  
corruptly Yendal) I ſuppoſe that Yenlade is a name  
proper to the whole ſtreame that paſſeth betwene

Shepey and the maine Land, hauing the two  
mouths, Eaſtſwale and Weſtſwale  
well inough knowne.

Reculuers

Reculuers, in Saxon Raculf Myn-  
 rten; deriued (as I gesse) of the Brittish woord,  
*Racor*, that signifieth *forward*, for so it stan-  
 deth, toward the Sea.



The present estate of Reculuers, deser-  
 ueth not many words: As touching the  
 antiquitie therfore, and beginning of  
 the place, I read first that Ethelbert,  
 the first King of Kent, hauing placed  
 Augustine at Canterbury, withdrew  
 him selfe to Reculuer, and there erected a Palaice for  
 him selfe and his successours: Furthermore, that Ecg-  
 brighte, (the seventh King of Kent, in succession after  
 Hengist) gaue to one Basla, the land at Reculuer, to  
 builde him a Mynstre vpon, whiche stode at the one side  
 of the water Wantsume, that ranne two sundrie ways  
 into the Sea, and made Tanet an Iland: And final-  
 ly, that not long after the same time, one Brightwald  
 (being Abbat there) was aduanced to the Archebi-  
 shoppe of Canterbury, & was the first of al the Saxo-  
 nation, that aspired to that dignitie. In which behalf,  
 Reculuers, (how poore and simple soener otherwise) hath  
 (as you see) somewhat whereof to vaunt it selfe: As it  
 may also, of the body of Ethelbert the second (a King of  
 Kent) whiche (as the Annales of Saint Augustines re-  
 port) remaineth likewise interred there.

The River  
 called Wāt-  
 sume.

659.

692.

Thus haue I walked about this whole Diocese: now  
 therfore let me cutte ouer to Watlingstreete, whiche  
 I will vse for my way to Rochester, and tell you of the  
 places that lye on eche side. But first, heare (I pray you)  
 of Stouremouthe, and Wyngnam, which be in my way  
 to Watlingstreete,

The order  
 of this de-  
 scription.

Stouremouthe

## Stouremouthe, in Latine, Ostium

Sturæ, that is to say, the mouth of the Riuer  
Stoure.



King Alfred, having many times (and that with much losse, & moze daunger) encountred his enemies the Danes, & finding that by reason of the sundrie swarmes of them, arriuing in diuers parts of his Realme at once, he was not able to repulse them beeing lan-

ded, he rigged by a royall Flaue, and determined to keepe the highe Seas, hoping thereby either to beate them by on the water, or to burne their vessels if they should fortune to arriue. Sone after this, it fortuneth his Flaue to meete with the Danish fleet at the mouth of the Riuer Stoure, where at the first encounter, the Danes lost sixtene saile of their ships: But, (as many times it falleth out, that securitie soloweth victorie) so y<sup>e</sup> Kings armie kept no watch, by reason whereof the Danes hauing repaired their forces, came freshly vpon the Englishe Mariners at vnwares, and finding them fast asleep, gaue them a great and bloudie ouerthrowe.

The likenesse, or rather, the agreement, of the names, would leade a man to thinke, that the true place of this conflict, should be Stouremouthe in this Shyre, the rather for that it is deriued of y<sup>e</sup> mouth of the riuer Stoure and that by the circumstance of the storie it appeareth, that King Alfred was in Kent when he made determination of this journey.

Howbeit, he that shall aduisedly read the storie, as it is set downe by Asserus, shall confesse it to haue been in



in Eastangle, whiche contained Norfolke and Suffolke.  
 &c. And for the moze certainty, I take it to haue chaun-  
 ced at the same place, whiche we now call Harwiche  
 Hauen. For that Riuer diuideth Essex from Suffolk,  
 and not farre from the head therof in Essex, there stan-  
 deth a Towne yet called Sturmere, whiche (in my fanta-  
 sie) sufficiently mainteineth the knowledge of this mat-  
 ter. Thus muche I thought fitte to say of the name  
 Stowremouth, least otherwise the Reader (whome I  
 would keepe within the limits of Kent) might be shipped  
 in the boate of this errour, and be soudainly caried from  
 me. Againe, it shall not be amisse (for the better vn-  
 derstanding of this selfe same Hystorie, penned by Hen-  
 rie Huntingdon) to note that in this place, he calleth the  
 Danes, not *Paganos*, as in the rest of his book he useth, but  
 by a strange name *Wicingas*, as the Saxon Chronicles,  
 in report of the same matter, do terme the: which word  
 (I thinke) he tooke out of some Saxon Chronicle that he  
 followed, and happely vnderstood not what it signified:  
 For if he had, why should he not rather (since he wrote  
 Latine) haue called them *Piratas*, as the word in deede  
 meaneth, and as Alerus in the rehersall of the same  
 fight, had done before him. It may be, that he was  
 a Norman bozne: but truly I suppose rather, that the  
 Saxon speech was well nighe woꝛne out of vze, in the  
 reigne of King Stephan, (vnder whome he liued) seeing  
 that euen immediatly after the comming in of the Con-  
 querour, it began to decline. For it is plaine, that the  
 Normans at the very first entrie, laboured by al means,  
 to supplant the English, and to plante their owne lan-  
 guage amongst vs: and for that purpose, they both gaue  
 vs the lawes, and all manner of pastimes, in the French  
 tongue, as he that will peruse the Lawes of the Con-  
 querour, and consider the termes of Hawking, Hun-  
 Do. ting.

The decay  
 of the olde  
 Englishe  
 tongue.

ting, Tenise, Dice playe, and other disportes, shall easily perceane: They reiected also, the Saron Characters, & all that their wonted manner of writing, as writeth Ingulphus, the Abbat of Croyland (whiche came ouer with them) and as a man may yet see in the booke of Domesday it self, which (notwithstanding that it was written within a few yeares, after the arriuall of the Conquerour) yet being penned by Normans, it retaineth very few letters of the Saron Alphabet. Thus farre by occasion of the water Stoure in Suffolke: as touching the course of our owne Riuer of the same calling (which bothe giveth the present name to Stourey, & Stouremouth, and the olde name to Canterbury, also) I will referre you wholly to the Map of this Shyre.

**W**ing-



Besides the statelie, and Princelike  
Palaces at Canterbury, Maidstone  
Otford, Knoll, Croyden, and Lamb-  
hythe, which the Archbishops of this  
Shyre kept in their handes, bothe to  
perfourme their set solemnities of  
housekeping, and to sojourne at, with

The Arche  
bishops  
were well  
housed.

their whole traines, when they traueiled toward the  
Court, and Parleament, or remained for busines about  
the same: they had also of auncient time diuers other  
Manor houses of lesse cost and capacitie, planted in di-  
uers partes of this Countrie, in whiche they vled to  
breathe themselves, after their great feasts and affaires  
finished, and to lodge at, when they trauailed the Coun-  
trie to make their visitations. Of this number (a-  
mongst other) were Foorde, Charte, Charing, Charte-  
ham, Tenham, and this our Vingham: at the whiche,  
Baldwyne (the Archebishop in the Reigne of King Hen-  
rie the second) lay, at suche time, as he had contention  
with his conent of Christes Church, for making a Chap-  
pell at Hakington, as in fitte place you shall finde moze  
largely disclosed. In the meane season, I will only tel  
you, that (as the Annales of Saint Augustines re-  
poyte) when two of his Monkes came to this house on  
hoybacke, in great hast to serue the proccesse of that suite  
vpon him, he receiued the Proccesse dutifully, but he cau-  
sed them to dismount, and to walke home on foote faire  
and softly. At this house also, King Edward the  
first rested for a season, with Robert of Winchelsey (then  
newly made Archebishop) whilest he toke order for the  
defence of the Sea Coastes, charging bothe the spiritu-  
altie and commons with horse and armour, according to  
the quantities of their liuelihoodes and possessions.

Prouision  
of armour

D.ij.

And



And here was he aduertised, that one of his familie (called Syr Thomas Turbeuille, whom hee had sent into Gascoine with commission) was fallen into y<sup>e</sup> hands of the French King his enemye, and imprisoned in Paris, and that for his deliuerance he had conspired with the French King, and promised to betraie the King, his maister: where vpon King Edward caused suche diligent watche to be laide for him, that he was taken, and suche speedie and seuerer iustice to be executed vpon him, that he was forthwith condemned, drawen thowowe London, and hanged on liue. Of this man a Poet of that age, alluding to his name, made this verse folowing, and some other.

*Turbat tranquilla clam, Thomas Turbida Villa. &c.*

Our things now in tranquillitie,

Thom. Turbuill troubleth priuile,

The names  
of Lathes,  
and of Wapentakes.

It is no small token of the auncient estimation of this place, that it giuethe the name to the whole hundredeth in whiche it is situate: for that is moste vsuall, bothe in this Shyre, and elsewhere, that the whole territorie, (be it Lathe, Wapentake, or Hundreth) most commonly beareth the name of some one place, moste notable, and excelleng other within the same at the time of the name imposed, although happely at this day, some other place doe muche excēde it.

To make an end, here was sometime a religious College, the gouernour whereof was called a Prouost, whiche I suppose to haue bene founded by some of the Archebi-

shops, and I finde to haue bene valued at fourescore and foure pounds of yearely reuenue.

Wat-

# Watlingstreete in Saxon, *weatling-* 113

ap̄t̄pete, of one Weatle, whome the printed booke of Mat. West. calleth vntuly Wading.



King Molmutius, the Brittainish Solō, & first Law maker, decreed amongst other things: that such as were found praying in the Temple, labouring at the plough, or trauiailing in the highe waies should not be impeached by any officer, but that they should enioy

The Priuileges of high waies.

peaceable fr̄edome and libertie, bothe for their goods & persons: But, forasmuche as he had not (in his life time) described those waies that he would haue thus priuileged, great contention arose after his death, which waies should be taken for highe and royall, and whiche not: and therefore, Belinus, (his Sonne and successor) to cease all controuersie, limited in certaine, foure especiall highe waies: whereof the first was called, Ermingstreete, and lead (after the opinion of some) from Southampton to S. Dauids in Wales, or (as others write) to Carlile in the Northe: the second was named Fosseway, and extended from Cathnes in the North of Scotland to Totnes, a cape of Cornewall: The third Ikeneld (or as others write it) Rekeneld, and reached from East to West (as Huntingdon affirmeth) but as others will, from Timmouth to S. Dauides, whiche is from North-east to Southwest. Watlingstreete, where we nowe are, was the fourth, and it beganne at Douer (after the opinion of Ralfe Higden) passed through the midst of Kent, crossed the Thamise at the West end of London, (howbeit others, to whom I rather incline, thinke that it ranne through London, and there left the name to Watlingstreet there) frō thēce to S. Albons, Dūstable, Stretford, Towcester, Lilburne, & Wrecken, thence ouer

Do. iy.

the

¶ river of Seuerne to Stretton, & so through the midst of Wales to Cardigan, and to the banke of the Irishe Sea. And this is the common and receyued opinion (although in daede there be diuers) touching the firste beginning and description of this way. But Simon the Chaun-ter of Durham, and he that made the continuation to the Hystorie of Aلسerus Meneuensis (both very good au- thours) ascribe bothe the beginning and the name also of this way, to the sonnes of a Saxon King, whome they called Weatle: which their opinion, as I doe not great- ly receiue, because I finde not that name (Weatle) in a- ny Catalogue of the Kings that I haue sene: So will I not rashely reiecte it, for the estimation that I other- wise reiecte of the wryters them selues: But doe leaue the Reader to his free choice, to take or leaue the one, or the other.

And, as there is difference concerning the first begin- ning and name of this way: So al agree not in the trace and true course of the same. For Henrie (the Arche- deacon of Huntingdon) affirmeth, that it stretched from Douer to Chester. And this Simon repoꝛteth, that it extended it selfe from the East Sea, to the West. Whiche third and laste opinion, may well inough stand, eyther with the firste, or the seconde. But now, as touching this priuilege graunted by Molmutius, al- though it continue not altogether in the same plight, yet some shadowe thereof remaineth euen to this daye, as by the lawes of King Edward the Confessour, whiche confirmed the protection of the foure wayes by name, and by the Statute of Marlbridge, whiche forbiddeth distresses to be taken in any the Kings highe wayes, or common stretes, and by the Statute (called *Articuli Cleri*) whiche commaundeth that such as abiured, should not be molested while they be in the highe wayes, may  
euis



evidently appeare. I finde in Hystorie, that this Watlingstreete, hath heretofore, not onely serued for the free passage of the people, but that it hath been (at times also) a marke and bounder betwene some kings, for the limits of their iurisdicions and authoritie: ff or so it was betwene Edmund and Anlaf, Alfred and Guthrum, and others.

But, because these matters reache further then this Shyre extendeth, I will reserue them to sit place, and shew you in the meane while,

what I count note worthy on both

sides of this way, till I come

to the Diocesse of

Rochester.

The order  
of this description.

## Lyming.

## Lyminge.



S. Grego-  
ries in Can-  
terburi first  
builded.

1084.

Reliques.

At the South side of Watlingstreete,  
and vnder the Dolones, Lyminge is  
the first that offereth it selfe: concer-  
ning the which, I haue found a note  
oꝛ twaine, that make moze foꝛ the  
antiquitie, then foꝛ the estimation of  
the place: foꝛ I reade in the Annales  
of S. Augustines of Canterbury, that Eadbald ( the  
sonne of King Ethelbert, the firste Chꝛistened King of  
Kent ) gaue it to Edburge his sister, who foꝛthwith cloc-  
ked together a soꝛte of simple women, whiche vnder her  
wing there, tooke vpon them the Popishe veile of wi-  
dowhood. But that oꝛder in time waxed colde, and  
therefoze Lanfranc the Archebishop, at suche time as he  
builded Saint Gregories in Canterbury (as we haue  
touched in Tanet befoze ) reckoning if no small oznamēt  
of his dotation, to bestowe some renoued Relique, that  
might procure estimation to his woꝛke, translated  
the olde bones of Edburge from Lyminge  
to Saint Gregories, and berefted in  
Papistrie, the olde Maxime of  
Philosophie, *Corruptio v-  
nius, generatio  
alterius.*

Baram-

# Baramdowne, in the Saxon,

Baphamdune; That is to say, *the hill  
where the Bares do abide.*



**A** this place is of it selfe very fit (by reason of the flat leuel and playnesse thereof) to array an hoast of men vpon: So haue we testimonie of thre great armies that haue mustred at it: The one vnder the conduit of Iulius Caesar, who landing at Dele (as we haue before shewed) surueyed his hoast at Baramdowne, and marching from thence against the Britons, so daunted their forces, that he compelled them to become tributarie: No lesse infortunate, but muche moze infamous to this countrie, was the time of the seconde muster, whiche happened in the reigne of King Iohn: who hearing that Philip (the king of Fraunce) had by incitation of the Pope (as hath already appeared in Douer) prepared a great army to inuade him, and that he was ready at Calais to take shipping, determined to incounter him vpon the Sea, and (if that assay succeeded not) then to giue him a battaile on the lande also: For whiche seruice he rigged by his shippes of warre, and sent to the Sea, the Earle of Salisburie, (whome he ordeined Admirall) and calling together fit men from al the parts of the Realme, he found (by view taken at this place) an armie of sixtie thousande men to incounter his enemies, besides a sufficient number of able and armed souldiours, to defende the lande withal: Now, whilest he thus awaited at Baramdowne, to heare further of his aduersaries comming, Pandulph (the Popes Legate) sent vnto him, two knightes of the order of the Temple, by whose mouthe he earnestly desired

King Iohn  
yealdeth to  
the Pope.

Ec.

red



red the King to graunt him audience. The King assented, and the Legate came vnto him, and sayde in summe as follovieth.

Beholde (O Prince) the King of Fraunce is in armes against thee, not as against a priuate enemy to him self alone, but as an open and common aduersarie bothe to the Catholike Church, to the Popes holynesse, to whole Christendome, and to God him self: Neyther commeth he vpon opinion of his owne power and strength, but is armed with great confidence of Gods fauourable ayde, accompanied with the consent of many great Princes, furnished with the presence of suche as thou haste banished out of thy Realme, and assured by the faythful promises of sundry of thyne owne Nobilitie, whiche now are present in person with thee. Consider therefore in what daunger thou standest, and spare not to submit thee, while space is: leasse if thou persist, there be no place left of further fauour. The King hearing this, and being (vpon causes knowne to him selfe) moze distrustfull of Traitors at home, then fearefull of enemies abroade, agreed to serue the time, and taking the Legate to Douer with him, sealed the Golden Bull of submission, whereby Englande was once againe made a tributarie Prouince to the Citie of Rome, and that in so muche the moze vile condition, then it was befoze: as an vsurped Ierarchie, is inferiour to a noble, lawfull and renoumed Monarchie. For it is truely sayd, *Dignitate domini, minus turpis est conditio serui.* Now when the French King on the other side of the Seas, had worde hereof, he retired with his armie in a great choler, partely for that he was thus deluded, but chiefly because he had lost his Paule, whiche the Earle of Salisbury had set on fire in the hauen at Calais. *Simon Mountfort (the Earle of Leicester,) that was elected*

The Barons  
warre.

elected by the Barons of this Realme, general of that armie which they raysed against King Henrie the thirde, arrayed thirde a very great host of men here, at suche time as he feared the arrivall of Eleonar the Quene, who being daughter to the Earle of Prouince, and then lefte in Fraunce behinde the King and the Earle, (whiche also had ben bothe there a litle before, to receiue the Frenche Kings rewarde, touching their controuersie) ceased not by all possible meanes, to sollicite the King of Fraunce, and to incite other her friendes and allies, to ayde King Henrie against the Nobilitie. But whether it were, that presently they could not, for their owne affaires, or that at al they durst not, knowing that their comming was awayted, they serued not her desire: by meanes whereof, the Lordes wared strong, and soone after gaue the King a battayle in Suffex, where in they bothe toke him, and his brother Richard, and his eldest sonne prisoners. But as touching the originall, proceeding, and euent of these warres, I willingly spare to speake muche in this place, knowing that

I shall haue opportunitie often hereafter to discourse them. Nowe therefore, let

vs consider, a few other places,

and then haste vs to

Canterbury.

Ee.ij.

Charte.

## Charteham.



After suche time, as King Iohn had made him selfe the Popes tenant of the Crown and Realme of England, (as euen now I tolde you) the Clergie of this countrie was so oppressed with Romishe exactions, that they were become, not onely vnable, but thereby vntwilling also, to relieue the necessitie of the Prince, with any prest of money, as in times paste they had accustomed to do. Wherat the King on the one side taking offence, pressed them many times very hard, not ceasing till he had wong somewhat from them: And on the other side, appealing to their holy fathers ayde, procured (by their great coste) many sharp prohibitions, and proud menacies against him. So that sundry times in the reigne of King Henric the thirde, this Walle was busily tossed betwene the King & the Pope, the Clergie (in the mean while) looking vpon, but nothing laughing at the game. Amongst other things done for the manifestatio of the Popes rauine, y same King at one time commaunded a generall suruiew to be made of the Popes yerely reuenue within this realme, & found it to surmount the yearely receipt of his owne Eschequer, in very rent, besides innumerable secret gifts and rewardes, wherof no account could be made. Herebpon the Prince, by aduise of his Realme, sent special messingers to the generall counsell, that was then holden at Lions in Fraunce, with commission to sue for redresse: The like complaint also, was at the same time, and for the same cause, exhibited by the King of Fraunce: Neither was the state of the Empire free from the heauy yoke of that Popish oppression:

The Popes  
reuenue in  
England.

1246.



preſidio: for M. Pariſe repoꝛteth that euen the Empe-  
rour him ſelf wrote an earneſt letter to the King & po-  
bilitie of this realme, ſolliciting the to ioyne with him in  
withſtanding the tyranie of the Romiſh See. Howbeit, all  
this could not help, but that the Popes (labouring daily  
more & more with this incurable diſeaſe of Philargyrie)  
continually pilled the Engliſh Clergie, and ſo encountred  
King Henrie, that in the end he was driuen to uſe the  
meane of the Popes authoritie, whenſoever he needed  
aide of his owne ſpiritualtie.

After Henrie, folowed his Sonne Edward the firſt:  
who being more occupied in Partiall affaires then his  
Father was: And thereby more often inforced to  
uſe the helpe of his ſubiectes, for the raiſing of ſome  
neceſſary Paſſes of money, now and then borrowed of  
his Clergie, till at the length, Pope Boniface the eight  
(treading the path of his predeceſſours pride) took upon  
him to make a conſtitution, That if any Clerke gave to  
a lay man, or if any lay perſon ſhould take of a Clerke,  
any ſpiritual goods, he ſhould forthwith ſtand excom-  
municate. By colour of whiche decre, the Clergie of  
England, at ſuche time as the King next deſired their con-  
tribution towards his warres, made anſwere with one  
aſſent, That they would gladly, but they might  
not ſafely without the Popes licence, agree to his deſire.  
Whereat the King wrothe, and calling a Parle-  
ment of his Nobilitie and Commons (from which he ex-  
cluded the Biſhops and Clergie) enacted, that their per-  
ſons ſhould be out of his protection, and their goods ſub-  
iect to conſiſcation, unleſſe they would by ſubmitting  
themſelves redeeme his fauour. It was then a world  
to ſee howe the welthie Biſhops, fatte Abbats, and riche  
Pꝛyoꝛs, in eache quarter beſtirred them, each man con-  
tending with liberall offer to make his raunſome, in ſo  
much as the houſe of Saint Auguſtines in Canterbury  
Ce.iii. (as

1295.

A Parle-  
ment with-  
out the  
Clergie.

1296.

The traitorous behaviour, of Robert of Winchelsey, the Archebishop.

Polidore, was the Popes creature.

(as the Annales of their own Abbay report) gave to the King two hundred and fiftie poundes in money for their peace, hauing lost before (notwithstanding al their haste) two hundred and fiftie quarters of their wheat, whiche the Kings Officers had seized to his vse, & shipped to be sent into Gascoine for the victualing of his men of warre. Onely Robert of Winchelsey (then Archebishop of Canterbury) refused to aide the King, or to reconcile himselfe, in so much as of very stomacke he discharged his familie, and abandoned the Citie, and withdrew himselfe to this Towne: from whence (as mine Autho<sup>r</sup> saith) he roade each Sonday, and Holyday to the Church adioyning, and preached the word of GOD. Polidore, in his own opinion, giueth him an apt Theme writing that he preached vpon this text, *Melius est obedire Deo, quam hominibus*, It is better to obey God, then men whiche, if he will haue to serue the turne, he must construe it thus, It is better to obey the Pope, then the King, and so make the Pope a God, and the King no more then a common man. But Peter the Apostle of God, from whome the Pope would seeme to deriue, and Polidore the Apostle of the Pope (for he first sent him hither, to gather his Peter pence) were not of one minde in this point: For he inioyneth vs plainly. *Subditi estote omni humanae ordinationi propter Dominum, siue Regi, tanquam prae excellenti. &c.* Be ye subiect to all humane ordinance, for the Lordes sake, whether it be to the King as to the moste excellent, &c. making the King the moste excellent vnder God, (who no doubt) if he commaund not against God, it is to be obeyed before the Pope, concerning whome, we haue no commaundement at all in Gods Scripture. Nowbeit, since Polydore and the Bishop serued one common Maister, namely, the man of Rome, it is the lesse meruaile, if he commend his endeavour in this part, and that is of the lesse credit also whiche

which he writeth of him in an other place, where he be-  
stoweth this honourable Elogium vpon him, *Quantum*  
*in eo fuit, de Religione iuxta atq; de Repub. promereri studuit,*  
*a qua nunquam discessit, nunquam oculos deiecit: ita officio*  
*suo atq; omnium commodis sibi seruiendum censuit.* As much  
as in him was, he studied to deserue well, bothe of reli-  
gion, and of the common wealth, from the whiche he  
neuer departed, ne turned away his eyes: so thought he  
it meete to serue his owne dunctie, and the profit of all  
men: As concerning his desert in religion, I will say  
nothing, bycause it may be thought the fault of that age  
& not of the person only: but as touching his behauiour  
toward his Prince and Countrey (wherein also consist-  
teth no small part of religion and feare of God) since our  
lawe alloweth of the trial *De vicinero*, I will bring you  
one of his next neighbours to depose for him, a man that  
liued in the same time with him, I meane the writer of  
the Annales of Saint Augustines, who vpon the yeare  
1305. hath this note following.

*Eodē an. 7. Kal. Maij, cū saepe dictus Archiepiscopus Rober-*  
*tus super multis Articulis enormibus (& praecipue super pro-*  
*ditione, quam cū quibusdam comitibus, & proceribus multis,*  
*pactus erat in dolo, ut Regem a Regni solio deicerent, & filium*  
*eius Eduardum, ipsius in trono subrogarent, & patrem perpetuo*  
*carceri manciparent) a Rege calumniaretur, & inficiari non*  
*posset obiecta: ultra quam credi potest timore percussus, ad Re-*  
*gis pedes pronus cadens in terrā, ut eius mereretur assequi cle-*  
*mentia, sese per singula flens & eiulans, Regis subdidit volun-*  
*tati: Sic igitur humiliatus est ille Deo odibilis & superbus, qui*  
*per totum Anglorū orbem, oris sui flatu, more meretricio, Sa-*  
*cerdotium deturpauit, & Clerum: & in populo tyrannide exer-*  
*cuit inauditam. Et qui Regem, Dominum suum, literatōe*  
*ei scribens, nominare renuit superbiendo, nunc humiliatus, &*  
*Regem, & Dominum suum facit, & nominat, obediens factus,*  
*sedamuitus ei deuotius seruiendo.*

The



The same yeare, the 25. of April, when as the often named Robert the Archebishop, was chalenged by the King for many pointes of great enormitie, and especially for the treason whiche he had imagined with certaine Earles and Noble men, to the end that they should displace the King from the seate of his Kingdome, and place his sonne Edward in his throne, and cast the Father into perpetuall prison: and when he could not deny the things obiected against him, being stricken with an incredible feate, and falling downe prostrate vpon the earth at the Kings feete, that he might deserue to obtaine his fauour, with weeping and wayling he submitted himselfe wholly to the Kings pleasure: & thus was that proude, & most hateful man to God, brought lowe and humbled, the whiche defiled throughout all England, with the breath of his mouthe, like an harlot, the state of the Priesthode and Clergie, and exercised intollerable tyrannie ouer the people: and he, whiche before writing vnto the King, refused in his letters for pride to call him his Lord, now being humbled, both acknowledgethe and calleth him his Lord and King, being made obedient, and to serue him with great deuotion, but yet against his will.

Againe, when as in the same yeare, he was cited to appeare at Rome (vpon complaint that he had wastfully spoyled the goods of his Church) and came to the Court to sue for licence to passe ouer the Seas, the King as sone as he came to his presence, and had moued his suite, caused the presence chamber doze to be set wide open, willed the standers by to giue eare, and spake a loude to the Bishop in this manner, as the same author reporteth,

*Licentiam*

*Licentiam transſretandi, quam a nobis poſtulare veniſti libenter tibi concedimus, reuertendi autem licentiam nullam damus, memores doli, ac proditionis quas in Parlamento Lincolnie cum Baronibus noſtris in Regiam machinatus es Maieſtatem, cuius rei litera ſigno tuo ſigillata teſtis eſt, & teſtimonium perhibet contra te euidenter. Sed propter amorē beati Thomæ Martyris, & Eccleſie cui præes reuerentiam, vindictam huc uſq; diſtulimus, reſeruantes eam Pape, qui noſtras iniurias ulciſcetur, utpote ſperamus. A protectione uero noſtra, te prorsus excludimus, omnem gratiam negantes & miſerecordiam, quia re uera ſemper immiſericors fuiſti: Cumq; Wintonienſis Epiſcopus pro eo intercederet, & Archiepiſcopum Dominum ſuum eſſe diceret, Rex affirmauit, ſe omnium Prælatorum regni, & Regem, & Dominum eſſe principalem.*

Wee willingly graunt you licence to paſſe ouer the Seas, according as you are come to deſire, but to re-tourne again we giue you no licence at al, being mindfull of the deceit and treaſon, whiche you did praſtiſe with our Barons, againſt our Kingly Maieſtie in the Parleament at Lincolne, of the whiche thing your letter ſigned with your owne ſcale is a witnes, and euidently giueth teſtimonie againſt you: Howbeit, for the loue of Saint Thomas the Martyr, and for the reuerence of the Church, ouer the which you are ſet, we haue hither to differred the reuēge, reſeruing it to the Pope, which, as we hope, wil make reuenge of our iniuries. But we vtterly exclude you frō our proteſtiō, denying you all grace & mercy, becauſe in dede you haue alwaies ben an vnmerciful mā: And whē as the Biſhop of Wincheſter made interceſſion for him, & ſaid, that the Archbiſhop was his Lord, the King affirmed, that he himſelf was the King and cheif Lord of al the Prelats of the Realm.

*¶*
*This*

King Ed-  
ward the  
first, clay-  
meth su-  
premacie  
ouer the  
Clergie,

1313.

This I haue exemplified the moze at large, to the  
the end that you may see how great a traitour to his  
Prince, howe vnmercifull a tyrant to the Common  
people, and howe foule a blemishe to the Ecclesiasticall  
order, this Bishop was, quite contrary to that which  
Polydore affirmeth of him: and also that you may vn-  
derstand, what authoritie King Edward the first in  
plaine termes chalenged ouer his Cleargie, not such as  
Anselme offered King William Rufus, when he tooke  
Canterbury of his giste, saying, *Summo pontifici debeo obe-*  
*dientiam, tibi consilium.* I owe my obedience to the highe  
Bishop, and my counsel to you. But suche as a true  
subiect oweth to his Liege King, and lawfull souereigne,  
and suche as differeth no moze from that which we at  
this day attribute to our Prince, then *Principalis Do-*  
*minus*, and *supremus Gubernator* do varie in sunder. And  
yet (beholde the madnes of the time) after the deathe of  
this Bishop, the common people forsothe resorted to  
his tombe, and would needes haue made a  
Saint of him, had not the Sepul-  
chre been defaced and their  
follic staied, by pub-  
lique ordi-  
nance.

Chyl-



# Chilham Castle, in Saxon

Cyleham, that is, the colde dwelling.



At the allotment of Landes, for the defence of Douer Castle (whereof we haue befoze spoken) Chilham fell to Fulbert of Douer, who, in consideration thereof, undertooke to finde at his owne charge, fiftene able Souldiours, whereof thre should warde in the Castle, enery moneth, by the space of 20. weeks in the yeare. I suspect, that it came afterwarde to the possession of the Archebishop: for I remember that I once read, that King Iohn came thither to treate with Stephan Langton the Archebishop, for reconciliati-  
on to be had betweene them.

Ff.ii.

VVye

signifieth, an Egge.



That time king William the Conquerour endowd his Abbay of Battel in Suffex, he gaue ther vnto (amongst other) his Manour of Wye, conteining at that time, seuen hydes, or ploughe landes, and being (befoze that time) of the Demeasnes of the Crowne.

The Chronicles of Battell Abbay affirme, that there were sometimes two and twentie Hundzethes, subiect to the iurisdiction of this Towne: whiche if it be true, then (as farre as I can reach by coniecture) the territorie of Wye was the very same in compasse, that now the Last of Screy, or Sherwinhope describeth, that is to say, the fift part of this whole Shyre, consisting of two and twentie Hundzethes in number. The same King, graunted to his Monks of Battel, wrek of the Sea, falling vpon Dengemarishe a portion of Wye, and willed further by his Chart of donation, that if any fish (called a Craspeis) that is, *Crasse pisse*, a great or royall fishe, as whales, or suche other, (which by the Lawe of prerogative pertained to the King himselfe) should happen to be taken there, that the Monkes should haue it wholly: And if it fortun'd to arriue in any other mans land, (lying betwene Horsmede, and Withburn) that yet the Monkes should enioy the whole tongue, and two third partes of the rest of the body.

Nowe, in the Reigne of King Henrie his Sonne it fortun'd, that a Shippe laden with the Kings owne goods was wrecked within the precinct of this libertie, which his Officers would haue taken, and saued to his vse: but Geffray, (then Abbat of Battell) withstode them, & that so stoutly, that the matter by complaint came to the Kings owne hearing: wto (to make knowne how muche he valued his fathers graunt, yelded the matter wholly, into the Abbats owne courtessie,

The

The olde,  
and newe  
manner of  
wrecke, at  
the Sea.

The same Storie obserueth a thing touching Wreck,  
 (or rather Varch, as the custome of Normandie from  
 whence it came calleth it) not vnworthy & recital, that is,  
 that of auncient time, if a ship were cast on shoare, to ne  
 with tempest, and were not repaired by suche as esca-  
 ped on liue within a certaine time, that then this was  
 taken for Wreck, and so vsed along the coast: But Hen-  
 rie the first (sayth the booke) disliking the iustice of that  
 custome, ordeyned, that if from thenceforth any one thing  
 (being within the vessell) arriued on liue, then the ship  
 and goods should not be seised for wrecke. This decree  
 had force during all his reigne, and ought of congruence  
 to haue endured for euer: Howbeit, after his death, the  
 owners of lande on the Sea shoare, shewing themselves  
 moze carefull of their owne gaine, then pitifull of other  
 mens calamities, returned to the olde manner: Which  
 their vnnmerciful couetise, (as I suppose) prouoked king  
 Edward the first, by the statute, (that we call Westmin-  
 ster the first) to make restitution of King Henries lawe,  
 whiche (euen to this daye) remayneth in force, though  
 not altogether so heauie against poore men (afflicted by  
 misfortune of the Sea) as that former vsage was, yet in  
 dede, neyther so easie as Christian charitie would, nor  
 so indifferent as the lawes of other countries do affoord,  
 And therfore, I will leaue it, as a thing worthy (amongst  
 other) of reformation, when God shall giue time.

There was at this place, a College, valued in the Re- The Col-  
 cordes, at ninetie three pounds of yearely reuenue, lege

In whiche king Edward the seconde (after  
 the buriall of his father, and be-  
 fore his owne Coronation)  
 helde the solemnitie of a  
 whole Christ-

mas,

ff. iij.

Motin-

1308.



Motindene, of Moos and bene that is,  
the proude valley, a name imposed (as I  
thinke) for the fertilitie.



I haue not hitherto, found any thing touching  
the house of Motindene in Hetcorne, save  
onely, that the heade therof was called Mi-  
nister, and that the house it selfe was of the  
yearely value of sixtie poundes: Neyther  
would I haue ascribed it so much as paper, or place here,  
but only that you might vnderstande, with what num-  
ber of buildings, varietie of sectes, and plentie of posses-  
sions, Doperie was in olde time prouided for, and fur-  
nished. No corner (almoste) without some religious  
house, or other: Their suites and orders were hardly to  
be numbred: and as for their landes and reuenues, it  
was a world to beholde them. I finde, that the yerely  
extent of the clere value of the Religious liuings with-  
in this Shyre, amounted to fve thousande poundes,  
Bishopricks, Benefices, Friaries, Chaunteries, and  
Saintes offerings, not accounted, whiche thing also I  
doe the rather note, to the ende that you may see, howe  
iuste cause is giuen vs, bothe to wonder at the hoate  
zeale of our auncestours in their spirituall fornication,  
and to lament the coldenesse of our owne charitie, to-  
wardes the maintenaunce of the true spouse of

The value  
of the Reli-  
gious hou-  
ses in this  
Shyre.

Iesus Christ. For, if euer, nowe moste  
truly, is that beressed, which the

Poet long since sayde,

*Probitas laudatur,*

*& alget.*

Canter-

# Canterbury, is called in Saxon

Сѣтрпabyнѣ, that is to say, The citie (or court) of the men of Kent : whiche also agreeth with the Brittishe worde Caer Kent, signifying the Citie of Kent. It is termed in Latine diuersly, of some *Dornernum*, and *Darnernum*, of others, *Дн-rouernum* : of some *Dorobernia*, and of some *Dorobrinia*. All whiche names, Leland coniectureth to proceede, eyther of the Riuer called Stowr (as we haue shewed) or else of the Brittishe worde Dour, whiche signifieth water, bycause the countrey thereaboutes, is plentuously stored therewith. One other late writer, taketh it to be called *Darnernum*, as if it were, Dour ar guerne, that is, the water neare the Fenne or Marish.



At the ende, that (confusion auoyded) eche thing may appeare in his proper place, it shal not be amisse, to part the treatise of this Citie into twaine, whercof the firste shall containe the beginning, increase, and declination of the Citie it selfe : The seconde shall

set forth, the erection, and ouerthrowe of the Religious houses and buildings within the same. The authour of the Brittishe storie affirmeth, that one Rudhurdibras, The Citie, when it began. (as some copies write it) Lud Rudibras, (a King of the Britons, almost nine hundred yeares before the Incarnation of Christ) builded a Citie, whiche he called Carlem, (as Henrie of Huntingdon, in his recitall of thecient Brittishe Cities, nameth it) Caer Kent, that is to say,

890.

605.

say, the Citie (or rather) the chiefe Citie of Kent. For, in the procelle of the same Hystorie it appeareth in deed, that at suche time as Vortiger, King of the Brittons intertained the Saxon Captaines, Hengist and Horfa, he sojourned at Canterbury, the heade Citie of all that countrie, and that prerogative, it retained in the time of the Saxons them selues also: For by the testimonie of Beda, and Mathewe of Westminster, it was (when Augustine arriued in Kent) *Caput Imperij, Regis Ethelberti*, the chiefe place in all the dominion of King Ethelbert. To this Augustine, the same King gaue (after a manner, as I coniecture) the Lordship, or royaltie of the same citie: For, I reade (as I haue before shewed) that he gaue him his owne Balaise, and builded another for him selfe at Reculuer: and it is to be seene in the ancient Saxon lawes, that of olde time the Archebishops had their Coynage within the Citie.

I finde also in the booke of Domesday, that King Edward the Confessour, had onely one and fiftie Burgesses, whiche yealded him rent within this Citie, and two hundred and twelue other persons owing him suite, and that the Castle of Canterbury, and the residue of the inhabitauntes were subiecte to the Bishop, and the Religious houses. Notwithstanding, the Bishops were neuer absolute owners hereof, till the time of King William Rufus, who (as the Annales of Saint Augustine say) *Dedit ciuitatem Cantuariæ Anselmo ex solidis, quam Lanfrancus tenuerat ex beneficio.*

This Citie (since the vniõ of the Kentishe kingdome to the West Saxon) hath bene chiefly mayntained by two things: Firste, by the residence and hospitalitie of the Archebishop, and Religious persons, and then by the liberalitie and expence of such, as either gauded to S. Thomas for helpe and deuotion, or trauailed towards



towarde the Sea side, for their private affaires and businessse.

Amongst the Bishops, Theodore (a Grecian bozne, and the seventh and last of those that came out of Italy) Lanfranc (the first Norman, aduanced by the Conquerour) and Simon Sudburie (that lined vnder King Edward the thirde) haue bene the most beneficiall vnto it,

Of the whiche, Theodore, by licence of Vitelianus (then Pope) founded within the Citie, a Schole (or Colledge) wherein he placed Professours of all the liberall Sciences, which also was the very paterne to the schole that Sigbert the King of Eastangle afterwarde builded: but whether that were at Cambridge, or at some other place besides within his kingdome, I leaue to Doctour Caius of Cambridge, and Maister Key of Oxforde to be disputed, and to indifferent Readers to be adiudged.

The olde  
Schole at  
Canterbury

The Reuerend father, Mathew, nowe Archebishop of Canterbury (whose care for conseruation of learned Monuments can neuer be sufficiently commended) shewed me not long since, the Psalter of Dauid, and sundry Homelies in Greeke, Homer also, and some other Greeke authours, beautifullly witten in thicke paper, with the name of this Theodore prefixed in the fronte, to whose Librarie, he reasonably thought (being thereto led by the we of great antiquitie) that they sometime belonged.

The other two, Lanfranc, and Simon of Sudbury, did cost vpon the gates and walles, bringing thereby bothe strength and beautie to the Citie.

Suche was then the firste beginning, and increase of Canterbury: Let vs nowe therefore see also, what harmes it hath now sustained, and to what decay it is falne. Besides sundry particular harmes, done to diuers of the Religious places, the towne it selfe hath often received detriment by casualtie of fyre. For the author  
of

754.

of the additions to the Chronicle of Asserus Meneuensis affirmeth, that about the yeare after Chyist seven hundredeth fiftie and foure, it was soze wasted with fire. Againe, in the yeare, nine hundredeth and eightene, Alflæda the mightie Lady of Mercia, besieging and burning the citie it self, spoyled, kylled, & expulsed the Danes, that the possessed it: In reuenge wherof, they afterward, about the end of the reigne of King Ethelred, did not only besiege, take, and burne this citie, but also put to moste barbarous and cruell death, Alphegus the Archebishop, (for that he refused to charge his farmours and the citizens towardes his raunsome aboue their abilitie) and they slue of the Monkes, Townesmen, and other common people, the whole nynes thzoughout the multitude, reseruing on liue the tenth man onely: So that they left of all the Monkes but foure, and of the Lay people foure thousande and eight hundredeth: Where (by the waye) it is to be noted, that this citie, and the countrie thereabouts (the people whereof, be like, fled thether for succour) was at that time very populous, hauing to lose fortie thze thousande and two hundredeth persons: in whiche behalfe, there want not some (I wote well) whiche doe affirme, that it had then moze stoze of buildings, then London it selfe:

1009.

And truely it is well knowne, that they were very riche at Canterbury also, for not long befoze (by the aduise of Siricius, their Archebishop) they bought their peace at the handes of the Danes, with thirtie thousande poundes of ready money. But let me pzoceede:

1161.

fourthly, in the dayes of King Henric the seconde, euen freight after the election of Thomas Becket the Archehop, this citie of Canterbury was wholly consumed with fire: And nowe lately and lastly, in the reigne of King Henric the eight, it was in some partes blasted with

with flame, wherein (amongst other things) diuers good booke, whiche a Monk of S. Augustines had brought from beyonde the Seas, were brought to ashes. I had almoste forgotten a storie in Beda, where he maketh, *Mellitum mendacium*, (mention of Mellitus, I shuld haue sayde) and reporteth, that when as (vpon a time) a great parte of this citie was touched with fire, and that the flame hasted towarde the house of this Mellitus (then Archebishop there) he commaunded, that they shoulde beare him against it, euen into the greatest furie thereof. And that whereas befoze it coulde not be quenched by any water, (though neuer so plentifully poured vpon it) forthwith at his presence the winde turned, and at the vehemencie of his prayer, the fyre not only ceased to goe any further, but also immediatly went out, and was extinguished. I wote wel, this wyter is called, *Venerabilis*: but when I reade this, and a number of suche, which make the one halfe of his worke, I say with my selfe, as sometime did the Poet,

*Quodcumq; ostendis mihi sic, incredulus odi:*

What euer thing thou shewest me so, I hate it as a lye.

To procede therefore in my former course, and to tell the trueth, little had all these casualties of fire and flame bene to the decay of this towne, had not the dissolution and finall ouerthrowe of the Religious houses also come vpon it. For, where wealth is at commaundement, howe easly are buildings repayzed: and where opinion of great holynesse is, howe sone are cities and townes aduanced to great estimation and riches: And therfore, no maruaile, if after wealth withdrawn, and opinion of holynesse remoued, the places tumbled headlong to ruine & decay: In whiche part, as I can not on the one side, but in respect of y<sup>e</sup> places the selues, pitie & lament this general desolatio, not only in this Shyre,

The decay of Canterbury, and other places.

Eg. ij.

but



but in all other places of the Realme : So on the other side, considering the maine Seas of sinne and iniquitie, wherein the worlde (at those dayes) was almost whole drenched, I must needs take cause, highly to prayse God, that hath thus mercifully in our age deliuered vs, disclosed Satan, vnmasked these Idoles, dissolved the Synagoges, and rased to the ground all Monumentes of building, erected to superstition and vngodlynesse : And therefore let every godly man ceasse with me from henceforth to marvail, why Canterbury, Walsingham, and sundry suche like, are now in these our dayes become in manner waste, since God in times paste was in them blasphemed most : And like the souldiours of Satan, and superstitious Pawmetrie, howle, and crye out with the heathen Poet.

*Excessere omnes, aditis, arisq; relictis,*

*Dij, quibus imperium hoc steterat. &c.*

The Gods eche one, by whose good ayde

This Empire stode vpright

Are flowne : their entries and their altars eke abandond quight.

For, seeing God in all ages hath not spared to extend his vengeaunce, not only vpon the persons, but vpon the places also, where his name was dishonoured, striking the same with solitude and exterminion, as we reade of Sodome, Ierusalem, and others : Howe then shoulde he forbear these harborowes of the Deuill, and the Pope, whiche in horrible crimes contended with Sodome, in vnbelief matched Ierusalem, and in folly of superstition, exceeded all Gentilitie.

By the iust iudgement of God therfore, Canterbury came soudenly from great wealth, multitude of inhabitants, and beautiful buildings, to extreme pouertie, nakednes, and decay: hauing at this day, Parishes more  
in

In number, then well filled, & yet in al not aboue twelue, in whiche plight, for pitie I will leaue it, and (referring you to the statutes, 32. and 33. of Henric the eight, provided for the reedifying of decayed houses, as wel in this Citie, as also in Rochester, Feversham, & the Five ports) I will tourne me to the Wyssdome of the religious buyldings.

There was in Canterbury, within the time of late memorie (besides others) two houses of great estimation and lyuelyhode, the one being called Christes church, and the other Saint Augustines, the Monkes of the whiche places, were as farre remoued from all mutual loue and societie, as the houses themselves were nere linked together, either in regarde of the time of their foundation, the order of their profession, or the place of their situation: And therfore in this part it might wel be verified of them, which was wont to be commonly said,

Continuall  
contention,  
betweene  
the two  
great hou-  
ses in Can-  
terbury.

*Vnicum Arbutum, non alit duos Erythacos.*

For in deede, one whole Citie, nay rather one whole Shyre and Countrey, could hardly suffice the pride and ambitious auarice of such two Religious Synagogues, The which as in all places, they agreed to enrich themselves by the spoyle of the Laitie: So in no place they agreed one with another: But (eche seeking euerie where, and by all wayes, to aduance themselves) they moued continuall, (and that moste fierce and deadly) warre, for landes, priuileges, reliques, and suche like vaine wooldly preeminences: In so muche (as he that will obserue it, shall finde) that vniuersally the Chronicles of their owne houses, conteine (for the moste parte) nothing else, but suing for exemptions, procuring of reliques, struggling for offices, wangling for consecrations & pleading for landes and possessions: For puse wherof,

Eg. iij.

3

I might iustly alledge innumerable brawles, stirred betwene y Religious houses of this Citie, wassling, sometime, with the Kings, sometime with the Archbishops, & oftentimes y one with the other, al which be at large set forth by Thomas Spot the Chyonicer of S. Augustins: But, for asmuch as I my self delight litle in that kind of reherſal, & do think that other men (for the more part of y wiser sort) be sufficiently perswaded of these their follies, I wil lightly passe the ouer, & laboꝝ more largely in some other thing. And bycause that the Monasterie, oꝝ Priore of Christes Church, was of the more fame, I will first begin with it.

Christes  
Churche in  
Canterbury

After that Augnstine, the Monke, whiche was sent from Rome, had founde suche fauour in the sight of King Ethelbert, that he might freely pꝛeache the Gospell in his Countrie, he chose for assembly and pꝛayer, an olde Churche in the East part of this Citie, whiche was long time befoꝛe builded by the Romanes, and he made therof (by licence of the King) a Churche for himselfe and his successours, dedicating the same to the name of our Saviour Christ, whereof it was called after ward, Christes Churche. After his death, Laurence his successor, brought Monkes into the house, the head whereof was called a Pryor, whiche word (howsoever it soundethe) was in dede but the name of a second officer, bicause the Bishop himselfe was accompted the very Abbat.

For in olde time, the Bishops were for the moste part chosen out of suche Monasteries, and therefore moste commonly had their Palaces adioyning, and gouerned as Abbats there: by meanes whereof it came to passe, that suche Abbies were not only muche amplified in wealth and possessions, but also by fauour of the Bishoppes, their good Abbates, ouerlooked all their neere neighbours, as hereafter in further course shall better ap.



appeare.

I finde not, that any great cosse was done vpon this Church, till Lanfrances dayes, who not only builded it almoste wholly of newe, and placed Benedicte Monkes therein, the number of whiche hee aduanced from thirtie, to one hundzeth and fourtie, but also erected certaine Hospitals, whiche hee endowd with one hundzeth and fourtie poundes by yere, and repaired the walles of the Citie it selfe: And here by the way, it is to be noted out of Mathewe Westminster, that there were Monkes in this house, euer since the time of Laurence the second Archebishop, although some reporte, that Elfricus, was the first that expelled the Seculer Priestes, and brought the Monkes in place. 1099.

Not long after Lanfrances time, succeeded William Corboile, during whose gouernment, this lately aduanced building was blasted with flame, but he soone after reedified it of his owne purse, and dedicated it with great pompe and solemnitie, in the presence of the King and his Nobles. 1130.  
After him followed Theobaldus (whome Pope Innocent the second, honoured with the title of *Legatus natus*: and then commeth Thomas Becket, the fift in order after Lanfranc, by whose life, death, and burial, the estimation of this Church was aduanced beyond all reason, measure and wonder. For, notwithstanding that it had beene before y<sup>e</sup> time honoured with the arme of S. Bartholmew, (a Relique that King Canutus gaue) with the presce of Augustine y<sup>e</sup> brought in Religion, with the buriall of eight Kentishe Kings, that succeeded Wightred, and of a great number of Archebishops after the time of Cuthbert: Likewise after ward with the famous assēbly at the homage done by the Scottishe King William; to King Henric the second, and at the Cozonation of King Iohn; with y<sup>e</sup> several Marriages

Thomas Becket, the Archbishop & his hystoric.

725.

- Mariages also of King Henrie the third, and King Edward the first: and finally with the interrements of that Noble Edward (called commonly the Blacke Prince) & of King Henrie the fourth: yet the death of this one man not martyred (as they feigne, for the cause only, and not the death, maketh a Martyr) but murdered in his Church, brought thereunto more accesse of estimation and reuerence, then all that euer was done befoze, or since. For after his death, by reason that the Pope had canonized his soule in Heauen, and that Stephan Langton had made a Golden Shrine for his body on earth, and commaunded the Annuall day of his departure to bee kept sollemne, not only the Lay & Common sort of people, but Bishops, Noble men, and Princes, as well of this Realme, as of forreigne partes, resorted on Pilgrimage to his tumb, & flocked to his Jubile for remission: In so much, that euery man offering according to his abilitie, and thronging to see, handle, and kisse, even the vilest partes of his Reliques, the Church became so riche in Jewels and ornaments, that it might compare with Midas, or Cræsus, and so famous and renowned (euery pillar resounding Saint Thomas, his miracles, prayers and pardons) that now the name of Christ was cleane forgotten, and the place was commonly called, Saint Thomas Church of Canterbury.
- I passe ouer the stately buildings, and monuments, (I meane Churches, Chapels, and Oratories) raised to his name: the lewde bookes of his lyfe, and iestes, written by foure sundrie persons to his praise: The blasphemous Hymnes, and collectes, deuised by churchmen for his seruice: and sundrie suche other thinges, whiche as they were at the first inuented to strike into the heades of all hearers and beholders, more then wonderfull opinion of deuotion and holynes: So now the trueth being

fried out, and the matter well and indifferently weighed) they ought to worke with all men, an vtter detestation, both of his, and all their, hypocrisie and wickednesse.

For, as touching himself (to omitte that which truly might be spoken in dispraise of the former part of his lyfe, and to beginne with the very matter it selfe, wherupon his death ensued) it is euident, bothe by the testimonie of Mathewe Paris (a very good Chronicker, that liued vnder King Henric the third) and by the foure *Pseudo Euangelistes* themselues that wrote his Testes, that the chiefe cause of the Kings displeasure towarde him grew vpon occasion, that he opposed himself against his Prince, Gods lawfull and Supream minister on earth, in maintenance of a most vile and wicked murder. The matter stode thus. Within a few of the first yeares of King Henric the seconds Reigne, the Clergie of the Realme had committed aboue a hundred seuerall murders vpon his subiectes, as it was inforced him: for remedie of whiche outrage, the King (by assent of his Nobilitie and Bishops, of whiche number Thomas Becket himself was one) tooke order at Clarendowne, that if any Clerke from thenceforth committed felonie, or treason, he should first be degraded, and afterward deliuered to the Lay power, there to receaue as to his offence belonged.

Not long after, it chaunced one Philip Broic (a Chanon of Bedford) to be apprehended for murder, and to be brought befoze the tempozal iustice, where he not onely shewed no remorse of his wicked fact, but also (in hope of Ecclesiasticall exemption) gaue very euill language to the Judge: the Judge complained therof to the King, & the Chanon belike made meanes to the Archebishop.

Ph. s.

For

1146.



For the King no sooner endeoured to put his Lawe in execution, but the Archebishop, (bothe forgetfull of his due tie to God, and his Prince, and vnmindfull of his owne oth) set him selfe against it, affirming plainly, that he neither could, ne would suffer it.

Whereupon the Prince waxed wrothe, and by litle and litle his indignation so kindled, (by matter that the obstinacie of the Bishop daily ministred) that in the end it was to hate for Becket to abide it: Then speedeth he himselfe to Rome, and poureth into the Holy Fathers bosome, complaint of moste grieuous oppression, extended against the Clergie: The Popes Holynesse, soye to discourage so good a Souldiour, as the Bishop was, and withal lothe to loose so mightie a friend, as King Henrie was, by letters and Legates, p̄aileth, commaundethe, persuaðethe, and th̄eatneth reconciliation and attone-ment, whiche after great a doe by the meanes of the Frenche King, and other his instruments, was in a soye brought to passe.

Then Thomas Becket retourneth with the Kings fauour into the Realme, from whence he had six yeares befoze departed without licence, and therefore without, or rather against Lawe, and immediately seeketh to reuenge himselfe vpon suche the Bishops, as had in his absence assisted the King. Whiche when the King (being then in Normandie) vnderstoode, it chaunced him, in greates grieve of minde to caste out some woordes, that gaue occasion and hardines, to Reginald Bere, William Tracy, Hughe Moruill, & Richard Bryton (foure of his Gentlemen) to addresse themselves for his reuenge: These foure therefore, passed the Seas, came to Canterbury, found out the Bishop, followed him into his Church, and vpon the Staires of the same, did him very cruelly, and dispitefully to deathe.

This

This shortly is the chiefe substance, and circumstance of all this Tragedie, drawne out of our otone Countriemen, and Thomas his fauourers, howsoever otherwise Erasmus (led by some sinister information) hath reported it, as shall hereafter appeare in Oxford.

Wherein, as I can not on the one side allowe this murther, (executed, not by any publique Minister of Justice, but by a priuate and iniurious arme:) So on the other side, I report me to al indifferent & Godly Readers, whether suche a lyfe deserued not suche a death, and whether these Popishe Parasites, that haue painted soozth his prayes, make not themselves, thereby partners of all his pride and wilfull rebellion.

I might here rest long, vpon diuerse other thinges concerning the King and this Archebishop, namely, how that he suffered the King to holde his stirup twice in one day in Normandie, but in *Prato Proditorum*, as Mathewe Parise very pretely writeth it: Howe the King came with bare and bleeding fete to Canterbury, to purge himselfe of the murther: Howe he bared his body to the Ponkes of this house, and receaued of euery Religious Person there, foure, or fife stripes, in whiche selfe yeare (by the way) their whole churche was consumed with fire: and some other matters besides, which make manifestly for the pꝛoofe of great presumption in the Clergie, and of vile abiection of the Princes of those dayes: But, because that I am fearefull that I growe to long, I will leaue Saint Thomas him selfe, and after (a selue woꝛdes moꝛe of this Churche) step ouer to Saint Augustines.

After Thomas, this Church found thꝛee especiall maintainers of the building, William Courtney which by his

Wh. ij.

Testa,

1395.

1400.

Testament bequeathed one thousand Markes towards the amendment of the bodie of the Church, the walles, and the Cloister: Thomas Arundel, which erected one of the Bell Towers, gaue five Belles, and Chrystened them after the Popish manner: And Henrie Chicheley, who both repaired the librarie with books and building, and did great cost vpon one of the Bell Towers also.

Saint Augustines.

Nowe to Saint Augustines. Augustine, hauing thus established a See for him selfe and his successours, obtained further of King Ethelbert (for the better furtherance of the seruice, that he had in hand) a Church, that then stode betwene the walles of the Citie, and S. Martines, wherein the King himselve vsed befoze to make his prayers, and offer sacrifice to his Idoles: This Church, he purged from Pzophane abuse & name (as they say) and dedicated it to the seruice of God, and to the honour of Saint Pancrace: Neither ceased he thus, but shortly after intreated the same King to build a Monasterie in the soyle adioyning, whiche he also appointed to the honour of Saint Peter, and Saint Paule and placed Monkes therein: This Monasterie, in more of his benefite, lost the first name, and was euer after called Saint Augustines.

603.

The deade, in old time were buried out of the Citie.

725.

Nowe whereas the true meaning, bothe of the King and Augustine was, that this Church (for so much as bothe then, and long after, it was not their manner to burie their dead within the walles of any Citie, a thing forbidden of olde, by the law of the twelue tables) should be from thencefoorth a common Sepulchre to all their successours, as well in the Kingdome, as in the Archebishoppicke, yet suche was the fauour of the Bishops, folowing Augustine towards their own church, that in the processe of time Saint Augustines was defrauded of the Sepulchres, bothe of the one & the other.

For



For in Brightwaldes dayes, the buriall of the Kings  
was taken from it : and Cuthbert the Archebishop in  
his life begged of King Eadbert, that for the aduance-  
ment of Saint Johns (a newe Church, that he had e-  
rected for that purpose, and for the execution of iudge-  
ments by the Ordale, and whiche was afterwarde fired  
with the flame of Christes Church, wherevnto it was  
neare adioyning) the Bishops also might from thence-  
forth be buried there. And for the more suretie to at-  
taine that his desire, he tooke order in his life (by othe of  
all his Couent) that they shoulde suffer his corpes to lye  
thre dayes in the ground after his death, before any  
Bell shoulde be rung, or other open solemnitie vsed, that  
might notifie his departure to the Monkes of S. Au-  
gustines. Onely Ieanbright (the fourteenth Bishop)  
whom other copies cal Lambright) was conueyed to the  
grounde at Saint Augustines, by this occasion. 746.

After the death of Bregwine (the Archebishop) this  
Ieanbright (then being Abbat of Saint Augustines,  
and fearing that he shoulde be deceiued of the bodye of  
Bregwine, as Aldhun his predecessor had bene begui-  
led of Cuthberts before) he came appoynted with ar-  
med men, determining to take it awaye by force, if he  
might not by faire meanes obtaine it. But the craftie  
Monkes of Christes Church, had buried the body before  
he came, so that he was driuen to depart home frustrate  
of his desire, and to seeke his amendes by action in the  
lawe. Notwithstanding, because they perceiued here-  
by, that he was a man of good courage, and therfore very  
meete in their opinion to be their Captaine, they shortly  
after chose him Archebishop, in hope that he woulde  
haue maintained their quarrell : but he neuerthelesse  
tooke suche order, that he was buried in S. Augustines  
with the rest of his predecessors.

Ph. iij.

Thus

Papiste  
braules.

Thus you see, howe sone after the foundation, these houses were at dissention, and for howe small trifles, they were ready to put on armes, and to moue greate and trouble some tragedies: Neyther doe I finde, that euer they agreed after, but were eyther at continuall brawling within them selues, eyther suing befoze the King, or appealing to the Pope, and that for matters of more stomacke, then impoꝛtaunce: As for example, whether the Abbat of Saint Augustines should be consecrate or blessed in his owne Church, or in the others: whether he ought to ring his belles to seruice, befoze the other had rong theirs: whether he and his tenants ought suite to the Bishops Courte: and suche like, wherein it can not be doubted, but that they consumed inestimable treasure, for maintenaunce of their moste penishe and Popishe pryde and wilfulness. If any man delight to knowe the particulars, let him reade the wꝛiting of Thorne and Spot, their own Chronicles, as for my selfe, I thinke it too long to haue sayde thus muche in generall, and therefore will haste me to the rest.

618.

S. Maries,  
in Canter-  
bury.

After the death of Ethelbert, Eadbaldus (his sonne) at the instance of Laurence, the Archebishop, builded a faire Church in this Monasterie, whiche he called Saint Maries. In whiche place many yeares after (if at the leaste you will beleue Thomas Spot) Saint Dunstane sensibly hearde, and sawe, our Lady Saint Adryan, and a sorte of Angels singing and dauncing together. After Eadbaldus, King Canute (the great Monarch of this Realme) Egilfine (the Abbat y<sup>e</sup> fled for feare of the Conquerour) Scotlandus (whome the same King put in Egelsins place.) Hugo de Floriaco (y<sup>e</sup> was of kinred to king William Rufus, & by him made Abbat) were y<sup>e</sup> persons that chiefly increased y<sup>e</sup> building: some bestowing Churches and Chapels: some Doxters and dyning places,

1017.

1059.

1099.

places, and others other sortes of edefices. The Saincs,  
whose deade bodies and reliques, brought to this church  
great veneration, and gaine, were these specially, Adry-  
an, Albin, Iohn. &c. religious persons : Eadbald, Lo-  
thar, Mul, & Wightred, sometimes Kings: S. Sexburg, &  
S. Myldred of Thanet, (whose body was given then  
by King Canute,) And Sainc Augustine their founder  
him self.

The Saincs  
and Reli-  
ques, at Can-  
terbury.

Of this last man (to let slip a many of others) this one  
myracle they repozte, that at suche time as the Danes  
entred Kent, and spoyling this Citie, ransacked almoste  
euery corner thereof, this house of Sainc Augustines  
(onely of all other) was neuer touched, By reason (say  
they) that when a Dane had taken holde of Sainc Au-  
gustines Wall or cloake, (wherewith his tumber was co-  
uered) it sticke so fast to his fingers, that by no meanes  
possible, he coulde lose it, till he came and yealbed himself  
to the Monkcs, and made so:rowfull confession of his  
faulce. Much like to this, it is wrytten, that at the ouer-  
throw of Carthage, the hande of one that woulde haue  
spoyled the God Apollo of his Mantel, was founde a-  
mongst the fragments. This our god felowe was not so  
cunning (belike) as Dionysius, for he toke a golde cloke  
from Iupiter, and had no hurt at all thereby. But ey-  
ther this our Wall was weaued, *Ex auro Tholosano*, or els  
(which I rather belæue) this Canterbury tale was for-  
ged *A rabula Romano*. Besides all these, the Monkcs see-  
ing howe litle their reliques were estæmed, in compari-  
son of Thomas Becketts, and belæuing (as the Romanes  
sometimes did of *Dea Pessenuntia*) that their house should  
be highly aduanced, if they might get thither so glori-  
ous a God as he was, they made a foule shift for a pæce  
of him also. There was a Monk of Christs Church, cal-  
led Roger, who had in charge to keepe the Altar where  
Becket

S. August.

IOII.



1176.

Thomas  
Becket had  
two heads.

Becket was slaine. This man they chose to their Abbat, in hope (sayth mine authour) that he would bring somewhat with him : in whiche doing they were not altogether deceiued, For he conueyed to them a greate part of Thomas his bloude that was shed, and a peece of his Crowne that was pared off. But here by the way, marke (I beseeche you) the grosse iugling that these slow bellyed syzes vsed to delude the worlde withal. Erasmus (in his Colloquies) writeth, that the whole face of S. Thomas, being sumptuously set in golde, was religiously kept within a Chapell beyonde the highe altar, and that they tolde him, the rest of the body lay in a shryne of golde, and of great spacioustie, which they shewed besides.

But the truth is, that at suche time as the late godly and most Christian Archebishop Cranmer, and the wise and noble counseler Cromwell, were at Canterbury, in commission for defacing of this Shryne, they found an entier body, and complete in all his partes within the same, as some yet on liue, and then present, can testifie : so that eyther this their great God, was a bishop Biceps, and lacked but one head more to make him Cerberus, or Chimæra : or else (whiche is most certaine) these Monks were marueylous and monstrous magnifiers, of suche deceivable trumperie, and wanted nothing at all to make them, *Cretenses* or *Cecropes*. But to my purpose againe, as touching the priuileges, possessions, estimation and maiestie of this house, it were too much to recite the one halfe, and therefore I will onely let you knowe, that of auncient time the Abbat had allowance of a Coynage, or Mynte within him selfe, by graunt of King Ethelstane : That he had place in the general council, by gift of the Pope Leo : That the house had fise Couents, conteining in all, sixtie fise Monkes : And finally, that (besides iurisdiction ouer a whole Last of thir-  
tens

1056.

tenne Hundredes (it had possession of liuelihode to the value of eight hundzeth and eight pounds by yeare.

Nowe, besides these two great houses, there were in

Canterbury some other also of lesse note: As S. Gre-

gories (a Church of Chanons, belonging to the Hospi-

tal that Lanfranc built) whiche was fired in the time of

King Stephan, and valued in the Recordes at thirtie

poundes by the yeare: The Hospital of S. Laurence,

edified by Hughe (the Abbat of S. Augustines) for his

sicke Monkes, and rated at twentie poundes yearely:

S. James Hospital, erected by Eleonor, the wife of King

Henric the thirde: S. Sepulchres, a house of Monnes,

prepared (belike) to serue the necessitie of the hoat Mon-

kes, esteemed at twelue poundes by yeare: The White

Friers translated by one Iohn Digge, to the Isle of Byn-

white, lately the house of one Rolph: And S. Myldreds

in the South side of the Citie, long since (but not lately)

an Abbay. There is extant in Canterbury also, the

annient and stately Palaice of the Archebishops, not

that whiche King Ethelbert first gaue to Augustine at

Staplegate, for it was but a meane dwelling house, an-

swerable to his smal company, and first beginnings: but

the very same which he secondly bestowed on him (whē

he left Canterbury, and went to Reculuer) which was

his owne, and his predecessours, the Kinges stately

Court and Palaice. This house, by that time Hu-

bert the Archebishop had aspired to the See, was decay-

ed, either by age, or flame, or both: Who therfore pul-

led downe the most part of it, and in place thereof layde

the foundation of that great Hall, and other the offices,

that are now to be seene: But by reason that he him-

selfe wanted time, (being preuented by death) and some

of his followers lacked money (hauing otherwise, be-

stowed it laushly) to perfourme the worke, it rested till

Xi.

the

S. Gregories  
in Canterbu  
ry.

1145

S. Laurences  
Hospitall.

James  
Hospitall,  
S. Sepul-  
chers.

1207

White fri-  
ars.

S. Mildreds

The Bi-  
shops Pa-  
laice.

1193

the dayes of Boniface, who both substantially, and beautifully finished it.

1250.

S. Martines  
was a Bi-  
shops See.

Lastly, a litle without the East wall of the citie stood S. Martines, where was sometime an auncient Church, erected by the Romanes, in which (before the comming of Augustine) Bertha, the wife of King Ethelbert, hauing receiued the Religion of Christ before him, was accustomed to pray. In this smal Oratorie, Augustine (by the Kings permission) celebrated diuine seruice, & administered the Sacraments, vntil that by further taste of the Kings fauour, he obtained larger roome to build his Monasterie upon. And this Church was long time after, euen vntil the comming in of the Normanes, the See of a Bishop, who (alwayes remaining in the countrie) supplied the absence of the Metropolitane, that for the most part followed the Court: and that as wel in gouerning the Monkes, as in performing the solemnities of the Church, and exercising the authoritie of an Archdeacon. Godwine was the last whiche sate in that chaire, after whose death, Lanfranc (being as ielouse of a partner in his spirituall Ierarchie, as euer was Alexander in his tempozall Empire) refused to consecrate any other, affirming plainly, that Two Bishops were to many for one Citie. Neuerthelesse, bycause he needed the helpe of a substitute, he created in place thereof, one of his Chaplaines,  
Archdeacon of Canterbury.

Haking-



## Hakington.



Aldwine (an Archebifhop of Canter-  
bury, vnder the reigne of King Hen-  
rie the feconde) minding to aduance  
the eftimation of Thomas Becket, his  
lately murthered predecessor, and  
withall to make him felf memorabile  
to pofteritie, thought this one waye

S. Sepul-  
chres by Ca-  
terbury.

the beft for obtaining his double defire, namely, to build  
fome ftately Church Monument, and to matche in the  
patronage thereof, Thomas that Prototraitour and re-  
bell to his Prince, with Stephan the Protomartyr, and  
true feruaunt of Almighty God. For which purpofe,  
and to the ende that his acte might haue the moze coun-  
tenaunce and credite, he obtained a licence from Pope  
Vrban, in this fourme as Mathewe Parife repozteth it.

*Presentium tibi auctoritate mandamus, vt liceat tibi Ecclesi-  
am in honorem beatorum Stephani, & Thoma, martyrum, con-  
stituire, & idoneis eam ordinare personis, quibus beneficia qua  
ad eorum sustentationem constitueris, canonicè debeas affig-  
nare. Item mandamus, vt quarta parte oblationum, reliquijs  
Sancti Thoma monachorum vsibus concessa, quarta fabricis  
ecclesia deputata, quarta pauperibus deputata, quartam porti-  
onem reliquam liceat tibi in alios vsus, pro tua voluntatis arbi-  
trio erogare. &c.*

This done, he pulled downe an olde timber Chapell that ftode at Hakington, and rayfed in  
place therof, a faire Church of helwed ftone. But, for as  
much, as not only the charge to furnifh that prefent buil-  
ding, was fetched fro S. Thomas offering at Canterbu-  
ry, (much to the decay of the Monkes gaine) but alfo the  
perely maintenace therof, was to be drawne from y<sup>e</sup> fame  
Manaper, & to be beftowed vpon certaine Seculer Cha-  
nons, (a fort of religious perfons, that y<sup>e</sup> monks defpised)

The Mon-  
kes cotend  
with the  
Archbifhop  
and do pre-  
uaile.

3.ij.

who

who yet might happely in tyme to come, be made equall with the Monkes themselves in the election of the Archbishop, to the generall discredite of their holy order, and utter violation of their former Privileges, therefore the Couent of Christes Church, thinking it fit to withstande suche beginnings, complayned hereof to Pope Innocents holynesse (for Urban was then deade) and were so well hearde in their suite, that the Archebishops building was countermaunded, and he with forced patience, contented to cease the worke. Neuerthelesse, hauing hope, that if the thing were by great distance of place, remoued out of the Monks eye, he might with better quiet bring his desire to the wished effect, he attempted the like platfourme at Lambhithe, his owne house neare London: But befoze he had finished that worke, he went into the holy Lande with King Richarde the first, and dyed without returne, in whiche meane while, the Chapell of Hakington, being destitute of her Patronne, was quite and cleane demolished.

Hubert succeeded Baldwine in the See, and put his hande to perfourme the building at Lambhithe, that his predecessour had begonne, but the Monkes (fearing still the former inconuenience) intercepted the whole profits of Saincte Thomas offering, renued their suite at Rome, and (feeding the Pope with that whiche should haue maynteyned the building) made his holy eares so attentive, that he became wholly of the Monkes deuotion, and compelled Hubert at his owne dispencc, and to his great dispight, to (Mauger his Myter) race that Chapell also, and to make it equall with the grounde.

And thus you may see howe the enuious Monkes hindered the felicitie of Hakington, whiche otherwise by this kynde of spirituall robberie, might in time haue proued as famous as Boxley, Walsingham, or any other  
Den

**Den of Idolatrie, whereas then it was with much a  
doe, and great difficultie obtained, that a poore Chapell  
(serued with a single Wy: Iohn, and destitute, both  
of Font, and Churchyard) might remaine  
standing in the place. Howebeit**

**since that time, it is become**

**the Parish Church  
there.**

**I i. iii.**

**Har-**



## Harbaldowne, by Canterbury.

The vanitie  
of Man, and  
the subtilty  
of the De-  
uill, be the  
cause of I-  
dolatrie.



Suche hath beene the nature of man, euen from that time (in whiche not contenting himself to abide man, but aspiring by knowledge of good and euill to become God, he defaced the Image of his Creator, to the similitude of whome he was created) that he hath continually euer since, and that in matters concerning God, more trusted his owne witte, then the wisdom of God him selfe, better liked his owne inuention, then Gods holy institution, and preferred wil worship, deuised of his own braine, before reuerent religion inioyned by the mouth of the Almighty. And suche also hath been the continual craft of Sathan, his sworn enemy, that (seeing him thus addicted to vanitie and rebellion) he hath laboured from time to time to feede his euill humour, suggesting innumerable (and those moste subtile) sleightes to withdraue him from God, & draue him to Idolatrie and superstition: So that in time by policie of the one, and prouocacion in the other, it was by degrees brought to passe, that not onely the excellent and glorious creatures of God, the Angels, & men (I mean) the Sunne and Moone, the Stars and Elements, were worshipped as Gods, But also, diuine honour and reuerence, was transferred from the highest God, to the moste inferiour, and basest partes of all his workmanship, the world at the length becomming so madde, that it would crouche and kneele, kisse, and knocke, bowe, bend,

bend, and make all signes of honour and reverence, not only to stockes and stones (that represented the bodies of moztall men) but to whatsoever trifle, trumperie, or baggage besides, that the Deuill or his Ministers would haue preferred as a monument, or relique of them.

And therefore, no maruaile was it, if God (seeing the woꝛld to abuse it selfe after a moste froward and peruerse kinde of superstitiō) did by his iust vengeaunce be-  
reave vnbeleauers of al vnderstanding and iudgement, so that without any further doubt, or inquisition) they sticked not to embrace deuoutly, whatsoever was com-  
mended, were it neuer so lewdly.

For example whereof, beholde here at Harbaldowne (an Hospital builded by Lanfranc the Archebishop, for reliefe of the poore and diseased) the shamefull Idolatrie of this latter age, committed by abusing the lippes (whiche God hath giuen for the sounding footth of his praise) in smacking and kissing the vpper leather of an olde shoe, reserved for a Relique, and vnreuerently offered to as many as passed by.

Erasmus, setting footth (in his Dialogue intituled, *Peregrinatio religionis ergo*) vnder the name of one Ogygius, his owne trauaile, to visite our Lady of Walsingham, and Saint Thomas Becket, sheweth that in his retourne from Canterbury towards London, he found (on the high way side) an Hospital of certain poore folkes: of which, one came out against him and his companie, holding a holy water sprinkle in the one hand, & bearing the vpper leather of an olde shoe (faire set in Copper and Christal) in the other hand: This dotting father, first cast holy water vpon thē, & then offred thē (by one and one) the holy shoe to kisse, Whereat as the most part of the company (knowing the manner) made no refusal: So amongst the rest one Gratianus (as he saith) offended with the follie, asked halfe in anger what it was

Saint Thomas Becket's Relique.

was: Saint Thomas Shoe, quoth the olde man: with that Gratianus turned him to the company, & said: *Quid sibi volunt he pecudes, ut osculemur calceos omnium bonorum Virorum? Quin eadem opera porrigunt osculandum sputum, aliaq, corporis excrementa?* What meane these beasts, that we should kisse the shoes of al good men: why do they not, by the same reason offer vs their Spittle, and other excrements of the body to be kissed? This to the wiser sorte, and suche as haue any light, may suffice for the vnderstanding of Erasmus opinion & iudgment touching such vnreuerēt Reliques: but yet lest some blinde & wilfull worshippinger should thinke it but merily spoken of him, and in another mans person, (as in deed Erasmus had many times *Dextrū pedem in calceo, sinistrum in pelui,* according to the old Proverb) I wil likewise adde a few woordes, vsed in the end of his booke, for explication of his owne full minde in that matter. *Notantur, qui reliquias incertas pro certis ostendunt, qui his plus tribuunt quam oportet, & qui questum ex his sordide faciunt.* In this Dialogue all suche are taxed, whiche shewe vnto the people vncertaine reliques, for true and certaine: or which doe ascribe vnto them more then of right is due: or whiche do raise filthie gaine and lucre by them.

But peradventure the authozitie of D. Erasmus is nowe (since the late Tridentine Counsell) of no weight with them, since by the sentence of the same, his woorkes without choice be condemned as Heretical. Truly, that Couंसel shewed it selfe, moze hastie to suppress al y good woorkes of Godly men, then redie to correct or abolish any of their owne fabulous books, or superstitious follies. And therfore let indifferēt men iudge whether the opinion of any one true speaking man, be not woorthely to be preferred, befoze the determination of suche a whole vnadvised Synode. And as for suche as  
in



In this light of the trueth, will shewe themselves main-  
 teiners of such Patwmetrie, I deeme the like the Sabees,  
 whose senses, (as Strabo writeth) are offended with  
 sweet smelling saours, and delighted with  
 the filthie smoke of burned goates  
 haire, and therefore I say  
 unto them, *Sordescant*  
*adhuc*, and so  
 leaue the.

Kk.

Nor.



In the dayes of King Edward the confessor, one hundred Burgesses of the Citie of Canterbury, ought their suite to the Manor of Norwood, as in that part of the booke of Domesday which concerneth Kent, may yet moste evidently appeare.

The olde  
manner of  
nameing  
men.

The building is now demolished, but the Manor was long time in the possession of certaine Gentlemen of the same name, (of whiche race, one lyeth buried in the body of the church at Adington, in the yeare a thousand foure hundred and sixtē. And hereby it is probable (as me thinketh) to bee coniectured, that in auncient time, men were usually named of the places of their dwelling: For whereas befoze the coming in of the Conquerour, places (for the most part) had their appellatiōs, either of their situation, or of some notable accidēt, or noble man, as Northwood in regard of Southwood, Anglefford by reason of the flight of the Englishmen, & Rochester because of Ros. And whereas persons also, had their callings (most cōmonly) eyther of some note of the body, as Swanshalfe, for the whitenes of her necke: or for some propertie of y<sup>e</sup> minde, as Godred, for his good counsel, & that by one single Surname only & no moze, now immediately after the arriual of y<sup>e</sup> Normanes (which obtained those lādes, & which first brought into this Realme, y<sup>e</sup> names of Thomas, Iohn, Nicholas, Fraunces, Stephā, Henric & such like, that now be most usuall) men began to be knowen and surnamed, not of their conditions and properties, but of their dwellings and possessions: So that the Norman that was befoze Thomas, and had gotten the Towneship of Norton, Sutton,

Sutton, Inglefield, or Combe, was thenceforth called, Thomas of Norton, of Sutton, of Inglefield, of Combe, or such like, al which be (vndoubtedly) the names of places and not of persons. Neyther did the matter stay here, but in farther processe of time, this Thomas of Norton, of Sutton, or of Combe, was called Thomas Norton, Thomas Sutton, or Thomas Combe, leauing out the particle (of) whiche befoze denoted his dwelling place: And thus (the Norman manner preuailing) the nuncient custome of the Saxons and Englishe men vanished quite out of vze. This whole thing, is best discerned by auncient euidences, and by the names of our Chesshyre men yet remaining: for, olde wrytings haue commonly, *Ioannes de Norton, Wilmus de Sutton*, for such as we call now, John Norton, and William Sutton: and amongst the Gentlemen of Chesshyre (euen to this day) one is called (after their maner) Thomas a Bruerton, another John a Holcroft, and suche like, for Thomas Bruerton, John Holcroft, &c. as we here vse it.

Thus muche shortly of mine owne fantasie,

I thought not vnnete to impart,

by occasion of the name of Nor-

wood, and now forward

to my purpose

again.

Kk.ii.

Leedes



*Lodanum, of others Ledanum  
Castrum.*



Robert Creuequer, was one of the eight, that Iohn Fynes elected for his assistance in the defence of Douer Castle (as we haue already shewed) who, taking for that cause the Manor of Leedes, and undertaking to finde five Warders there, for, builded this Castle, or at the least, another, that stood in the place. For I haue read, that Edward (the Prince of Wales, and afterward the first King of that name) being Wardein of the Five Portes, and Constable of Douer, in the life of Henrie the third his father, caused Henrie Cobham (whose ministerie he vsed, as a substitute in bothe those offices) to raze the Castle that Robert Creuequer had erected, because Creuequer (that was then owner of it, & Heire to Robert) was of the number of the Nobles that moued and mainteined warre against him. Whiche, whether it be true, or no, I will not affirme, but yet I thinke it very likely, bothe because Badlesmere (a man of another name) became Lord of Leedes shortly after (as you shall anone see) and also for that the present woorkes at Leedes pretendeth not the antiquitie of so many yeares, as are passed since the age of the conquest. But let vs leaue the building, and goe in hand with the storie.

Mande the  
Empresse,  
true Heire  
to the  
Crowne.

King Henrie the first, hauing none other issue of his bodie then Maude (first married to Henrie the Emperour, whereof she was called the Empresse, and after coupled to Geffray Plantaginet the Earle of Angeow) & fearing (as it happened in deed) y after his death, trouble might arise in the Realme, about the inheritance of y Crowne,

Crowne, because she was by habitation a straunger and farre of, so that she might want bothe force and friends to atchieue her right : And for that also, Stephan ( the Earle of Boloine, his sisters sonne ) was then of greate estimation amongst the noble men, and abiding within the Realme, so that with great aduantage, he might offer her wrong : he procured ( in full Parliamt ) the assent of his Lordes and Commons, that Maude, and her heires, shoulde succede in the kingdome after him : And to the ende, that this limitation of his, might be the more surely establisshed, he tooke the fidelitie and promise by othe, bothe of his Clergie and Laytie, and of the Earle of Boloine him selfe.

Howbeit, immediatly after his decease, Stephan ( being of the opinion, that *Si ius violandum est, certe regnandi causa violandum est.* )

If breache of lawes, a man shall vndertake :  
He must them boldly break, for kingdomes sake.)

Inuaded the Crowne, and by the aduice of William the Archebishop of Canterbury ( who had first of al giuen his fayth to Maude ) by the fauour of the common people, whiche adheared vnto him ) and by the consent of the holy father of Rome ( whose will neuer wanteth to the furtheraunce of mischiefe ) he obtained it, whiche neuer thelesse ( as William of Newborowe well noteth ) being gotten by patterne, he held not past two yeres in peace, but spent the residue of his whole reigne in dissention, warre, and bloudshed : to the great offence of God, the manifest iniurie of his owne couline, and the grievous veneration of this countrie and people.

For soone after the beginning of his reigne, sundry of the Noble men, partely vpon remoyse of their former

promise made, and partly for displeasure (conceined by cause he kepte not the othe taken at his Coronation) made defection to Maude, so soone as euer she made her challenge to the Crowne: So that (in the end, after many calamities) what by her owne power, and their assistance, she compelled him to fall to composition with her, as in the storie at large it may be scene.

1137.

Nowe during those his troubles, amongst other things that muche annoyed him, and furthered the part of Maude his aduersarie, it was vpon a time sounded (by his euil willers) in the eares of the comon sort, that he was dead: And therewithall soudently diuers great men of her deuotion, betooke them to their strong holdes, and some others seised some of the Kings owne Castles to the behalfe of the Empreesse: Of whiche number was Robert, the Earle of Gloucester, and bastarde brother to Maude, who entred this Castle of Leedes, mynding to haue kept it.

1318.

Bartholmew Badefsmere.

But King Stephan vsed against him suche force, and celeritie, that he soone wrested it out of his fingers. King Edward the seconde, that for the loue of the two Spensers, incurred the hatred of his wife and Nobilitie, gaue this Castle (in exchange for other landes) to Bartilmew Badefsmere (then Lord Steward of his houlholde) and to his heires for euer: who shortly after (entering into that troublesome action, in whiche Thomas, the Duke of Lancaster with his complices, maugre the King, exiled the Spensers) bothe losse the Kings fauour, this Castle, and his life also: For, whilst he was abroade in ayde of the Barons, and had committed the custodie thereof to Thomas Colpeper, and left not onely his chiefe treasure in money, but also his wife and childzen within it for their securitie: It chaunced, that Isabell the Kings wife, mynding a Pilgrimage towards Catterbury, and being ouertake with might

1321.

Thomas Colpeper.



might, sent her Marshall to prepare for her lodging there. But her officer was proudly denyed by the Captaine, who sticke not to tell him, that neyther the Quene, ne any other, shoulde be lodged there, without the commandement of his Lord the owner. The Queene, not thus answered, came to the gate in person, and required to be let in, But the Captaine most malepertly repulsed her also, in so much that shee complained greauously to the king of the misdemeanour, and he forthwith leuied a power, and personally summoned and besieged the peice so straightly, that in the end, through want of rescue and victuall, it was deliuered him. Then toke he Capitaine Colpeper, and houg him vp: The wife and children of the Lord Badelesmere, he sent to the Towre of London: The treasure and munition, he seised to his owne vse: and the Castle he committed to such as liked him. But, as the last acte of a Tragedie is alwayes moze heauie & sorrowful the the rest: so calamitie & woe increasing vpon him) Badelesmere him self was the yere folowing, in the company of the Duke of Lancaster and others, discomfited at Borowbrig, by the Kings armie, and shortly after sent to Canterbury, and beheaded. I might here iustly take occasion, to rip vp the causes of those great and tragical troubles, that grewe betwene this King & his Nobilitie, for Peter Gaueston, & these two Spensers, the rather, for that the common sort of our English stoziers, do lay the whole burthen of that fault vpon the King, and those fewe persons: But because the matter is not so plaine as they make it, & withal requireth moze wordes for y manifestation therof, then I may now asorde, & for that also there is hope, that a special hystorie of y reigne (penned by S. Thomas Delamore, which liued in y very time it self) may be hereafter imprinted & made comon,

I will onely exhort the Reader (for his owne information in the trueth, and for some excuse of such as be ouercharged) to peruse that worke, wherein (I assure him) he shall finde matter, bothe very rare, and credible.

The Pryory  
at Leedes.

As touching the Pryorie at Leedes (whiche was a house of Regular Chanons, and valued in the Records of the late suppression at thre hundredeth, thre scoze and two poundes of yearly reuenuē) I finde, that one Robert Creuequer (the authour of the Castle peradventure, for this was done in the reigne of Henrie, sonne to the Conquerour) and Adam his sonne and heire, firste founded it. Whiche thing might probably haue bene coniectured, althoughe it had neuer bene committed to Hystorie. For in auncient time, euen the greatest personages, helde Monkes, Friars, and Monnes, in suche veneration and liking, that they thought no citie in case to flourish, no house likely to haue long continuance, no Castle sufficiently defended, where was not an Abbay, Pryorie, or Monnerie, eyther placed within the walles, or situate at hande and neare adioyning. And surely (omitting the residue of the Realme) hereof only it came to passe, that Douer had S. Martines, Canterbury Christes Church, Rochester S. Andrewes, Tunbridge the Friars, Maydstone the Chanons, Grenewiche the obseruants, and this our Leedes her Pryorie of Chanons at hande. Nowbeit, I finde in a Herald's note (who belike made his coniecture, by some coate of Armes lately apparant) that one Leybourne, an Earle of Salisburie, was the founder of it. In dede, it is to be sene in the Annales of S. Augustines of Canterbury, that a noble man (called Roger Leybourne) was sometime of great authoritie within this Shyre, notwithstanding that, in his time he had tasted of bothe fortunes: for in the dayes of King Henrie the thirde, he was

was firſte one of that coniuration, which was called the Barons warre, from whiche faction, Edward the Kings ſonne, wonne him, by faire means to his part, and made him the bearer of his priuate purſe.

Afterwarde they agreed not vpon the reckoning, ſo that the Prince (charging him with great arrearage of account) ſeiſed his liuing for ſatiſfaction of the debt, by whiche occaſion Roger once moze, became of the Barons deuotions: But after the pacification made at Kenelworth, he was eſtſones receiued to fauour, and was made Maſtard of the Fiue Portes, and Licutenant of this whole Shyre. Nowe, though it can not be true, that this man was the builder of this Wyke (for the ſame Annales ſay, that it was erected long before) yet if he did but marrie the heyre, he might truly be termed the Patrone or founder thereof, for by that name,

not only the builders themſelues, but their poſteritie alſo (to whom the gloze of their deedes did deſcend) were wont to be called, as well as they.

Ll.

The



## The description, and hystorie, of the See, and Diocesse of Rochester.



**H**e learned in Astronomie, be of the opinion, that if Iupiter, Mercurie, or any other Planet, appoche within certain degrees of the Sunne, and be burned (as they terme it) vnder his beames, That then it hath in maner no influence at all, But yealdeth wholly to the Sunne that ouershineth it: And some men beholding the nearenesse of these two Bishopricks, Canterbury and Rochester, and comparing the bright glory, pompe, and primacie of the one, with the contrarie altogether in the other, haue fanciesed Rochester so euershadowed and obscured, that they reckon it no See or Bishoprick of it self, But only a place of a mere Suffragan, and Chaplain to Canterbury. But he that shall either aduisedly weigh the firste institution of them bothe, or but indifferently consider the estate of eyther, shall easily finde, that Rochester hath not only a lawfull, and canonicall Cathedrall See of it selfe, But the same also more honestly won and obtained, then euer Canterbury had: For, as touching Rochester, Augustine (whome the Spokes may not deny to be the English Apostle) ordained Iustus Bishop there, Ethelbert (the lawfull king of Kent) both assenting thereto by his presence, and confirming it by his liberall beneficence. But, howe Canterbury came to haue an Archebishops Chayre, if you thinke that it hath not in that title already so sufficiently appeared, as that it therfore needeth not now estones to be rehearsed, then reade (I pray you) Garual. Tilbericns. and he (in his booke *De otijs Imperialibus*) wil tel you,

By what  
meanes the  
Archebi-  
shops chair  
came to Can-  
terbury.

*in Sanguine sanctorum*, *Dorobernensis ecclesia primatiam obtinuit.* The Church of Canterbury obtained the Primacie, by the shedding of the blood of Saints. Rochester moreover, hath had also a continuall succession of Bishops, euen from the beginning, whiche haue gouerned in a distinct Diocesse, containing foure Deanries, and therefore wanteth nothing (that I knowe) to make it a compleat and absolute Bishopricke. In deede, the verely value is but small, the slenderesse whereof (ioyned with some ceremoniall duties to the Archebishop) happily haue borne the cause of abasing the estimation of it. But for all that, let vs not sticke with auncient Bede, and others, to saye, that the Bishops See at Rochester was at the first instituted by Augustine, That a Cathedral Church was builded there, by King Ethelbert, to the name of S. Andrewe, and that he endowd it with certaine lande for liuelyhood, which he called Priestfield, in token (as I thinke) that Priestes should be sustained therewithall. This Bishopricke may be sayd to be seuered from Canterbury Diocesse (for the most parte) by the water of Medway, and it consisteth (as I sayde) of foure distinct Deanries, namely, Rochester, Malling, Dartford, and Shorham: Howbeit, with this latter, the Bishop medleth not, the same being a peculiar (as they terme it) to the Archebishop of Canterbury, who holdeth his prerogative wheresoeuer his lands do lye, as in this Deanrie he hath not only had of olde time certain manor houses, with Parkes and Demeanes, but diuers other large territories, rentes, and reuenues also. In it therefore are these Churches following.

Shorham, with the Chapell of Oxford.

Eynesford, with the Vicarage there.

Dernth, and the Vicarage there.

Fermingham, and the Vicarage.

Al. is.

Bexley,

The Deanrie of Shorham.

Bexley, and the Vicarage.

Eareth, alias Eard.

Northfleete, and the Vicarage.

Mepham, and the Vicarage.

Clyue.

Grean, with the Vicarage.

Farleigh, with the Vicarage.

Huntington, alias, Hunton.

Peckam, with the Vicarage.

Wrotham, with the Chapell and Vicarage.

Eightam.

Seuenocke, with the Vicarage.

Penshurst.

Chydingstone.

Heuer.

Gillingham, with the Vicarage.

Brasted.

Sundriche.

Cheuening.

Orpington, with the Chapell and Vicarage.

Hefe.

Kestan.

Halstede.

Woodland.

Eastmalling, with the Vicarage.

Ifeild.

A Popishe  
myracle.

As touching the Bishops of this See, Iustus, (one of the same, that Pope Gregorie sent hither from Rome) was the firste, that sate in the chaire, who was afterwarde translated to Canterbury, and of whome they reporte this for a singular myracle: That when his body (many yeares after the interrement) was to be remoued, it yealded a most pleasaunt saour, in the senses of all that were



## The See of Rochester. 269

were present: Whiche thing, howe meruailous it was, when they had (after the common manner then vsed) befoze his buriall, enbaulmed his body with mosse precious, delectable, and odoriferous spices, I dare make any man Iudge, if he be not moze then a pore blinde Papist, giuen ouer to beleue at manner (be they neuer so grosse, and beastly) illusions.

In the whole race of the Bishops succceding Iustus in this See, thre amongst others, be read of, mosse notable, Paulinus Gundulphus, and Gilbertus: of which the first after his death was there honoured for a Saint: The second, was in his life the best benefactor that euer their Church found: The third was so hatefull & iniurious to the Monkes, y<sup>t</sup> they neither esteemed him while he was on liue, nor wailed him at all, after that he was dead. But of all these, we shall haue place to speake moze largely, when we shall come to the Church and Monasterie: In the meane time therfoze, it shalbe fitte to shewe, with what rowage this church vpheld her rightes and priuileges, not only agaynst the Monkes of Canterbury (which laboured much to bringe it vnder) but also against the See of the Archbishops it self, which was (for the most parte) the chiefe patrone & promoter of it. In the reigne of Kyng Henry the third, and after the deathe of Benedicte, (the Bishop of Rochester) the Monkes made choise of one Henrie Sanford (that greate Clarke, which afterward preached at Sedingburne) whearof when y<sup>e</sup> Monkes of Christs Church had gotten vnderstandinge, they resisted the election, challenginge that the pastozall staffe or crosyer of Rochester ought of herse right to be brought to their house, after the decease of the Bishop, and that the election ought to be made in their Chapter. The Monkes of Rochester maintained their owne choise and so (the matter waring warine

1227.  
Monkes  
contend for  
the electio  
of the Bi-  
shop.

lik, is,                      betwene

between them (it was at the length referred to the determination of the Archebishops: he againe posted it ouer to certaine delegates, who hearing the parties, and weighing the prooves, gaue sentence with the monks of Rochester, and yet losse (as they thought) good loue and amitie among them: But (as the Poet saith) *Male facta gratia, nequicquam coit, & rescinditur*, Favour, that is, euill peeced, will not ioyne close, but falleth a sunder againe. And therefore this their opinion sayled them, & that their cure was but patched: for soone after the soze brake out of netwe, and the Canterbury Monkes reuiued their displeasure with suche a heate, that Hubert of Borrow (the chief Iustice of the Realme) was dñuen to come into the Chapter house to coole it, and to woork a second reconciliation betweene them. Neither yet for all that (as it may seeme) was that flame clene extinguished.

1238.

Saint Cuthbertes feast  
why holdē  
double.

For not long after, the Monkes of Christes Church, seeing that they themselves could not preuaile, intituled their Archebishop Edmund with whom also the Rochester Monks waged law at Rome before the holy Father, (as touching the election of one Richard Wendene, or Wendecouer, whom they would haue had to Bishop) by the space of three whole yeares together, and at the length, eyther through the equitie of their cause, or the weight of their purse, ouerthrew him vpon Saint Cuthberts day, in ioye whereof, they returned home withall hast, and enacted in their Chapter house, that from thencefoorth for ever, Saint Cuthbertes feast (as a Tropheum of their victorie) should be holden double, bothe in their Church and Rithin. And not thus only, but otherwise also, hath the See of Rochester, well holden her stowe: for during the whole successio of threescore and three Bishops, which in right lyne, haue followed Iustus, she hath continually main-  
teined

teined her Chaire at this one place, whereas in moſte partes of the Realme beſides, the Sees of the Biſhops haue ſuffred ſundrye translations, by reaſon that in the Conquerours time, order was taken, that ſuche Biſhops, as beſore had their Churches in Countie townes and Villages, ſhould ſooꝝthwith remoue, & from thence ſooꝝth remaine in walled Townes and Cities: whiche ordinance could not by any meanes touche Rochester, that was a walled Citie long time beſore King Williams gouernment. But now, to the end y I may purſue the order that I haue preſcribed, I will ſet ſooꝝth a Catalogue of the Biſhops of Rochester by name, referring recitall of their actes and doings, to their peculiar and proper places, as I haue in Canterbury beſore.

Biſhops  
Sees, are  
translated  
from Vil-  
lages to  
Cities.

*Iustus.*

*Romanus.*

*Paulinus.*

*Ithamarus.*

*Damianus.*

*Pitta.*

*Cuichelmus.*

*Gibmundus.*

*Tobias.*

*Aldulphus.*

*Duime, or Duno.*

*Eardulphus.*

*Diora.*

*Permundus, alias, Wermundus.*

*Beornmodus.* After him, theſe be inſerted in a Catalogue that is beſore the Chronicle of Rochester.

*Tathnodus, Batenodus, Cuthwulfus, Swithulfus, Bn-  
wicks, Chuelmundus, and Kyneferdus.*

The Cata-  
logue of  
Rochester  
Biſhops.

*Bra*



*Burhricus.**Alstanus.**Godwinus.**Godwinus, the second**Sivardus. Before, and at the tyme of the Conquest.**Arnostus.*1077. *Giundulphus.*1108. *Radulphus.*1114. *Ernulfus.**Ioannes. After whome, in the former Catalogue, one other Ioannes followeth.**Ascelimus, or Anselmus: and hitherto they were all Bishops.**Guelterus.**Gualeramus.**Gilebertus Glanville.**Benedictus.**Henricus**Richardus Wendene, or Wendener.*1250. *Laurentius de Sancto Martino.**Gualterus de Merton: Chancellour of England.**Ioannes de Bradfield.**Thomas de Inglethorp.*1291. *Thomas de Wulldham.**Hamo de Heth.**Ioannes de Sepey.**Wilmus Wilesey.**Thomas Trelege.**Thomas Brynton, or Braton.**Richardus Barnet, elected, and not consecrated.**Willelmus de Botelesham.**Ioannes de Botelesham, elected only.**Ghelyndon, elected only.**Richardus Young: he made the windowes at Frenchebury*

bury, and there it is to be seene in picture.

1418. *Ioannes Kempe.*  
*Ioannes Langdon.*  
*Thomas Bronne.*  
*Willielmus Wellis.*  
*Ioannes Lowe.*  
*Richardus Peckam. Elected only.*  
*Thomas Rotheram.*  
*Ioannes Alcocke.*  
*Ioannes Russel.*  
*Eadmundus Audeley.*  
*Thomas Sauage.*  
*Richardus Fitz Iames.*  
1504. *Ioannes Fisher.*  
*Ioannes Hylsey.*  
1539. *Nicholaus Hethe.*  
1544. *Henricus Holbeache.*  
1547. *Nicholaus Rydley.*  
1549. *Ioannes Ponet.*  
1550. *Ioannes Skorey.*  
*Mauritius Griffin.*  
1559. *Eadmundus Allen. Elected only.*  
1559. *Eadmundus Gest.*  
1571. *Eadmundus Freake.*

And thus much shortly being said, touching the See, & Bishops of Rochester in generalitie, it followeth, that I enter into the particular description of the Diocesse, wherein I meane to follow the order that I haue take in Canterbury before: Namely to begin at the North-east corner, and from thence (first descending along the bankes of Medwey, and then passing by the frontiers of Suffex and Surrey, and lastly returning by the Thames shoze to the same point) to enuiron the whole Bishoprick: whiche done, I will peruse what it containeth in the inner partes also, and then betake me to rest.

¶

Gil.

The Har-  
borowe of  
the Nauie  
Royall.



Then at our first entrie into the Dio-  
cesse of Rochester, on the Northeast  
part thereof, the Harbozowe of the  
Nauie Royall at Gillingham presen-  
teth it selfe vnto vs, a thing of al other  
most woꝛthie the first place, whether  
you respect the richesse, beautie, oꝛ benefite of the same.  
No towne, noꝛ Citie, is there (I dare say) in this whole  
Shyre, comparable in value with this our flecte: Noꝛ  
shipping any where els in the whole world to be found,  
either moze artificially moalded vnder the water, oꝛ  
moze goꝛgeously decked aboue: And as foꝛ the benefite  
that our Realme may reape by these moſte ſtately and  
valiant veſſels, it is euẽ the ſame ȳ Apollo by ȳ mouth  
of Ariſtonice promiſed to Grece, when his Oracle was  
conſulted againſt the inuaſion of Xerxes, & that his won-  
derful armie (oꝛ rather world of men in armes) ſaying,

*Iupiter e ligno dat moenia facta Minerue,*

*Qua tibi ſola tuiſq; ferant inuicta ſaluem.*

Highe Ioue doth giue thee walles of wood.  
appointed to Minerue,

The whiche alone inuincible,  
may thee, and thine, preſerue.

And therefore, of theſe ſuche excellent oꝛnaments of  
peace, & truſtie aides in warre, I might truely affirme,  
that they be foꝛ wealthe, almoſte ſo many riche treaſu-  
ries, as they be ſingle ſhips: foꝛ beautie, ſo many pꝛince-  
ly Palaces, as they be ſeueral peices: and foꝛ ſtrength,  
ſo many moving Caſtles, as they be ſundꝛie ſayling  
veſſels. They be not many (I muſt confeſſe, and you  
may ſee) and therefore in that behalfe nothing aunſwe-  
rable, either to that Nauie whiche fought againſt Xer-  
xes at Salamis, oꝛ to many other auncient flectes of  
Foꝛeigne Kingdomes, oꝛ of this our owne Iland: how-  
beit,



best, if their swiftnes in sayling, their furie in offending,  
 or force in defending, be duly weighed, they shalbe found  
 as farre to passe all other in power, as they be inferiour  
 to any in number. For looke what the armed Hauke  
 is in the aire amongst the feareful Byrdes, or what the  
 couragious Lyon is on the land amongst the cowardly  
 Cattell of the field, the same is one of these at the Sea in  
 a Paue of Common vessels, beeing able to make  
 hauocke, to plume, and to pray vpon the best of them  
 at her owne pleasure. Whiche speache of mine, if  
 any man shall suspecte as Hyperbolical, let him cal to  
 minde how often, and howe confidently (of late yeares)  
 some felwe of these ships (incertaine of their intertaine-  
 ment) haue boorded nightie Princes Pauies of a great  
 number of Sayle, and then I doubt not but he will  
 chaunge his opinion. But what do I labour to com-  
 mend them, whiche not onely in shewe, and all reason,  
 doe commend themselves, but also are lyke in deedes  
 and effect to pefourme more, then I, in woord or wy-  
 ting can promise for them. Yea rather, I am prouo-  
 ked, at the contemplation of this triumphant spectacle,  
 first to thanke God our mercifull Father, and then to  
 thinke duetifully of our good Quene Elizabeth, by  
 whose vigilant ministerie, care, & prouidence, (drawing  
 as it were, the net for vs, whylest we sleepe) not only  
 the dross of superstition, and base moneys were first a-  
 bolished, the feare of outward warre remoued, rustie  
 armour reiected, and rotten Shipping dispatched out of  
 the way: But also, in place thereof, religion and coyne  
 restored to puritie, the Domesticall and forreigne af-  
 faires of the Realme managed quietly, the land furni-  
 shed with new armour, shot, & munition, abundantly, &  
 this Riuer fraught with these strong and seruicceable  
 Ships.

The bene-  
 fites that  
 God hath  
 giuen this  
 Realme in  
 the Reigne  
 of Quene  
 Elizabeth.

Am. ij.

Ships sufficiently. Whiche so apparant and inestimable benefites, the like whereof this Realme neuer at any one time, (and muche lesse so long time together) hath enjoyed, if any man perceaue not, he is moze then blockishe: if he consider not, he is excedding carelesse: and if he acknowledge not, he is to to vnkinde, bothe to God to her Maiestie, and to his owne Countrie. But here againe, for asmuche as it neither standeth with my present purpose, to depainte out her Maiesties praises, neither it lyeth at all in my power, to set them forth in their true colours (for it requireth an Apelles, to haue Alexander well counterfaieted) I will containe my selfe within these narrowe termes, and tell you the names of these Ships, as they lye in order.

	<i>Bonadventure.</i>	
	<i>Elizabeth Ionas.</i>	
	<i>White Beare.</i>	
	<i>Philip and Marie.</i>	
	<i>Triumpher.</i>	
	<i>Bull.</i>	
	<i>Tygre.</i>	
	<i>Antelop.</i>	
	<i>Hope.</i>	The names of the Quenes Maiesties Ships and Gal- leys.
The	<i>Lyon.</i>	
	<i>Victorie.</i>	
	<i>Marie Rose.</i>	
	<i>Foresight.</i>	
	<i>Cadishe.</i>	
	<i>Swift suer.</i>	
	<i>Aide.</i>	
	<i>Handmaide.</i>	
	<i>Dreade not.</i>	
	<i>Swalowe.</i>	
	<i>Iennet.</i>	
	<i>Barke of Bulloigne.</i>	

Amongst

Amongst all these (as you see) there is but one that beareth her Maiesties name, and yet all these (the Philip and Marie which beareth her sisters name, onely excepted,) hath she (as it is sayd) since the beginning of her happy reigne ouer vs, either wholly built vpon the stocks or newly reedified vpon the olde moaldes. Her highnesse also knowing right well, that,

*Non minor est virtus, quam querere, parta tueri:*

Like vertue it is, to saue that is got:

As to get the thing, that earst she had not.

Hath planted Vponor Castle for the defence of the same. But besides these great ships, three good Galleys lye here on the side, whiche be thus called,

The { Speedwell.  
Trie Right.  
Blacke Galley.

Thus muche of the Hauie: As touching the harbour we it selfe, I haue heard some wishe, that for the better expedition in time of seruice, Some part of this Hauie might ride in some other hauen, the rather bycause it is many times very long befoze a ship can be gotten out of this Riuer into the Sea: In deede I remember, that I haue reade in Vegetius, that the Romanes diuided their Hauie, and harboured the one part at Miseno (neare Naples) vpon the Tyrrhene Sea, and the other part at Rauenna, vpon the Sea Adriaticque, to the end, that when occasion required, they might readily sayle to any part of the woylde without delay, or windlassing: By cause (sayth he) in affaires of warre, celeritie dothe as good seruice, as force it selfe. But for all that, whether the same order be necessarie for vs, or no, whoe thoughe we haue the vse of sundrie Seas, yet we enioy not so large and distant dominions as they helde, it is not our partes to dispute, but their office to determine, whoe for

pm.iiij.

their



their great wisdomne and good feale; bothe can and will provide things convenient, as well for the safetie of the Realme, as for the service of the Realme. And therefore leaving al this matter to the consideration of them that are well occupied at the helme, let vs apply our oares, that we maye nowe leaue the water, and come to the lande at Gillingham.

- After the soudaine departure of king Hardicanutus
1042. the Dane, (whiche died of a surfeit of drinke, taken at a noble mans marriage at Lambhith) the English Nobilitie thought good to take hold of the oportunitie then offered, to restore to the royall dignitie, the issue of king Ethelred, which he in his life had for feare of y Danes, conveyed into Normandie. For which purpose, they addressed messengers to Richard the Duke of Normandie, requiring him to sende ouer Edward the onely sonne (then left) of king Ethelred, and promising to do their indencour to set him in his fathers seate, So that he woulde agree to come accompanied with a smal number of strangers: The which condition was deuised, bothe for their owne excuse and for the yong Princes safetie: For before this time, & after the deth of king Canutus, they had likewise sent for the same Edward, & Alfred (his elder brother y then was on liue) putting them in like hope of restitution, to which request, the duke their grandfather assented, and for the more honourable furniture of their iourney, gaue them to company, diuers yong Gentlemen, of his own Country, whom he ment to make from thenceforth parteners of theyr prosperitie, as they had before tyme been companions of their misfortune: But when they were come into the realme, the Earle Godwine (who sought more the aduancement of his own house to honour, then the restitution of the Englishe bloude to the crowne,) perceiuing that by no meanes he could make a marriage

A barbarous  
crueltie, executed  
vpon  
strangers.

marriage betwene Alfrede (the elder of the two) and Edgith his daughter, and yet, hauing hope, that Edward the younger woulde accept the offer, if he might bring to passe to set the garlande vpon his heade, he quarrelled at the company which came ouer with them, insinuating to the peeres of the Realme, that Alfrede ment (so soone as he should obtaine the crowne) to place in all romes of honour, his Normane Nobilitie, and to displace the Englishe, his owne countrey men. Whiche suspicion, he bet so despely into the heades of many of the Noble men, and especially of his nearest friends and allies, that forthwith (vpon his perswasion) they fell vpon the straungers at Gillingham, and firste killed nyne throughtout the whole number of the company, reseruing on liue eche tenth mā only: And afterwarde, (thinking the remainer to great) tythed the number also, sleaung in the whole, about sixe hundred persons: As for Alfrede (the elder of the yong Princes) they apprehended, and conueyed him to the Isle of Ely, where first they put out his eyes, and afterwarde, moste cruelly did him to death. But this Edward, fearing their furie, escaped their handes, and fled into Normandie: Howbeit, being nowe estsomes (as I sayde) earnestly sollicitated by Godwine, and more saythfully assured by the Noble men, he once againe aduentured to enter the Realme, and taking Godwines daughter to wife, obtained the Crowne, and enioyed it all his life long.

I am not ignoraunt, that Simeon of Durham, and diuers other good wyters, affirme this slaughter to haue bene committed at Gylford in Surrey, and some other (of late tyme, and of lesse note) at Guild downe, a place neare Lamberhirst in the edge of this Shyre: but bycause I finde it expressely reported by Thomas Rudborne, and also the authour of the Chronicle of Couen-

Couentrie, to haue been done at Gillingham, *Iuxta Thameſon*, I ſticke not (being nowe come to that place) to exemplifie it, giuing neuertheleſſe free libertie to euery man, to lay it, at the one, or the other, at his owne free will and pleaſure: Onely my deſire is to haue obserued, that in this one ſtozie, there doe lye ſolded by, bothe the meanes of the deliuerie of this realme of England from the thraldome of the Danes, and the cauſes alſo of the oppreſſion and conqueſt of the ſame by the Normanes: For, as touching the firſt, it pleaſed the Almightye (nowe at length) by this manner of King Hardicanutus death, (whiche I haue ſhelved) to breake in ſunder the Daniſh whip, wherewith he had many yeares together, ſcourged the Engliſh nation, and by the meane of drinke (the Daniſhe delight) to worke the deliuey of the one people, and the exterminion of the other, euen in the miſt of all their ſecuritie, and pleaſaunce: In which behalfe, I can not but note the iuſt iudgement of God, extended againſt thoſe deepe drinkers, and in their example to admoniſhe all ſuch, as doe in like ſort moſt beaſtly abuſe Gods good creatures, to his great offence, the hurte of their owne ſoules and bodies, and to the euill example of other men: For, whereas befoze the arriuall of theſe Danes, the Engliſhe men, or Saxons, vſed ſome temperaunce in drinking, not taking thereof largely, but only at certain great feaſts and chearings, and that in one only waſſailing cup, or boule, which walked round about the boorde at the miſt of the meale, much after that manner of intertainment, whiche Dido ſometime gaue to Aeneas, and is expreſſed by Virgil in theſe verſes.

*Hic Regina grauem auro gemmisq; popoſcit  
Impleuitq; mero pateram, quam Belus, & omnes  
A Belo ſoliti: Tum facta ſilentia tectis,  
Iupiter (hospitibus nam te dare iura loquuntur)*

Exceſſiue  
drinking,  
and how it  
came into  
England.



*Et vos O catum Tirij celebrate fauentes,  
Dixit: Et in mensam laticum libans honorem,  
Primaq; libato summo tenuis attigit ore. &c.*

The Queene commaunds a mightie Bolle,  
Of golde and precious stone  
To fill with wine: whom Belus King  
And all King Belus line  
Was wont to holde: than through them all  
Was silence made by signe,  
O Ioue( quoth she) for thou of hostes  
And gastes both great and small  
(Men say) the lawes haste put: giue grace  
I pray, and let vs all  
O you my Moores nowe do our best,  
These Troians for to chere,  
Thus sayd she, and when grace was done,  
The Bolle in hand she clipt,  
And in the liquor sweete of wine  
her lips she scantly dipt.

But now after the comming in of the Danes, and after such time as King Edgar, had permitted them to inhabite here, and to haue conuersation with his own people: Quassling and carowling so increased, that Didoes sipping was cleane forsaken, and Bitias bowling came in place, of whome the same Poet writeth,

*Ille impiger hausit  
Spumantem pateram, & pleno se prouit auro.*

And he anon,  
The fomie bolle of go'd vpturnd,  
And drewe till all was gon.

So that King Edgar him self, seing (in his own reigne) the great outrage wherevnto it was growne, was compelled to make lawe therfore, and to ordaine drinking measures (by publique Proclamation) dyuing certaine

pn,

nayles

nayles into the sides of their cups, as limits and bounds, which no man (vpon great payne) should be so hardie as to transgresse. But this vice in that short time had take such fast roote, as neyther the restraint of law, nor the expulsio of the first bzyngers in therof, could supplant yet.

Great trou-  
pes of ser-  
uingmen.  
came in  
with the  
Normanes.

For William of Malmesburie (comparing the man-  
ners of the Englishe men, and Normanes together) com-  
playned, that in his time, the Englishe fashion was, to  
sit bibbing, hole houres after dinner, as the Normane  
guise was, to walke and let vp and downe the streates,  
with great traines of idle Seruing men folowing them.  
And I woulde to God, that in our time also we had not  
iust cause to complaine of this vicious plant of vnmea-  
surable Boalling: which whether it be sprung vp out of  
the olde roote, or be newly transported, by some Danish  
enemie to all godly temperaunce and sobrietie, let them  
consider, that with pleasure vse it, and learne in time (by  
the death of Hardicanute, and the expulsio of his people)  
to forsake it: which if they will not, God in time either  
graunt vs the lawe of the Heluetians, whiche prouided  
that no man shoulde prouoke other in dzyinking, or else  
if that may for courtesie be permitted, bycause (as the  
prouerbe is,) *Sacra hac non aliter constant*, yet God (I say)  
wyre by some Edgar, to strike nayles in our cuppes, or  
else giue vs the Greekishe *δύο τ' ἓξ ποτὶ δὲ ἄνδρας*, Cup  
Censors, as I may call them, that at the leasse we maye  
be dzyuen to dzyinke in some manner of measure: For  
it is not sufferable in a Christian Countrie, that men  
shoulde thus labour with great contention, and strine,  
for the maistrie (as it were) to offende God, in so wil-  
full waste of his gracious benefitts,

In this Hystorie is couched also (as I haue already  
telde you) the firste cause of the displeasure receyued  
by the Normanes against this Realme, and consequent-  
ly

by the cause of their inuasion succeeding the same : For, whereas (after this crueltie, executed by the ini-  
 gation of Godwine) it happened Harolde (his sonne) to  
 arryue at Pountion, against his will, by occasion of a  
 soudaine perry or contrarie winde, that arose while he  
 was on seaborde, whether for his owne dispozte onely,  
 as some wyte : or for the execution of the Kings mes-  
 sage, as others say : or of purpose to visite Wilnote  
 and Hacun, his brother and kinsman (as a thirde  
 sorte affirme,) or for what so euer other cause, I will  
 not dispute: But vpon his arriual, taken he was, by  
 Guy the Earle of Pountion : and sente to William  
 the Duke of Normandie, where, being charged with  
 his fathers faulte, and fearing that the whole re-  
 uenge shoulde haue lighted vpon his owne heade, he  
 was dyuen to deuise a shifte for his deliuerance : He  
 put the Duke in remembraunce therfore of his neare  
 kinned, with Edward the King of Englande, And fed  
 him with greate hope and expectation, that Edwards  
 shoulde dye without issue of his body, by reason that he  
 had no conuersation with his wife: So that, if the  
 matter were well and in season scene vnto, there was  
 no doubte (as he perswaded) but that the Duke thzough  
 his owne power, and the ayde of some of the Englishe  
 Nobilitie, might easily after the Kings death, obtaine  
 the Crowne. For the atchieuing wherof, he both vowed  
 the vttermost of his owne help, and vndertoke that his  
 brethren, his friends, and allies also, should do the best of  
 their indeuour : The wise Duke, knowing wel, *Quam*  
*malus sit custos diuturnitatis metus*, How euil a keeper of co-  
 tinuance feare is. And therfore repoling much moze sure-  
 tie in a frendly knot of alliance, thē in a fearful offer, pro-  
 ceeding but onely of a countenaunce, accepted Haroldes  
 offer for some assuraunce of his promise, but yet withall,  
 An. ij. for

The cause  
 of the Con-  
 quest of En-  
 lande.



Harold, the  
King,

for moze safetie, affied him to his daughter, to be taken in marriage : And so, after many princely gifts, and much honoꝛable enterteinement bestowed vpon him, he gaue him licence to depart : But Harolde, being now returned into England, soꝛgetteth cleane, that euer he was in Normandie, and therefore so soone as King Edward was deade, he (violating both the one promise and the other) reiecteth Duke Williams daughter, and setteth the Crowne vpon his owne heade : Hereof followed the battaile at Battel in Suffex, and consequently, the Conquest of this whole Realme and Countrie.

The vncur-  
tesie of the  
English na-  
tion, toward  
straungers.

In con-  
templation whereof, we haue likewise to accuse the olde *ἄετιον*, or rather *μισεῖται*, the inueterate fiercenesse, and cancred crueltie of this our English nation against fozeignes and straungers : which ioyning in this butcherly sacrifice with bloudie Busyris, deserued woꝛthely the reuenging club of heauenly Hercules : whiche fearing (without cause) great harme, that these fewe might bzing vnto them, did by their barbarous immanitie, giue iust cause to a great armie to ouerrunne them : And whiche dreading that by the arriuall of this small troupe of Norman Nobilitie, some of them might lose their honoꝛable roomes and offices, prouoked the wꝛath of God, to sende in amongst them the whole rable of the Norman slauerie, to possesse their goods & inheritances.

Busyris, was  
a tirant that  
sacrificed  
straungers :  
and was  
therefore  
slaine by  
Hercules.

It were woꝛthy the consideration, to call to memorie, what greate Tragedies haue bene stirred in this Realme, by this our naturall inhospitalitie and disdaine of straungers, both in the time of King Iohn, Henrie his sonne, King Edward the seconde, Henrie the sixte, and in the dayes of later memorie : But, since that matter is parergon, and therefore the discourse woulde proue tedious and wearisome, and I also haue bene too long already at Gillingham; I will rather abruptly end it,  
onely

onely wishing, that whatsoeuer note of infamie we  
 haue heretofore contracted, amongst Fo:reigne wy-  
 ters, by this our ferocitie against Aliens, that now at  
 the least (hauing the Light of Gods Gospell before our  
 eyes, and the persecuted partes of his afflicted Church,  
 as Guestes and Straungers in our Countrie) wee so be-  
 haue our selues towards them, as we may both vtterly  
 rubbe out the olde blemishe, and from hencefoorth stave  
 the heaue hand of the iuste Iupiter Hospitalis,  
 whiche, otherwise, must needes light  
 vpon suche stubburne and  
 vncharitable chur-  
 lishnesse.

Nn.iii.

Che-

Our Lady,  
& the Rode  
of Chethā  
& Gilling-  
ham.



I thoughe I haue not hytherto at any time, read any memorabile thing recorde-  
ded in hystorie, touching Chetham it self  
yet, for so muche as I haue often heard  
(and that constantly) reported, a Popish  
illusion done at the place, & for that also  
it is as profitable to the keeping vnder of fained & supersti-  
tious Religio, to renew to minde, the Priestly practises of  
olde time (which are declining to obliuio) as it is pleasat  
to reteine in memorie, the Monuments & antiquities of  
whatsoever other kinde, I thinke it not amisse, to com-  
mit faithfully to wryting, what I haue receiued credi-  
bly by hearing, concerning the Idols, sometime knowen  
by the names, of our Lady, and the Roode of Chetham,  
and Gillingham. It happened (say they) that the  
dead Corps of a man, (lost throught shipwacke belike)  
was cast on land in the Parishe of Chetham, and being  
there taken vp, was by some charitable persons com-  
mitted to honest burial within their Churchyard: which  
thing was no sower done, but our Lady of Chetham,  
finding her selfe offended therewith, arose by night, and  
went in person to the house of the Parishe Clearke,  
(whiche then was in the Strete a good distance from  
the Churche) and making a noyse at his window, awa-  
ked him: This man at the first (as commonly it fareth  
with men disturbed in their rest) demaunded somewhat  
roughly, who was there: But when he vnderstoode by  
her owne aunswere, that it was the Lady of Chetham,  
he chaunged his note, and moste mildely asked y<sup>e</sup> cause  
of her conning: She tolde him, that there was lately  
buried (nere to the place where she was honoured) a  
sinfull person, whiche so offended her eye with his gas-  
tly grinning, that vnles he were remoued, she could not,  
but



but (to the great grieve of good people) withholde her selfe from that place, and ceasse her wonted miraculous working amongst them. And therefore she willed him, to go with her, to the end that (by his helpe) she might take him vp, and cast him againe into the Riuer: The Clerke obeyed, arose, and waited on her toward the Church: but the good Ladie (not wonted to walk) was red wearie of the labour, and therfore was enforced for very want of breath to sit downe in a bushe by the way, and there to rest her: And this place (forsooth) as also the whole track of their iourney, (remaining euer after a greene pathe) the Towne dwellers were wont to shew: Now after a while, they go forward againe, and coming to the Churchyard, digged vp the body, and conueyed it to the water side, where it was first found.

This done, our Ladye shanke againe into her shynne, and the Clerke peaked home to patche vp his broken sleepe, but the corps now estones floated vp and downe the Riuer, as it did before. Whiche thing being at length espyed by them of Gillingham, it was once more taken vp and buried in their Churchyard. But see what followed vpon it, not onely the Roode of Gillingham (say they) that a while before was busie in bestowing Pyracles, was now depriued of all that his former vertue: but also y<sup>e</sup> very earth & place, wher this carcase was laide, did continually, for euer after, settle and sinke downeward.

This tale, receaued by tradition from the Elders, was (long since) both commonly reported & faithfully credited of the vulgar sort: which although happely you shal not at this day learne at euery mans mouth (the Image being now many yeres sithence defaced) yet many of the aged number remember it well, and in the time of darkenesse, *Hac erat in toto notissima fabula mundo.*

But

But here (if I might be so bouldre, as to adde to this fable *ἐπιμύθιον, or Fabula significat*) I would tell you, that (I thought) the Morall and minde of the tale to be none other, but that this Clerkly *μυθολάγης*, this Talewyter, (I say) and fablefonger, being eyther the Fermer, or Owner, of the offrings giuen to our Lady of Chetham, and enuying the common haunte and Pilgrimage to the Roode of Gillingham, (lately erected *Ad nocumentum* of his gayne) deuised this apparition, for the aduancement of the one, and the defacing of the other. For no doubte, if that age had ben as prudent in examining spirits, as it was prone to beleue illusions it should haue found, that our Ladies pathe was some such græne trace of grasse, as we daily behold in þ fields, proceeding in deed of a naturall cause, though by olde wiues, and superstitious people, reckoned to be the daffing places of night Spirites, whiche they call Fayries:) And that this sinking graue, was nothing els, but a false filled pitte, of Maister Clearks owne digging.

The man was to blame, thus to make debate betwene our Lady and her Sonne, but since the whole Religion of Papistrie it selfe, is Theomachia, and nothing els, let him be forgiven, and I will go forward.

Alfred of Beuerley, and Richard of Ciceter, haue mention of a place in East Kent, where Horfa (the Brother of Hengist) was buried, and which euen till their dayes did continue the memorie of his name. We haue in this Shyre a Towne called Hor sinundene, whiche name resolued into Saxon Orthographic, is Hops-gemyn-dene, and soundeth as much as, the Valley of the monument (or memoriall) of Horfa.

But for as much as that lyeth in the Southe part of this Countrie toward Sussex, and for that I read that Horfa was slaine at Aileford, as you shall see

see anone) in an encounter wherein he ioyned with his  
 Brother Hengist again the Britons, which at that time  
 inhabited Kent, it is y<sup>e</sup> moste reasonable to affirme, that  
 he was buried at Horsted a place lying in this Parish,  
 toward Aileford, and nowe yet knowne by the same  
 name, whiche signifieth, the place o<sup>r</sup> steepe of Horse.

Horsted  
 borne in  
 Aileford.

This Horfa, and his Brother Hengist (both whose  
 names be Synonuma, and signifie a Horse) were the  
 Capitaines, and chiefe leaders of the first Saxons that  
 came in aide of King Vortiger, as we haue before  
 shewed: And after the death of Horfa, his Bro-

Hengist &  
 Horfa two  
 famous Ca  
 pitaines;

ther Hengist neuer ceased to warre vppon

the Brittons, till he had driven

them out of Kent, and made

himselfe King, as here,

after in fitte place

we will sur

ther de

clare,

Oo.

Frend-



# Frendsbury, in some Saxon co-

pies *freonderbyping*, that is, the Friendes  
Court: in others, *prinonderbyping*.

A religious  
Skirmish  
betwene the  
Monkes of  
Rochester,  
and the Bre-  
thren of  
Sproude.



It befell in the reigne of King Edward the first, by occasion of a great & long drought of the aire, that the Monkes of Rochester were agreed amongst themselves, to make a soleinne procession from their owne house thorough the citie, and so to Friendsbury on the other side of the water, of a speciall intent and purpose to pray to God for raine. And bycause the day of this their appointed iourney happened to be vehemently boisterous with the winde, the which would not onely haue blowne out their lightes, and tossed their banners, but also haue stopped the mouthes of their Synging men, and haue toiled themselves in that their heauie and mas king attire, they desired lycence of the Maister of Stroud Hospital, to passe through the Orchard of his house, whereby they might bothe ease their company, and saue the glozie of their shewe, whiche otherwise through the iniurie of the weather must needs haue bene greatly blemished. The Maister assented easily to their desire, and (taking it to be a matter of no great consequence) neuer made his brethren of the house priuie thereunto. But they, so soone as they vnderstode of this determination, called to minde that their Hospitall was of the foundation of Gilbert Glanuille, (sometime a Bishoppe of Rochester) betwene whom and the predecessours of these Monkes, ther had been great heates for the erection of the same: and therfore fearing that the Monkes (pretending a procession) intended to attempt

attempt somewhat against their priuileges (as in deede all orders in Papistrie, were exceeding ielous of their prerogatiues) they resolved with all their might to resist them. And for that purpose, they bothe furnished themselves, and procured certaine companions also (whom the Hystorie calleth Ribaldes) with clubbes & battes to assist them, and so (making their ambushe in the Dyche) they awaited the Monkes comming. It was not long, but the Monkes (hauing made all things redy) approached in their battell array, and with banner displayed, and so (minding no harme at al) entred boldly into the house, and throught the house passed into the Dyche, merely chaunting their latine Letaine. But when the Brethren and their Ribaldes had espied them within their daunger, they ranne vpon them, and made it raine suche a shoure of clubbes and coulestaues vpon the Monkes Copes, cowles, & Crownes, that for a while the miserable men knew not what way to turne them. After a time, the Monkes called their wittes and spiritites together, and then (making vertue of the necessity) they made eache man the best shift for himselfe, that they could: some, trauersing their ground, declined many of the blowes, and yet now & then bare off with head & shoulders: others, vsed the staues of their crosses, behauiuing themselves like pretie men: others made pykes of their banner poles: And others (lying in to their aduersaries) wrested their weapons out of their hands: amongst the rest, one (sauiing his charitie) laide lode vpon a married Priest, absolving him (as mine authoz saith) *A culpa*, but not *A pena*: Another, dyane one of the Brethren into a deepe ditch: & a third (as big as any Bul of Basan) espied (at y<sup>e</sup> length) y<sup>e</sup> postern, or back dore of y<sup>e</sup> Dyche, wherat he ran so vehemently w<sup>th</sup> his head & shoulders, y<sup>e</sup> he bare it cleane downe befoze him, and so both escaped

Do. is.

him

Friendsbury  
clubbes.

Edlingham.

Appropriations of  
benefices.

him selfe, and made the way for the rest of his fellowes who also, with all possible haste conveyed them selves out of the iurisdiction of the Hospital, and then (shaking their ears) fel a fresh to their Orgia, I should have said to their former Orisons. After this storme thus blowen (or rather bozn) ouer, I do not meruail if the Whores (as y<sup>e</sup> repozter saith) neuer sought to carrie thir procession through Stroud Hospital for auoiding of y<sup>e</sup> winde, for in deed it could not lightly blow more boisterously out of any quarter. And thus out of this tragical hystorie, arose the bywoord of Friendsbury Clubs (a terme not yet forgot-  
ten. The land of Friendsbury, was long since giuen by Offa the King of Middle England, to Eardulph then Bishop of Rochester, vnder the name of Edlingham *canon appendicys*, although at this day this other beareth countenance, as the more woorthie of the twaine: The benefice of Friendsbury (together with that of Dartford) was at the suite of Bishop Laurence, and by graunt of the Pope, conuerted to an appropriation, one (amongst many) of those monstrous byzthes of couetousnes, begotten by the man of Rome, in the dark night of superstition, and yet suffered to liue in this day light of the Gospell, to the great hinderance of learning, the empouerishment of the ministerie, and the infamie of our profession,

Ro-



# Rocheſter is called in Latine, Do-

*robrenum, Durobrenum, Dorubernia, and Durobri-*

*nis, in Brittiſhe, Dourbryſ, that is to ſay, a*

*ſwiſt ſtreame: in Saxon, hpoſerce-*

*ar tpe & that is, Roſi ciui-*

*tas, Roſes citie, in ſome*

*olde Chartres,*

*Roſi breui.*



Some men, deſirous belike, to ad-  
uaunce the eſtimation of this Citie,  
haue left vs a farre fetched antiqui-  
tie, concerning one pce of the ſame,  
affirming that Iulius Caſar cauſed  
the Caſtle at Rocheſter (as alſo that o-  
ther at Canterbury, and the Towre  
at London) to be builded of common charge: But I, ha-  
uing not hitherto read any ſuch thing, eyther in Caſars  
own Commentaries, or in any other credible Hyltozie,  
dare not abow any other beginning of this citie or caſtle  
then that which I find in Beda, leaſt if I ſhuld aduenture  
as they do, I might receiue as they haue, I meane, The  
iuſt note of more reading & induſtrie, the of reaſon or  
iudgement. And although I muſt, (& wil freely) acknow-  
ledge, that it was a Citie, befoze that it had to name  
Rocheſter (ſo: ſo a man maye well gather of Beda his  
wozdes) yet ſeing that by the iniurie of the ages betwix  
the monuments of the firſt beginning of this place, and of  
innumerable ſuche other, be not come to our handes, I  
had rather in ſuche caſes uſe honeſt ſilence, then raſhe  
ſpeache, and doe pzeferre plaine vnſkill and ignozance,  
befoze vaine lying and pzeſumptuous arrogance. For  
truely, the credite of our Engliſhe Hyltozie, is no one

The Citie.

waye: somuche empayred, as by the blinde boldnesse of some, which taking vpon them to commit it to wytyng, and wanting (either throughe their owne slothfulnesse, or the iniquitie of the time) true vnderstanding of the originall of many things, haue not sticke (without any modestie or discretion) to obtrude newe fantasies and follies of their owne forgerie, for assured trutthes, and vndoubted antiquitie. As for examples of this kinde, although there be at hand, many in number, and the same most fond and ridiculous in matter, yet bicause it should be both odious for the authoers, tedious to the readers, and grievous for my selfe, to enter into them, I will not make enumeration of any: But staying my selfe vpon this general note, I will proceed with the treatise of the place that I haue taken in hand, the which maye aptly (as me thinketh) be broken into foure severall portions. The Citie it selfe, The Castle, the Religious buildings, and the Bridge.

The Citie of Rochester, toke y name (as Beda writeth) of one Rof (or rather Hrof, as the Saxon boke hath it) which was sometyme the Lorde and owner of the place.

This name, Leland supposeth, to haue continuance in Kent till this our time, meaning (as I suspect) Rolf, a familie well inough knowne. What so euer the estate of this Citie was, befoze the coming in of the Saxons, it seemeth, that after their arrivall, the maintenance thereof, depended chiefly vpon the residence of the Bishop, and the religious persons; And therefore no meruaile is it, if the glozy of the place were not at any time very great, Since on the one side the abilitie of the Bishops and the Chanons (inclined to aduance it) was but meane, and on the other side, the calamitie of fyre and swoorde (bent to destroye it) was in maner continual

finuall. For I read, that at suche time as the whole Realme was sundred into particular kingdomes, and eche parte warred for superiozitie, and inlarginge of boundes with the other, Eldred (then King of Mercia) inuaded Lothar the king of this Countrie, and findinge him vnable to resiste, spoyle the whole Shyre, and layd this Citie waste.

680.

The Danes also, whiche in the dayes of king Alfred came out of Fraunce sailed by the ryuer of Medwey, to Rochester, and (beseiging the towne) fortified ouer against it in suche sorte, that it was greatly distressed, and like to haue ben yelded, but that the king (*Paonia manu*) came speedely to the reskewe, and not onely raysed the siege, and deliuered his subiectes, but obtayned also an honourable bootie of hoxses and captiues, that they besiegers had left behind them.

884.

The same people, hauing miserably vered the whole Realme in the dayes of King Ethelred, came at the lasse to this Citie, where they founde the inhabitants ready in armes to resiste them, but they assayled them with suche furie, that they compelled them to saue them selues by flight, and to leaue the place a pray to their enemies: The whiche was somewhat the lesse worthy vnto them, bycause King Ethelred him selfe (not long befoze) vpon a displeasure conceiued against the Bishop, had besieged the Citie, and woulde by no meanes depart thence, befoze he had an hundred pounds in ready money payd him. And these harmes, Rochester receined befoze the time of king William the Conqueroz, in whose reigne it was valued in y<sup>e</sup> booke of Domesday at. 100. s. by the yere, & after whose dayes (besides sundry particular damages done to the citie, during y<sup>e</sup> sieges layd to the castle, (as shall appeare anon) it was muche defaced by a great fire y<sup>e</sup> hapned in the reigne of King Henric y<sup>e</sup> first.

999.

986.

the



1130. the King him ſelf, and a great many of the Nobilitie, and Biſhops being there preſent, and aſſembled for the conſecration, (as they call it) of the great Church of Saint Andrewes, the which was even then newly finiſhed: And it was againe in manner wholly conſumed with flame, about the latter ende of the reigne of King Henric the ſeconde, at which time that newly builded Church was ſoze blaſted alſo: But after all theſe calamities, this Citie was well repaired & ditched about, in the reigne of King Henric the third. As touchinge the caſtle at Rocheſter, although I finde not in wytyng any other foundation therof, then that which I alledged before, & recon to be mere fabulous, yet dare I affirme, that ther was an old Caſtle aboue eight hundzeth yeres agoe, in ſo much as I read, that Ecgbert (a king of Kent) gaue certeine landes within the walles of Rocheſter caſtle, to Eardulfe, then Biſhop of that See: And I coniecture, that Odo (the baſtard brother to king William the Conquerour) which was at the firſt, Biſhop of Borieux in Normandie, and then afterwarde, aduanced to the office of the chiefe Juſtice of Englande, and to the honour of the Earledome of Kent, was eyther the firſt authour, or the beſt benefactour to that which now ſtandeth in ſight: and herevnto I am drawne, ſomewhat by the conſideration of the time it ſelfe, in which many Caſtles were rayſed to keepe the people in awe, and ſomewhat by the regarde of his authoritie, which had the charge of this whole Shyre, but moſt of all, for that I reade, that about the time of the Conqueſt, the Biſhop of Rocheſter receiued lande at Aileſford, in exchange for grounde to bulde a Caſtle at Rocheſter vpon. Not long after which time, when as William Rufus (our Engliſhe Pyrrhus, or Readhead) had ſtepped betwene
1088. his elder brother Robert and the crowne of this realme,
- and

and had given experiment of a fierce and unbzidled gouernment: the Nobilitie (desirous to make a chaunge) arose in armes againste him, and stirred his brother to make inuasion: And to the ende that the King shoulde haue at once many yrons (as the saying is) in the fire to attende vpon, some moued warre in one corner of the Realme, and some in another, But amongst the reste, this Odo betooke him to his castle of Rochester, accompanied with the best, both of the English and y Norman nobilitie: This whē the king vnderstood, he solicited his subiects, & specially the inhabitants of this country, by al faire meanes and promises to assist him, & so (gathering a great armie) besieged the Castle, and strengthened the Bishop and his complices the defendants in suche wise, that in the ende, he and his company were contented to abiure the Realme, and to leade the rest of their life in Normandie. And thus Odo, that many yeres befoze had bene (as it were) a Viceroy, and second person within this realme, was now depriued of al his dignitie, & dzine to kepe residence vpon his benefice, till suche time as Carle Robert (for whose cause he had incurred this daunger (pitying the cause, appointed him gouernour of Normandie his owne countrie. After this, the Castle was much amended by Gundulphus, the Bishop, who (in consideration of a Manor giuen to his S<sup>er</sup>, by King Willia Rufus) bestowed thre score poundes in building that great Towre, whiche yet standeth. And from that time, this Castle continued (as I iudge) in the possession of the Prince, untill King Henrie the first, by the aduice of his Barons, graunted to William the Archebishop of Cant<sup>er</sup>burie and his successors, the custodie, and office of Constable ouer the same, with free libertie to builde a Towre for him selfe, in any part therof at his pleasure. By meanes of which cost done vpon it at that time, the

pp.

Castle

1126.

Caſtle at Rocheſter was muche in the eye of ſuche as were ꝑ authors of troubles ſolowing within the realme ſo that from time to time it had a parte, almoſt in every Tragedie.

1215.

For, what time King Iohn had warre, with his Barons, they gotte the poſſeſſion of this Caſtle, and comitted the defence therof to a noble man, called William Dalbinet, whome the king immediatly beſieged, & (thzough the cowardice of Robert Fitz Walter, that was ſent to reſcue it) after thze monethes labour, compelled him to render the pcece: The next yere after, Lewes (the French Dolphine) by the ayde of the Engliſhe Nobilitie, entered the ſame Caſtle, and toke it by force:

And laſtly, in the reigne of King Henrie the thirde, Simon Mountford, (not long befoze the battaile at Lewes in Suffex) girded the citie of Rocheſter about with a mightie ſiege, and ſetting on fire the wooden bzidge, & a Towze of timber that ſtoode thereon, wanne the firſte gate (oz warde) of the Caſtle by aſſaulte, and ſpoyled the Church and Abbay: But, being manfully reſiſted ſeven dayes together, by the Earle Warren that was within, and hearing ſoudainly of the Kings comming thitherwarde, he prepared to meeete him in perſon, and leſte others to continue the ſiege, all whiche were ſone after put to flight by the kings armie. This warre (as I haue partly ſhewed befoze) was ſpecially moued againſt ſtrangers, whiche during that kings reigne, bare ſuche a ſway (as ſome wzite) that they not onely diſdayned the naturall bozne Nobilitie of the Realme, But did alſo (what in them lay) to abolithe the auncient lawes and cuſtomes of ꝑ ſame. In deede, the fire of that diſpleaſure was long in kindeling, & thezfore ſo much the moze furious, when it bzast ſwzth into flame: But amongſt other things, that miniſtered nourishment therto, this was not the

1251.



the least, that vpon a time it chaunced a Toorneament to be at Rochester, in which the English men, of a set purpose (as it should seme) sorted them selues against the strangers, and so ouermatched them, that following the victoꝝ, they made them with great shame, to fly into the Towne for couert: But I dwel to long (I feare) in these two parts: I will therefore nowe visite the Religious building, and so passe ouer the brydge to some other place.

The foundation of the Church of S. Andrewes in Rochester, was first layd by King Ethelbert (as we haue touched befoze) at suche time as he planted the Bishops chaire in the Citie, and it was occupied by Chanons, till the dayes of Gundulphus, the Bishop, who bycause he was a Monk, and had hearde that it was sometimes storied with Monkes, made meanes to Lanfranc the Archebishop, and by his ayde and authozitie, both builded the Church and Pryorie of newe, threwe out the Chanons, and once moze brought Monkes into their place, following therein the example, that many other Cathedrall Churches of that time had shewed befoze. And this is the very cause, that William of Malmesbury ascribeth to Lanfranc, the whole thanke of all that matter, for in dede bothe he and Anselme his successor, were wonderfully busied in placing Monkes, and in diuorcing Chanons, and Secular Priests from their wiues, the whiche (in contempte) they called, Focalia, no bettter then White kerchiefes, or kitchenstufte: although bothe the law of God maketh the accōplement honozable amongst al mē, & the law of this countrie had (without any checke) allowed it in priests, til their own time: For Henrie of Huntingdon writeth plainely, that Anselme in a Synode, at London, *Prohibuit sacerdotibus uxores, ante non prohibitas* Forbad Priests their

S. Andrews  
Church in  
Rochester.

604.

1080.

Priests had  
wiues, in  
England, of  
olde time.

pp. 11.

their

1102. their wiues whiche were not forbidden befoze. And William of Malmesburie affirmeth, that he there decreed, *Ne in posterum filij presbyterorum sint heredes ecclesiarum patrum suorum*, That from thencefoorth Priestes sonnes shoulde not be heires to their fathers benefices. Whiche I note shortly, to the end, that men shoulde not thinke it so straunge a matter (in this Realme) for Priestes to haue wiues, as some penitish Papistes goe about to persuaide. But to return to Gundulphus, from whom I am by occasion digressed: he (as I said) redified the great Church at Rochester, erected the Pryorie, and where as he found but halfe a dozein secular Priestes in the Church at his comming, he neuer ceased, till he had brought together at the leaste thre scoze Monkes into the place. Then remoued he the dead bodies of his predecessours, and with great solemnitie, translated them into this new worke: and there also Lanfranc was presented with his purse, and of his owne charge incoffened the body of Paulinus (the thirde Bishop of Rochester, who had left there the Pall of the Archebischopricke of Yorke, that was not recovered long after) in curious worke of cleane silver, to the whiche shryne there was afterwarde (according to the superstitious manner of those times) muche concourse of people, and many oblations. Besides this, they bothe ioyned in suite to the King, and not onely obtained restitution of sundry the possessions withholden from the Church, but also procured by his liberalitie and example, newe donations of many other landes & priuileges besides. To be short, Gundulphus (ouerlining Lanfranc) neuer rested building & beging, tricking & garnishing, till he had aduanced this his creature, to the iust wealth, beantie, and estimation, of a right Popish Pryorie. But God (who moderating all things by his diuine prouidence) shewed him selfe
- 1087.

selfe alwayes a seuerer visitour of these irreligious Synagogues) God (I say) set fire on this building twice with in the compasse of one hundred and fiftie yeares after the erection of the same: and furthermore suffered such a discord to arise betwene Gilbert Glanville, the Bishop of Rochester, and the Monks of this house, that he for displeasure bereaued them, not onely of all their goods, ornaments, and writings, but also of a great part of their landes, possessions and priuileges: and they bothe tumultuously fled in suite to Rome for remedie, and were diuised (for maintenance of their expences, to coine the siluer of Paulinus his Shryne into ready money which thing turned bothe to the great empouerishing of their house, and to the vtter abasing of the estimation and reuerence of their Church: for that (as in daide it commonly falleth out amongst the simple people, that are mucheled by the sense) the honour and offering to this their Saint, ended and dyed together, with the gay Clozie and State of his Tumbe.

By this meanes therefore, Gilbert became so hated of the Monks, that when he died, they committed him obscurely to the ground without ringing of Bell, Celebration of service, or dooing of any other funerall Obsequies. But to these their calamities, was also added one other great losse, suffered by the warres of King Iohn, who in his siege against the Castle of Rochester, so, spoiled this Church and Pryorie; that (as their owne Chronicles repozte) he left them not so muche as one poyre Pyre to stand on their Altar.

It was nowe highe time therefore, to deuise some way, whereby the Pryorie and Church of Rochester, might be, if not altogether restored to the auncient wealth and estimation, yet at the least somewhat relieved from this penurie, nakednes, and abiectiō. And

pp. iij.

there



1256.

Saint Wil-  
liam of Ro-  
chester.

therefoze, Laurence of Saint Martines, the Bishop of Rochester, perceiving the common people to be somewhat drawne (by the fraude of the Monkis) to thinke reuerently of one William, that lay buried in the Church, and knowing well that there was no one way so commodious to gain, as the aduancement of a Pilgrimage procured at the Popes Court, the canonization of that man, with indulgence to all suche as would offer at his Tumbe, vnderpopping by meane of this netwe Saint, some manner of reuerent opinion of the Church, which before, through defacing the olde Bishops thyrne, was declined to naught. But to the ende that it may appeare, to what hard shift of Saints these good Fathers were then driuen, and how easily the people were then deluded, you shal heare out of *Nona Legenda* it self, what great man this Saint William of Rochester was. He was by birth, a Scot, of Perthe (nowe commonly called Saint Johns Towne) by trade of life a Baker of bread, and therby got his living, in charitie so abundant, that he gaue to the poore the tenth loafe of his workmanship, in zeale so seruent, that in vowe he promised, & in dede attempted, to visite the holy land (as they called it) & the places where Christ was conuersant on earth: in whiche iourney, as he passed through Kent, he made Rochester his way, where, after that he had rested two or thre dayes, he departed toward Canterbury: But ere he had gone farre from the Citie, his seruant that waited on him, led him (of purpose) out of the high way, and spoiled him both of his money and life. This done, the seruaunt escaped, and the Maister (because he died in so holy a purpose of minde) was by the Monkis conueyed to Saint Andrewes, laid in the quyre, and promoted by the Pope, as you heard from a poore Baker, to a blessed Party. Here (as they say) shewed he miracles plentifully, but certein it is, that madde folkes offered

red

red vnto him liberally, euen vntill these latter tymes, in whiche, the beames of Gods trueth, shining in the heartes of men, did quite chafe away, and put to flight, this and suche other grosse clondes, of will worship, superstition, & idolatrie. Besides this Pryorie (which was valued by the Commissioners of the late suppression, at .486. pounds by yeare) there was none other religious building in Rochester) onely I read, that Gundulphus (the Bishop before remembred) builded there an Hospitall without the East gate, whiche he called Saint Bartilmewes.

Now therfore am I come to the Saint Bartholmewes Hospitall Bridge ouer Medway, not that alone which we presently beholde, but an other also, muche more auncient in time, though lesse beautifull in woork, whiche neither Rochester Bridge both the olde, & the newe. stood in the selfe place where this is, neither yet verie farre off, for that crossed the water ouer against Stroud Hospitall: and this latter is pitched some distance from thence toward the South, and somewhat nearer to the Citie walle, as to a place more fitte, bothe for the fastnes of the soile, and for the breaking of the swiftnes of the streame, to builde a Bridge vpon. That olde woork, (being of timber Building) was spered by Simon the Earle of Leycester, in the time of King Henrie the third, as hath already appeared: and not fully twentie yeares after, it was bozne away with the fle, in the reigne of King Edward his Sonne. Wherefore, least that as the frost and flame, hath already consumed the thing it selfe: so the canker of time should also deuoure all memorie thereof, I haue thought mete to impart such antiquities, as I haue found concerning that bridge, wherof the one was taken out of a booke (somtime) belonging to the late woorthie and wise Counsellour, Doctor Nicholas Wotton, and whiche he had exemplified out of an auncient monument of Christes Church in Cantebury, bearing this Title,

Me-

## Memorandum de Ponte Roffensi. &amp;c.

- I Episcopus Roffensis debet facere primam peram de ponte Roffensi. & debet inuenire tres sullines. & debet plantare tres virgatas super pontem. Et hoc debent facere Borstal, Cukelstan, Frensburie, & Stoke.
- 2 Secunda pera debet habere tres sull. & debet plantare unam virgatam: Et hoc debent homines de Gillingham & de Chetham.
- 3 Episcopus Roffensis debet facere tertiam peram, & debet sull. & plantare duas virgatas & dimid. Et hoc debetur de Halling, Trockescline, Mallung, Southflete, Stane, Pinen-dene & Faleham.
- 4 Quarta pera debet tres sull. & plantare tres virgatas. Et hoc debent homines de Borgham de sex sull. & de Woldham cum Roberto Bisset & socijs suis, & cum Roberto Neue de trib. sull. de Althe una sull. de Henberst dimid. sull. de Honden quartam partem unius sull. de Cusington dimid. sull. de Boneheld dimid. sull. De Farleg unam sull. De Esbles, viginti quinque acres: de Theiston unam sull. De Lofe unam sull. De Lillinton, duas sull. De Stokebury, duas sull. De Ghselardland, de Sinelond, de Dalelond. De Leckebundlond, De Horsted. De Chelk.
- 5 Quinta pera pertinet ad Archiepiscopum. Et debet tres sull. & plantare quatuor virgat. Et hoc debetur de Wroteham, Nede stane, Woteringbery, Netherlestede, Pecham, & altera Pecham, Heselholt, Mereworh, Leyborne, Swaneton, Offeha, Dictone, Westerham.
- 6 Sexta pera pertinet ad Hundredum de Heyburne. & debet sull. & plantare .4. virgatas: & hoc debent homines de Boxele, scilicet de .7. sull. & dimid. sed contradicunt. Dimid. sull. de Dethling. unam sull. & Dimid. & quartam partem unius Thornham. 2. sull. & tertiam, quam contradicunt: De Aldington unam sull. & aliam, quam contradicunt: De Stokebery



Stokebery. 2. full. de Eilnothington. 2. full. de Bicknore. i. full. de  
Widnesfelle. i. full. de Holmgeburne 6. full. de quibus Godinton  
debet 2. full. & Bocton Archiepiscopi dimid. full. de Heberton  
cum Frensted. i. full. de Lhed. 3. full. de Herietesham cum Li-  
tlewrotha 2. full. de Wrenstede dimid. full. de Wytheling cū Ea-  
stelne. i. full. de Lenham 4. full. & dimid. de Longele cum O-  
tringdene 2. full. & dimid. de Eastlenham 2. full. de Boctone  
Baueilingham. i. full. de Halecumb 2. full. & dimid. quam con-  
tradiciunt. de Farburn dimid. full. & dimid. quam contradiciunt.  
de Suthone 7. full. & dimid. de Otteham 1. full. de Witherinton  
dimid. full. Notandum, quod ad 6. full. de Holmgehorne de-  
bet Boctone dimid. full. Godinton 2. full. Buccherst dimid.  
Iug. Wibendene & Hokebery dimid. Iug. Wythyherst 1. Iuger.  
Herindene dimid. Iuger. Hallebroc & Herebertest dimid. Iu-  
ger. Bresing 3. Iug. Beauerepar dimid. Iuger. Stanburne &  
Thrumsted dimid. Iug. Riple dimid. Iuger. Bradeestrete dimid.  
Iuger. Brechedene quartam partem unius Iuger. Simon de  
porta 5. acras. Gilebertus de Thrumstede 15. acras. Terra  
Ospeck 5. acras. Thomas supra montem 10. acras. Sara de  
Dene, Robertus de Swandene cum socijs 45. acras. Bradherst  
4. Iuger. Huking dimid. Iug. Wodaton. i. Iug. Herst. i. Iuger.  
Heyborne dimid. Iug. Lareye dimid. Iug. Grenewey. i. Iug.  
Southgrenewey. i. Iug. Gerin cum socijs dimid. Iug. Terra Ia-  
cobi de Hamye dimid. Iuger. Cotenetun dimid. Iug. Nutema-  
mestowe, & terra Bellards, dimid. Iug. Sheldesbourn dimid.  
Iug. Snade quartam partem. Worham 3. acras. Bode 5. a-  
cras. Simon Cockel 25. acras. Heredes Thome de la Dane.  
5. acras. Walterus Larfone 5. acras. Wilhelmus Clue 10. acras.

Septima, & octaua pera, pertinent ad homines de Hoo. Et  
debent sex full. & plantare 4. virgat. & dimid.

Nonapera pertinet ad Archiepiscopum, & debet 3. full  
& plantare 4. virgat. Et hoc debetur de  
Cliue, Heigham, Deninton, Melton, Hlidesdon, Mepeham,

*Snodslond, Bearlinges,*

*Peadelesworthe, &*

*de omnibus hominibus in eadem valle,*

The other antiquitie I founde in an olde volume of Rochester Librarie, collected by Ernulfus the Bishop, and entituled, *Textus de Ecclesia Rossensi*: in whiche, that whiche concerneth this purpose, is to be read bothe in the Saxon, (or aunient Englishe) tongue, and in the Latine also, as hereafter followeth.

**The**

This is the Bridgewoorke at Rochester.

Dis is þære bpicægeþeone on hþofecæstnes

Here be named the landes, for the which men shall  
Heþ synðon genamod þa land. þe man hi of scæl

woorke. First the Bishop of the Citie taketh on

þeonecæn; æneft þære bungebiscop fæhð on I.

that end to woorke the land peere: and three  
þone eapm to þeocene þa land þeþan. 7 þþeo

yardes to plancke: and 3. plates to laye: that

gýpðæ to þillianne. 7 iij. syllæ to lýccanne; þ

of  
is from Borstall, and from Cuckstane, and from  
is of bopcstealle. 7 of Cucclestane. 7 of fpi-

Frendþyry, and Stoke,  
nonðesþýpiz. 7 of Stoces

Then the second peere belongeth to Gyllingham,  
Ðanne seo opper þeþ gebýpð to gýllingeþam. 2

and to Chetham, and one yarde to plancke. and 3.  
7 to Cætham. 7 an gýpðæ to þillianne. 7 iij.

plates to laye.  
syllæ to leccanne;

Then the thirde peere belongeth againe to the same Bishop, 3.  
Ðonne seo þriððe þeþ gebýpð eft þam biscope. 3.

299.

and



and three yardes lacking a halfe,  
 and two yardes and a half, to planke, and 3 plates  
 7 þriððe heaf gýrð to þillianne. 7.iii. syllas  
 from  
 to laye, of halling and of Trosclyf:  
 to leccenne. of healingan. 7 of ʒnotesclius  
 and of mallung, and of Fleete, and of Stone. and  
 7 of mealligan. 7 of flioce. 7 of Stane. 7  
 Fakham  
 of pyndene, and of falkenham.  
 of pundene, 7 of falchenham;

Then is the fourth peere the Kinges and 3<sup>r</sup>  
 4. Donne isseo feorðe pær þær cinger. 7 feorðe

yardes and a halfe to planke, and 3 plates to laye,  
 halp gýrð to þillianne. 7.iii. syllas to leccanne.

Hundreth  
 of Alesford, and of all that Lathe that therevnto  
 of æglesforda. 7 of eallan þam læpe þe þe ʒto  
 men vpon the hill, Okeley,  
 lyeth, and of the uphille. and of Acley, and of  
 liþ. 7 of upanhýlle. 7 of Aclea. 7 of þam

Smalland, and of Cosyngton, and of Dudlande,  
 Smalanland. 7 of Cusintune. 7 of dubeslande.

and of Gisleardsland, and of Woldham, and of  
 7 of Gýrleapderlande. 7 of puldeham. 7 of

Burham, and of Acclesse.  
 burham. 7 of Acclesse.

and

and of Horstede, and of Farley, and of Tes-  
 7 of horsstede. 7 of feapnleze. 7 of tep-

ton, and of Chalke, and of Henbyrst, and of  
 stane. 7 of Cealce. 7 of hennhyfste. 7 of

Edon.

Edune;

Then is the fiste peere the Archebishops,  
 Donne is seo fiste per þær Arcebiscopef.

5.

to Wrotham, and to Maydstone, and to  
 to pnoteham. 7 to Maxhamstane. 7 to

Wateringbyrie, and to Nettlested, and to the  
 poppingebynan. 7 to Nettlestede. 7 to þam

two Peckams, and to Haselholte, and to Mere-  
 tþam Peccham. 7 to haselholte. 7 to Maxpan-

worth, and to Layborne, and to Swanton,  
 pþrþe. 7 to Lillanbupnan. 7 to Spanatune.

and to Ofham, and to Dytton, and to Westerham,  
 7 to Offaham. 7 to Dictune. 7 to pester-

and foure yarde to plancke, and 3. plates to  
 ham. 7 iij. gýrða to þillanne. 7 iij. Sýlle to

leccanne;  
 laye.

29.ij.

Then

6 Then is the ſixte peere to Holingborne,  
 Donne iſ ſyo ſeoxte per to holingaburnan,

and to all that Lath, And foure yardeſ to plancke  
 ⁊ to eallan þam laþe. ⁊ iiij. gýrða to þellene.

and foure plateſ to laye.  
 ⁊ iiij. ſylla to leccenne;

7.8. Then is the ſeuenthe, and the eight peere  
 Donne iſ ſyo ſyoutepe. ⁊ ſyo eahtepe per.

to the men of Hoo to woorke: And foure  
 to hopapan land to pýncenne. ⁊ fýfte

yardeſ and a halfe to plancke: and ſixe plateſ to  
 healf gýrða to þillanne. ⁊ vj. ſylla to  
 laye.  
 lýccanne.

9. Then is the nynte peere the Archebiſhop,  
 Donne iſ ſyo nigapa per þaſ ſeþcebiſcop eſ.

that is the land peere at the Weſt ende: to  
 þiſ ſyo land per æt þam feſt ænde; to  
 Biſhopſ cliffe

Elete: and to hiſ cliffe: and to Higham: and to  
 Eliote. ⁊ to hiſ clýfe. ⁊ to hehham. ⁊ to

Denton: and to Mylton: and to Ludſdowne:  
 Benetune. and to Melantune. and to hludeſdune.



and to Mepham: and to Snodland:  
and to Meapeham. and to Snodilande.

and to Berling. and to Paddelfworthe: and  
and to beplingan. and to peablespynde. and

to all that valley men: and foure yarden to plancke: and  
ealla ða ðæneþaru; and iiii. gýrða to ðillianne. and

three plates to laye;  
þryðo sylle to leccanne;

*Hac descriptio demonstrat aperte, unde debeat  
pons de Roucestre restaurari, quotiens fuerit  
fractus.*

*Primum, eiusdem Ciuitatis Episcopus incipit operari in  
orientali brachio primam peram de terra: deinde tres vir-  
gatas plancas ponere, & tres sulinas. i. tres magnas trabes  
supponere: Et hoc faciet de Borchastalle, & de Cuclestana  
& de Freondebiria, & de Stoeche.*

*Secunda pera pertinet ad Gillingeham, & ad Carham: &  
vnam virgatam plancas ponere, & 3. sulinas supponere.*

*Tertia pera pertinet iterum ad Episcopum eiusdem ciui-  
tatis, qui debet 2. virgatas & dimid. plancas ponere: & 3.  
sulinas supponere: & hoc fiet de Heallinges, Trottescline,  
Meallinges, Suthfleotes, Stanes, Pinnendene, & Falceham.*

*Quarta pera pertinet ad Regem, & debet 3. virgat. &  
dimid. plancas ponere: & 3. sulinas supponere: Et hoc fiet de  
Eslefforda, & de toro illo lesto quod ad illud maneriū pertinet:  
& de supermontaneis, & de Aclea, & de Smalaland, & de  
Cafortune, & de Dudefland, & de Gisleardes land, & de Wul-  
deham, & de Burham, & de Acleffe,*

*Horsteda,*

Horsteda, Fearnlega, Terstane, Cealca, Henhersta, & de Hathdune.

5. Quinta pera est Archiepiscopi, & debet 4. virgat. plan-  
cas ponere, & 3. sulinas summittere : & hoc debet fieri de  
Wrotham, Madestana, Oterwigaberiga, Netlesteda, dua-  
bus Peccham, Haselholt, Marewurtha, Lilleburna, Swana-  
tuna, Offeham, Dieltuna, & Westerham.

6. Sexta pera debet fieri de Holingburna, & de toto illo laesto  
quod ad hoc pertinet : 4. virgat. plancas ponere, & 3. sulinas  
supponere.

7.8. Septimam & octauam peram, debent facere homines de  
Hon. & 4. & dimid. virgat. plancas ponere, & sex sulinas  
supponere.

9. Nona pera, qua ultima est, in occidentali brachio, est ite-  
rum Archiepiscopi : 4. virgat. plancas ponere : & tres sulinas  
summittere : Et hoc debet fieri de Northsleta, Clina, Heah-  
ham, Denituna, Meletuna, Hludesduna, Meapeham, Sno-  
diland, Berlinges, Peaddleswrthe, & de omnibus illis homini-  
bus, qui manent in illa valle.

Et sciendum est, quod omnes ille suline qua in ponte  
illo ponentur, tanta grossitudinis debent esse, ut bene  
possint sustinere, omnia gravia pondera superiacen-  
tium plancarum, & omnium de super transeunti-  
um rerum.

By these it may appeare, that this auncient bidge  
consisted of nyne Arches, or peres, & contained in length,  
about twentie and sire roddes, or yardes, as they be  
here termed, Toward the reparation and maintenance  
wherof, diuers persons, parcels of lands, and townships,  
(as you see) were of dutie bounde to bring stufte, & to be-  
stow both cost & laboꝝ in laying it : This dutie grew, ey-  
ther by tenure, or custome, or both : & it seemeth, that ac-  
cording

ding to the quantitie and proportion of the Land to bee charged, the carriage also was either more or lesse.

For here is expresse mention, not of Townes and Manors only, but of Pokes and Acres also, whiche were contributozie to the aide of carrying, pitching, and laying of piles, planks, and other great timber. And here (by the way) it is to be obserued, that so much of the worke as ariseth of stone and earth, is called, *Pera*, of the Latine word, *Petra*: that the great ground posts, plates, or beames, be termed (*Sullina*) of the olde Saxon word (*Sylle*) whiche we yet every where knowe by the name of a Ground Siller. And that the Tables, or Boordes, whiche are laide ouer them, are named (*Plancke*) or Plankes, as we yet also in our bulgar language doe sound it.

But now in our time, by reason that diuers Landes are purposely giuen to mainteine the newe Bridge, all this auncient dueitie of reparation is quite and cleane forgotten, although by the statute 21. and 2. the foresaid landes remaine liable, as before, yea and the newe Bridge it selfe also (for want of the execution of that, or some other suche politique way of maintenance) bothe presently lacketh helpe, and is like hereafter (if remedie in time be not applied) to decline to great ruine and decay: Whiche thing is so much the more to be foresene, and pittied, as that the worke is to the founder a Noble monument, to this Citie a beautifull ornament, and to the whole Countrie a great benefite, commoditie, and easement.

Of this latter worke (being not muche aboue eight score yeres of age) Syr Robert Knolles (a man aduanced by valiant behauiour, and good seruice vnder King Edward the third, from a common Souldiour, to a most commendable Capitaine) was the first Authour: who after that he had bene sent Generall of an armie into

Ar,

Fraunce,

Syr Robert  
Knolles a  
valiant Cap-  
itaine.



Fraunce, and there (in despite of all their power) had  
 driuen the people like sheepe before him, wasting, bur-  
 ning and destroying, Townes, Castles, Churches, Mo-  
 nasteries, and Cities, in suche wise and number, that  
 long after in memorie of his acte, the sharpe points and  
 Cable endes of ouerthrowne Houses and Pynters,  
 were called Knolles Spiders: he returned into England,  
 and meaning some way to make himselfe as well belo-  
 ued of his Countrie men at home, as he had been euery  
 way dread and feared of Straungers abroade, by great  
 policie maistred the Riuer of Medwey, and of

his owne charge made ouer it the goodly

woork that now standeth, with a chap-

pel & Chauntrie at the end, & di-

ed ful of yeares in the midst

of the Reigne of King

Henrie the

fourth.

Stroude

# Stroude, aunciently called Strodes,

of the Saxon worde (Strogo) which signifieth  
Scattered, bicause it was a Hamlet of a few  
houses, that lay scattered from  
the Citie,



About the beginning of the Reigne of The Hof-  
king Henrie the third, Gilbert Glā- pitall.  
uille, the Bishop of Rochester, (of  
whom you haue already heard) fou-  
ded an Hospitall at Stroude, whiche  
he dedicated to the name of the bles-  
sed Virgin, and endowed with liue,

lyphode to the valne of fiftie and two pounds by yeare.

A name, or familie of men, sometime inhabiting The begin-  
Stroude (saith Polydore) had tailes clapped to their ning of this  
breeches by Thomas Becket, for reuenge and punish- scotting by  
ment of a dispite done to him, in cutting of the taile of word, Ken-  
his horse: The Autho<sup>r</sup> of the new Legend saith, that af- tishe tailes.  
ter Saint Thomas had excommunicated two Brothers,  
(called Brockes) for the same cause, that the Dogges  
vnder the table would not once take Bread at their  
handes. Suche (belike) was the vertue of his curse,  
that it gaue to brute beastes, a discretion and know-  
ledge of the persons, that were in daunger of it. Boe-  
tius (the Scotishe Chronicler) writeth, that the lyke  
plague lighted vpon the men of Midleton in Dorset-  
shyre: Who, bicause they threwe fische tailes in great  
contempt at Saint Augustine, were bothe themselves  
and their posteritie, stricken with tailes, to their perpe-  
tuall infamie and punishment. All whiche their Re-  
poytes (no doubt) be as true, as Ouides Hystorie of Dia-  
na, that in great angre bestowed on Acteon a Deares  
head, with mightie bwole anthlers.

Suche

Angle  
Queene.

Suche are the Western men bound (as you see) to Polydore, who taking the miracle from Augustine, applyeth it to S. Thomas, and removing the infamous revenge from Dorsetshire, laiceth it upon our men of Kent. But little is Kent, or the whole English Nation beholding, either to him, or his fellows, who (amongst them) haue brought upon vs this ignominie & note with other Nations abroad, that many of them beleue as verely, & we haue long tales, & be monsters by nature, as other men haue their due partes and members in vsual number. Polydore (the wisest of the company) fearing that issue might be taken upon the matter, ascribeth it to one speciall stocke and familie, whiche he nameth not, and yet (to leaue it the more vncertain) he saith, that, that family also is woyn out long since, and sheweth not when: And thus affirming, he cannot tel of whome, nor when, he goeth about in great earnest (as in sundrie other things) to make the world beleue he cannot tell what: he had forgotten the Lawe whereunto an Historian is bound, *Ne quid falsi audeat, ne quid veri non audeat*. What he should be bolde to tell the trueth, and yet not so bolde as to tell a lye. Howbeit his Historie (without all doubte) in places not blemished with suche folies, is a woorthie work, but since he inserteth them many times without all discretion, hee must of the wiser sorte be read ouer with great suspicion, & wearines: For, as he was by office Collector of the Peter pence to the Popes gaine and lucre, so sheweth he himselfe throughout by profession, a couetous gatherer of lying fables, fained to aduance the Popish Religion, Kingdome, and Myter.

Hal-



# Halling, in *Saxon* haling, that 317

is to lay, the hol some lowe place, or  
Meadowe.



Have sene in an auncient booke contei-  
ning the donations to the See of Roche-  
ster, collected by Ernulphus the Bishop  
there, & intituled *Textus de Ecclesia Ros-*

Many  
kings at  
once, in  
Kent.

*senfi* a Chartre of Ecgbert (the fourthe  
christened King of Kent) by the which he

gaue to Dioram, the Bishop of Rochester, ten plough-  
landes in Halling, together with certeine Denes in the  
Weald, or common wood. To the which Chartre, ther is  
(amongst others) the subscription of Ieanbert the Arch-  
bishop, and of one Heahbert, a King of Kent also, as is in  
that booke tearmed. Which thing I note for two speci-  
all causes, the one to shewe, that aboute that age there  
were at one time in Kent, moe Kinges then one: The o-  
ther, to manifest and set fourth the manner of that time  
in signing & subscribing of Deedes and Charters, a fashi-  
on much differēt from the insealing that is vsed in these  
our dayes: and as touching the firste, I my selfe woulde  
haue thought, that y name King, had in that place been  
but onely the title of a second Magistrate (as Prorex, or  
viceroy) substituted vnder y very King of the countrie  
for administratiō of iustice in his aide or absence: sauing  
that I read plainly in an other Chartre, of another do-  
nation of Essingham (made by Offa the king of Mercia,  
to Eardulfe, the Bishop of the same See) that he proceeded  
in that his gift, by the consent of the same Heahbert, the  
king of Kent, and that on Sigacred also (by the name of  
*Rex dimidie partis provincie Cantuariorum*) both confir-  
med it by wyting, and gaue possession by the deliuey of  
a clob of earth, after the maner of seison that we yet vse.

778.

764.

Rr. iij.

Neither

762

The olde  
manner of  
Signing, &  
Sealing, of  
deedes.

Neither was this true in Heahbert onely, for it is evident by sundrie Chartres, extant in the same Booke, that Ealbert the King of Kent, had Ethelbert, (another Binge) his fellowe, and partener: who also in histime was ioyned in reigne with one Eardulfe, that is called, *Rex Cantuariorum*, as well as hee. So that, for this season, it should seme, that cyther the kingdome was diuided by discent, or els, that the title was litigious, and in controuersie, though our hystories (so farre as I haue seene) haue mencion of neyther. This old manner of signing and subscribing, is (in my fantasie) also not vnworthy the obseruation: wherein we differ from our auncestors, the Saxons, in this, that they subscribed their names (commonly adding the signe of the crosse) together with a great number of witnelles: And we, for more suertie, both subscribe our names, put our scales, and vse þ help of testimonie besides. That former fashion continued throughout, vntill the time of the conquest by the Normans, whose manner by litle and litle at the length preuailed amongst vs. For the first sealed Charte in England, that euer I read of, is that of King Edward the confessor to the Abbey of Westminster: who (being brought vp in Normandie) brought into this Realme, that, and some other of their guises with him: And after þ comming of William the Conquerour, the Normans liking their owne countrie custome (as naturally all nations doe) relected the maner that they found here, and retheyned their owne, as Ingulphus, the Abbat of Croyland, which came in with the conquest, witnesseth, saying: *Normanni, cheuographorum confectiōē, cum crucib. aureis, & alijs signaculis sacris, in Anglia firmari solitam, in cera impressionem mutant, modumq̃ scribendi anglicum reiciunt.* The Normans, doe chaunge the making of writings, which were wont to be firmied in Englande with Cresses of golde, and other holie signes into the

prin

printing with wax: and they reiect also the manner of the English wyting. Howbeit, this was not done all at once, but it increased & came forward by certen steps & degrees, so y first and for a season, the King onely, or a few other of y Nobilitie besides him, vled to seale: Then the Noble men (for the most parte) and none other, whiche thinge a man may see in the Hystorie of Battell Abbie, where Richard Lucy chiefe Justice of Englande, in the time of King Henrie the second, is reported to haue blamed a meane subiect, for y he vled a priuate seale, when as that pertained (as he saide) to the King, and Nobilitie onely. At which time also (as Iohn Rolfe noteth it) they vled to ingraue in their seales, their owne pictures, and counterfeits, couered with a longe coate ouer their armours. But after this, the Gentlemen of the better sort tooke vp the fashion, and because they were not all warriours, they made seales of their feneral cotes, or shields of armes, for difference sake, as the same autho: reporteth. At the length, about the time of King Edward the third, Seales became very common, so that not onely suche as bare armes, vled to seale, but other men also fashioned to them selues, signetes of their owne deuise, some taking the letres of their owne names, some flowers, some knots, & flowzishes, some birds, or beastes, and some other things, as we now yet daile beholde in vse.

I am not ignoraunt, that some other manner of sealings besides these, hath bene hearde of amongst vs, as namely that of King Edward y third, by which he gaue, To Norman the Hunter, the hop and the hop towne, withe all the boundes vp side downe:

And in wittnes, that yt was soothe,

He bitt the wax withe his song toothe.

And y of Alberic de veer also, conteining the donation of Hatfield, to y which he affixed a shott black hasted knife,  
like



like vnto an olde halpenny whittle, in stead of a seale : and such others, of which happely I haue seene some, & heard of moe. But all that notwithstanding, if any man shall thinke, that these were receiued in common vse and custome, and that they were not rather the deuises and pleasures of a few singular persons, he is no lesse deceaued, then such as deeme euery Chartre and writing, that hath no seale annered, to be as ancient as the Conquest : wheras (indeede) sealing was not commonly vsed tyl the time of King Edward the third, as I haue already tolde you.

1184.

Thus farre, by occasion of this olde Chartre, I am straied from the hystorie of Halling, of which I fynde none other report in wytyng, saue that in the reigne of King Henrie the second, Richard þ Archbishop of Canterburie, and immediat successour to Thomas the Archtray, tour of this Realme, ended his lyfe, in the mansion house there, which then was, and yet continueth, parcell of the possessions of the See of Rochester : The circumstance and cause, of which his death and departure, I

will reserue tyll I come to Wrotham,

where I shall haue iust occasion  
to discouer it.

Aylefford

¶ Ailefforde, or Eilefforde, called  
 in some Saxon copies, Egelefford, that is the Foorde,  
 or passage ouer the Riuer Egle, or Eyle: In others  
*Angelefford, which is, the passage of the Angles,*  
 or Englishe men. It is falsly tearmed  
 of some, Alencester, Allepord,  
 Aelstrea, by deprauation of  
 the writers of the sun-  
 drie copies (as I sus-  
 peet) and not o-  
 therwise.



¶ Within a few yeares after the arri-  
 uall of the Saxons, the Britons (per-  
 ceiving that Vortiger their Kinge  
 was withdrawne by his wyfe from  
 them, and drawne to the parte of  
 their enemies) made election of Vor-  
 timer his sonne, for their Lorde and  
 leader: by whose manhood and prowesse, they in short  
 time so preuailed against the Saxons, that (slaying Hor-  
 sa, one of the Chieftaines, in an encounter geuen at this  
 place, & discomfiting the residue) they firste chased them  
 from hence, as farre as Tanet, (in memorie of whiche  
 sight, happely this place, was called Anglefford, that is  
 the passage of the Angles or Saxons) and after that com-  
 pelled them to forsake the land, to take shipping toward  
 their countrie, and to seeke a new supplie: And tru-  
 ly, had not the vntimely death of Kinge Vortimer im-  
 mediately succeded, it was to be hoped, that they should  
 neuer haue returned.

¶

But

But the want of that one man, both quayled the courage of the Britons, gaue new matter of stomack to the Saxons to repaire their forces, and brought vpon this Realme an alteration of the whole Estate and Government.

893.

There landed within the Realme in the time of Alfred, two great swarmes of Danish Pyrates, wherof the one arriued neare Winchelsey, with two hundredeth and fiftie saile of Shippes, and passing along that Riuer fortified at Apledore, as we haue shewed befoze: The other entred the Thamise, in a flecte of eighty saile, wherof parte encamped themselues at Midleton on the other syde of Kent, and part in Essex ouer against them.

These latter, King Alfred pursued, and pressed them so hardly, & they gaue him, both othes & hostages to depart the Realme, and neuer after to vnquiet it. What done, he marched with his army against those other also.

And because hee vnderstode, that they had diuided themselues, and spoyled the Countrie in sundrie partes at once, he lykelike diuided his army, intending (the rather by that meane) to meeete with them in some one place or other, which when they harde of, and perceined that they were vnmeeete, to incounter him in the face, they determined to passe ouer the Thamise, and to ioyne with their countremen in Essex, of whose discomfiture they had as yet receiued no tidings. But when they

Ferneham.

The Danes  
compelled  
to take the  
Thamise.

came at a place in this parish, called both now and anciently Ferneham, that is the ferny Colone or dwelling, one part of the Kings power courageously charged them and finding them geuen to flight, folowed the chase vpon them so fiercely, that they were compelled to take the Thamise without Boat or Bridge, in which passage there were a great number of the drowned, the residue hauing inough to doe to saue their owne liues, and to

con



conney ouer their Capitaine, that had receiued a deadly wounde.

So lesse notable was that other chase, wherein (many yeares after) Edmond Ironside, most fiercely pursued the Danes from Otforde to this towne: in whiche also (as some write) he had geuen them an irreparable ouerthrow, had he not (by fraudulent, and trayterous persuation of one Eadric, then Duke of Mercia, 42 myle England, and in the Saxon speach surnamed, for his couetousnesse Streona, that is to say, the Getter, or gatherer) withdrawne his foote, & spared to follow them.

The Danes,  
are chased  
from Ot-  
forde.

Earle Eadric  
an infamous  
traytour.

No doubt, but that it is many times a part of good wisdom, and waryke policie, not to pursue ouer fiercely thine enemy that hath already turned his back towarde thee, least thou compell him, to make vertue of that necessitie, and he (turning his face againe) put thee in danger to be overcome thy selfe, which before haddest in thine owne hande assurance to ouerthrowe him: In which behalfe, it was well sayde of one, *Hofsi fugienti, pons aureus faciendus*, If thine enemy will flye, make him a bridge of Golde. Neuerthelesse, for as much as this aduice, proceeded not from Eadric, of any care that he had to preserve King Edmonds power out of perill, but rather of feare, least the whole army of Canutus should be ouerrunne and destroyed: he is iustly fared for this, and other his treasons by our auncient histo:ians, who also make report of the worthy rewarde, that in the ende he receiued, for all his trecherie. For, this was hee (as William Malmesbury writeth, though some others ascribe it to his sonne) that afterwarde (when these two Kings had by composition diuided the Realme betwene them) most villanously murdered King Edmonde at Oxford, and was therfore done to death by King Canutus: who, in that one act shewed singular arguments, both of rare iustice, and of a right noble harte: Of iustice, for

S. ij.

that

A noble ex-  
ample of  
King Ed-  
monde  
Ironside

that he would not winke at the faulte of him, by whose meanes, hee obteyned the Monarchie of the whole Realme, & of great Nobilitie of minde, in that he plainly declared himselfe, to esteeme moze of his owne honour, then of another mans Crowne and Scepter, & to have digested quietly, that impatiencie of a partener in kingdome, which great Alexander thought as intollerable as two sunnes in the world at once: and which Romulus could in no wise brooke, since he would not suffer one kingdome to content him and Remus, whom one belly had conteyned before.

There was sometime at Eilefford, a house of Carmelite Friers: of the time of the foundation, or name of the founteyne whereof, I have not yet learned any thing.

Malling

# Mallinge, in Saxon, Mealing

of Mealu ing, that is, the Lowe place

flourishing with meale, or

Corne, for so it is eue-

ry where accōp-

ted.



This Towne, (the name whereof ha-  
uing his termination in, ing, bet oke,  
neth plainly, that it is situate along  
the water, euen as Yalding, Berming  
Halling, and others thereby) was first  
giuen to Burhricus, the Bishop of Ro-  
chester by King Edmund the Brother of Athelstane,  
vnder the name of the Plough landes in Mealinges.

The names  
of Townes,  
ending in  
ing.

About one hundred and fiftie yeares after whiche  
time, Gundulphus (a successour in that See, as you haue

945.

read befoze) hauing amplified the buildings, and mul-  
tiplied the number of the Monkes in his owne Citie,  
raised an Abbay of women here also, which (being dedi-  
cate to the name of the Blessed Virgin) during all his  
life he gouerned himself, and lying at the point of death,  
he commended to the charge of one Auice, (a chosen wo-  
man) to whome notwithstanding he would not deliuer  
the Pastozall staffe, befoze she had promised Canonically  
Obedience, fidelitie, and subiection, to the See of Ro-  
chester, and protested by othe, that there should neither  
Abbasse nor Nonne, be from thencefoz the receaued in-  
to the house, without the consent and priuie of him,  
and his successours. Now, whether this Ruspropin-  
quum, and politique prouision, were made of a blinde  
zeale that the man had to aduance superstition, or of a  
vain glorie to increase authoritie in his succession, or els

The Abbay

1106.

The Sola-  
ces, of Sola-  
life.

of.

of.



of a foresight that the *monkes*, (whiche were for the  
 moste part called *Monachi*, of Sole living, by the same  
 rule, that *Montes* haue their name of remouing) might  
 haue a conuenient place to resort vnto, and where they  
 might (*Cautē*, at the least) quenche the heates, kindled  
 of their good cheare and idlenesse, God knoweth, and I  
 wil not iudge. But well I wote, that this was a very  
 common practise in *Wapitrie*: for as *Saint Augustines*  
 had *Sepulchres*, *Saint Albans* *Sopewell*, *Shene Sion*,  
 the *Knights* of the *Rodes*, the *monnes* of *Clerkenwel*,  
 all adioyning, or subiect to suche obedience: so *Sempring-*  
*ham*, and some other of that sort, had both Male and Fe-  
 male within one house, and wall togeather, the world  
 being (in the meane while) bozne in hand, that they  
 were no men, but Images, as *Phryne* said sometime  
 of *Xenocrates*. This house was valued in

the *Records*, at two hundred and  
 eightēne pounds of yere-  
 ly reuenue,

Tun-

# Tunbridge, called of Mat. Par.

Thunbrugge, corruptly for Tōnebrȳcge,  
that is, the Bridge ouer Tōne: but if  
it be truly written Tūnbrȳcge,  
thē it signifieth, the towne  
of Bridges, as in deed  
it hath many.



Although I find no mention of Tun- The Castle  
bridge in that copie of Domesdaye  
booke, whiche I haue sene, concer-  
ning the description of this Shyre:  
yet read I in history, that there was  
a castle at Tunbridge sone after the  
conqueste, if not euen at the same time when that booke  
was compiled: For omitting that which Hector Boe-  
tius writeth, concerning a battell at Tunbridge, wher-  
in the Conquerour (as he saith) should preuaile against  
Harold, bicause it is evidently false and untrue, vnlesse  
he mean it of the continuance of the chase after the fight  
euen to Tunbridge, I haue read, that at suche time, as  
Odo (ioyning with others of the Nobilitie) made defec-  
tion from William Rufus, to Robert his elter brother,  
the King besieged at Tunbridge, one Gilbert, then kee-  
per of the Castle, and compelled him to yelde it.

1088.

Happely this Odo (being the Kings Vncle, and of great  
authoritie within the Shyre, as we haue before shew-  
ed) had erected this Castle, & giuen the charge to Gil-  
bert, but howsoever that were, certaine it is, that the  
Castle was long time holdē of the Archbishops of Can-  
terbury, and continued many yeares together in the  
possession of the Carles of Clare, afterwards called of  
Gloucester.

1163.

For, in the dayes of King Henrie the second, Thomas the Archbishop, required homage of Roger, then Earle of Gloucester, for his Castle of Tunbridge, who knowing the King to be halfe angrie with the Archbishop, and wholly on his owne side, shapen him a short answer, affirming stoutly that it was none of his, but the Kings owne, as a Lay fr̃e. Falcaius, (a hyed

1215.

Souldiour, that was entertained by King Iohn, during the warres with his Nobilitie) toke by force this Castle from the Earle of Gloucester, and kept it for a season to the Kings behoufe:

1231.

King Henrie the third also, after the death of Gilbert the Earle of Gloucester, seised the Wardship of his Heire, and committed the custody of this Castle to Hubert of Burgh: But Richard the Archbishop, (surnamed the great) being offended therat, came to the King in great haste, and made his claime, by reason, that the Earle Gilbert died in his homage: the King gaue answer, that the whole Earledome was holden of him, & that hee might lawfully committe the custodie of the Landes to whome soeuer it liked himselfe. Hereat the Bishop waxed warme, and tolde the King plainly, that since he could not haue right within the Realme, he would not spare to seeke it abroad: & forthwith hastened him to y<sup>e</sup> holy Father at Rome, where he so vled y<sup>e</sup> matter, that he obtained iudgemēt for his part, but he for all that neuer had execution, by reason that he died in his returne toward home: yet you may here see, by the way,

The Clear-  
gic was law  
lesse.

that in those dayes, there was no Lawe in England to rule the proude Prelacie withall, no not so muche, as in things mere Lay and tempoꝛall: To be short, the same King Henrie, not long befoze y<sup>e</sup> battel at Lewes in Suffex, burned the Citie of Rochester, and tooke this Castle by

1263.



a sondaine surprize, wherein he found (amongst other) the Countesse of Gloucester: But it was not long before he stozed the Castle with men of warre, and restored the Ladie to her former libertie.

There was somtime neare to this Castle, a Priorie, The Priorie at Tunbridge. whereof the Carles of Gloucester, and their Heires, were reputed the first Authozs, and Patrones: And in our memozie, there was erected a faire free Schole, by the honest liberalitie of Syr Androw Iudde, a Citizen, and Spaior of London, whiche submitted y same 1558. to the order and oversight of the company of Skinners there, whereof himselfe had bene a member.

Round about the Towne of Tunbridge, lyeth a The Lowy of Tunbridge. territozie, or compasse of ground, commonly called, the Lowy, but witten in the auncient Records and Histozies peucata, or Leuga, and being (in dede) a French League of ground, whiche (as I finde in the Chronicles of Normandie) was allotted at the first vpon this occasion following. There was in Normandie, a Towne (and land thereunto adioyning) called Bryonnie, whiche was of the auncient possession of the Duke Dorne, and had continually remained in the handes of the Dukes there, till suche time as Richard (the second Duke of that name) gaue it amongst other Landes to Godfrey, his natural brother, for his aduancement in liuing. This Godfrey enioyed it all his lyfe, and left it to one Gislebert his Sonne (whiche happely was Gilbert, the Capitain of Tunbridge Castle, of whom we had mention before) who also held it so long as he liued. But after the death of Gislebert, Robert (the Duke of Normandie, and Eldest Sonne to King William the Conquerour) being earnestly laboured to bestowe it vpon on Robert, Earle Mellent, (whose offpying were sometimes Carles of Leycester within

It.

this

this Riccard seized it into his owne hands, pretending to vnde it to the Dukedome againe. But when Richard (the Sonne of Gislebert) vnderstode of this, he put to his claime, and making his title by a long continued possession, (euen from Godfrey his graund-father) so encountred the suite of Carle Mellent, that to stoppe Richards mouthe withall, it was by the deuice of the Carle, and by the mediation of Duke Robert, which he made to his Brother William Rufus, brought to passe, that Richard should receaue in recompence, the Town of Tunbridge in England, and so much land about it, as Bryonnice it selfe contained in circuit: And to the end that the indifferencie of the dealing might appeare, and his full satisfaction be wrought, they caused Bryonnice, and the land about it, to be measured with a line, whiche they afterward brought ouer with them into England, and applying the same to Tunbridge and the land adioyning, laide him out the very like in quantitie in so much that long time after, it was a common and receaued opinion in Normandie, that the Leagues of Bryonnice and Tunbridge, were all one in measure and compasse. This, together with the Towne and Castle, came at the length (as you haue seene) to the handes of the Carles of Gloucester, betwene whome, and the Archebishops of Canterbury, there arose oftentimes contention, bothe for the limits of this league, and for the preeminence of their priuileges. At the last, Boniface the Archebishop (next but one in succession after Richard, of whome we spake before) and Richard the Carle (and Heire to Gilbert) agreed in the reigne of King Henrie the third, vpon a perambulation to be made betwene them, and so the strife for their boundes was brought to an end. But as touching their priuileges, and iurisdiction in the place, it fell out by inquisition in the

1264.  
42.H.3.

the time of King Edward following, that the Archeb:  
shop had nothing to do within the league, that the Earle  
had retourne of writtes, creation of certain Officers, an  
especiall sessions in Eire. &c. most of whiche things the  
Towne hath not these many yeares enjoyed: But  
yet it was agreed, after the perambulation so made be-  
twene Boniface and the Earle Richard, that the Earle  
and his heires should holde the Manors of Tunbridge,  
Vielston, Horismund, Melyton, and Pettys, of y<sup>e</sup> Arche-  
bishop and his successours, by the service of 4. Knightes  
fres, and to be highe Stewarden, and highe Butlers, to  
the Archebishops, at the great feast of their inthroniza-  
tions, taking for their service in the Stewardship, seue  
competent Robes of Scarlet, thirtie gallons of wyne,  
thirtie pound of ware for his light, livery of Hay and  
Dates for fourescore Horses by two nights, the dishes  
and salt which should stand before the Archebishops in  
that feast, and at their departure the dyet of thre days  
at y<sup>e</sup> costes of the Archbishops at foure of their next Ma-  
nors, by the foure quarters of Kent, wheresoeuer they  
would, *Ad minuendum sanguinem*, So that they repaired  
thither, but with fiftie Horses only: And taking also  
for the Office of Butlership, other seven like Robes, 20  
Gallons of wyne, fiftie pound of ware, like livery for  
threescore Horses by two nights, the cuppe wherewith  
the Archebishops should be serued, all the emptie hoggs  
heads of drinke, and for sixe tunne of wyne, so many as  
should be dronke vnder the barre also.

The Articles of whiche their composition, were  
afterward accordingly perfourmed, firste betwene  
Gilbert Earle of Gloucester, and Robert Winchelsey  
the Archebishop, next betwene the same Earle, and

The Arche-  
bishop  
hath an  
Earle to his  
Butler.

It. ii.

the

1295.



1504.

the Archebifhop Reignoldes: Then betwene Hughe Audley the Earle of Gloucefter, and the Archebifhop Iohn Stratford: After that betwene the Earle of Stafford, (to whome the Lordfhip of Tunbridge at the length came) and Simon Sudbury Archebifhop, in that Se: and laftly betwene William Warham the Archebifhop, and Edward the late Duke of Buckingham, who alfo executed the Stewardfhip in his owne person, and the Butlership by his deputie Sir

Thomas Burgher Knight: & whole pompe, and Ceremonie whereof, I haue ſeen at greater length ſet forth, and defcribed, then is mete for this time & place to be recounted.

Ac

# Asherst, in Saxon,

333

Aſchypſt, that is, the Wood  
of Aſhes,



**I**n the Southwest corner  
of this Shyre, towarde the  
confines of Suffex and Sur-  
rey, lyeth Asherst, a place  
now a daies so obscure (so  
it is but a Towne of two  
houses) that it is not wor-  
thy the visiting: but yet in  
olde time so glorious for a  
Roode which it had of rare

The Roode  
of Asherst  
was a grow-  
ing Idole

propertie, that many vouchsafed to bestowe bothe their  
labour and money vpon it. It was beaten (forsooth) into  
the heades of the common people (as what thing was so  
absurde, which the Clergie coulde not then make the  
world to beleue:) that the Roode (or Crucifix) of this  
church, did by certaine incrementes continually waxe &  
grow, as well in the bush of haire, y<sup>e</sup> it had on the head,  
as also in the length and stature of the members, and  
bade it selfe. By meanes whereof it came to passe,  
that whereas the frutes of the Benefice weare hardly  
able to susteine the Incumbent, nowe by the benefite of  
this inuention (which was in papistrice, *Nouum genus au-  
cupij*) the Parson there was not onely furnished by the  
offering to liue plentifully, but also well ayded towarde  
the makinge of a Worde, wealthe and riche.

But as Ephialtes, and Oetus, the Sonnes of Nep-  
tune who (as the Poets feigne, waxed nine inches eu-  
rie moneth) being beauen by with the opinion, & conceit

It.iii.

rept of their owne length and haughtines, assaulted hea-  
uen, intending to haue pulled the Gods out of their pla-  
ces, and were therefore shot through, & slayne with the  
arrowes of the Gods: Euen so, when Popish Idolatrie  
was growne to the full height and measure, so that it  
spared not to rob God of his due honour, and most vio-  
lently to pull him (as it were) out of his seate, then this  
growing Idole and all his fellows, were so deadly  
wounded, with the heauenly arrowes of the woozde of  
God (*Qui non dabit gloriam suam sculptilibus*) that soon  
after they gaue vp the ghost, and leaft vs.

Betweene this Towne and Depeforde (which is the  
whole bredthe of the Schyre, on the west ende) I finde  
nothing committed to dystozie: and therefore let  
vs hast, and take our next way thither.

## Depeforde



# Depeforde, in Latine *Vadum*

*profundum*, and in auncient Euidences  
West Greenewiche.



This towne, being a frontier betwene Kent and Surrey, was of none estimation at all, until that King Henrie the eight, advised (for the better preservation of the Royall State) to erect a Storehouse, and to create certaine officers there: these he incorporated by the name of the Maister and Wardens of the Holie Trinitie: for the building, keeping, and conducting of the Nauie Royall. The masters of the nauie Royall,

There was lately reedified a sayre Bridge also,ouer the Brooke, called Rauensbourne, whiche lyeth not farre of in the Weath about Bromley.

## Greenwiche

# Greenewiche, in Latine, 'Viridis

sinus: in Saxon, gnenapic; that is to say, the

*Greene Towne. In auncient euidences,*

Eastgreenewiche, for diffe-

rence sake from Dep-

forde, which in olde

Instruments is cal-

led westgreene

wiche.



At the time of the turnoyled Kinges Ethelred, the whole flæte of the Danish army, lay at roade, two or thre yeares together before Greenewich: And the Souldiours, for the mosse parte, were incamped vpon the hill aboute the towne, now called Black-

IOII.

Alphey, the  
Archbishop  
was cruelly  
killed.

heath: Duringe this time, they pearced this whole Countrie, sacked and spoyled the Citie of Canterburie, and brought fro thence to their ships, Alphey, & Arch- bishop. And here, a Dane (called Thrum) whom the Archebishop had confirmed in Christianitie the daie before, strake him on the head behinde, and slewe him, because he woulde not condescend to redeme his lyfe with thre thousand poundes, which the people of the Citie & Diocesse were contented to haue geuen for his ransome: Neither would the rest of the Souldiours suffer his bodie to be committed to the earth, after the maner of Christian decencie, till such time (saith William of Malmsh.) as they perceiued that a dead stick, being anointed with his bloud, wared greene againe, and began the next day to blossom.

A popish  
miracle.

But referring the credite of that, and suche other vnfruitful

unfruitfull miracles (wherewith our auncent monkish  
 stories doe swarme) to the iudgement of the godly and  
 discreete Readers, most assured it is, that aboute the  
 same time, such was the storme and furie of the Danish  
 insatiable rauine, waste, spoyle, and oppression, with in  
 this Realme besides, that of two and thirtie Shyres (in  
 to which number the whole was then diuided) they her-  
 ried and ransacked sixtene, so that the people being mi-  
 serably vered, the Kinge himselfe (to auoyde the rage)  
 first sent ouer the Seas his wyfe and children: after  
 ward compounded, and gaue them a yerely tribute: and  
 lastly for verie feare forsooke the Realme, and fled into  
 Normandie himselfe also.

32. Shyres  
 in Englande

1013.

They receiued (besides daylie victuall) fourtie eight  
 thousande poundes in ready coyne, of the subiectes of  
 this Realme, whilest their King Swein lyued: & twen-  
 tie one thousand after his death vnder his sonne Canu-  
 tus: vpon the payment whereof, they made a corporall  
 oath, to serue the King (as his feodaries) against al stran-  
 gers, and to liue as frendes and allies without enda-  
 maging his subiectes. But how litle they perfourmed  
 promise, the harms that daily folowed in sundry parts,  
 and the exalting of Canutus their owne countrieman to  
 the honour of the Crowne, were sufficient witnesses.

Great summs  
 of money  
 paid to the  
 Danes.

1015.

In memorie of this Campe, certeine places within  
 this parishe, are at this day called Combes, namely  
 Estcombe, Westcombe, and Midlecombe almoste for-  
 gotten: for Comb and Compe in Saxon (being some-  
 what declined from *Campus* in Latine) signifieth a field  
 or Campe, for an Armie to sojourne in.

And in memorie of this Archebishop Aelpheg, the  
 parish Church at Greenewiche (being at the first, dedi-

ated

cated



rated to his honour) remaineth knowne by his name  
 even till this present day. Thus much of the anti-  
 quitie of the place: concerning the latter hystorie, I  
 reade, that it was sone after the conquest, parcel of the  
 possessions of the Bishop of Lysieux in Fraunce, and  
 that it bare service to Odo, then Bishop of Baieux, and  
 Earle of Kent: After that, the Manor belonged to the  
 Abbat of Gaunt in Flaunders, till such time as Kinge  
 Henrie the first, seising into his handes (by occasion of  
 warre) the landes of the Priors Aliens, bestowed  
 it, togeather with the manor of Lewsham, and many  
 other lands also, upon the Priorie of the Chartrehouse  
 Monks of Shene, whiche he had then newly erected: to  
 this it remayned, untill the time of the reigne of Kinge  
 Henrie the eight, who annexed it to the Crowne, wher-  
 unto it now presently belongeth.

1416.

The Priorie  
of Shene.

The frierie.

1480

1509

The Observant Friers, & sometime lyved at Greene-  
 wiche (as Iohn Rosse writeth) came thither about the  
 latter end of þe reign of king Edward þe fourth, at whose  
 handes they obtained a Chauntry with a litle Chapel  
 of the holy crosse, a place, yet extant in the towne: And  
 (as Lilley saith) Kinge Henrie the seventh buylded for  
 them that house adioyning to þe Palace, which is there  
 yet to be sene. But now least I may seme to haue  
 saide much, of small matters: and to haue forgotten  
 the principall ornament of the towne: I must (before  
 I end with Greenewiche) say somewhat of the Princes  
 Palace there.

The Palace

Humfrey therfore (the Duke of Gloucester, & pro-  
 tectour of the Realine, a man no lesse renowned for  
 approued vertue, and wisdom: then honoured for  
 his high estate and parentage) was the first that layde  
 the foundations of the faire building in the towne, and  
 towre in the Parke, and called it, his Manor of plea-  
 sance

## Greenewiche.

339

Since: After him King Edward the fourth bestowed  
some cost to enlarge the worke: Henrie the seventh  
solowed, and beautified the house with the addition of  
the brick front, toward the water side; but King Hen-  
rie the eight, as he exceeded all his progenitors in set-  
ting vp of sumptuous housinge, so he spared no coste in  
garnishing Greenewiche, til he had made it a pleasant,  
perfect, and Princely Palace. Marie his eldest daugh-  
ter (and after Quene of the realme) was borne in this  
house: Queene Elizabeth his other daughter, our most  
gracious & gladson Gouvernour, was likewise borne in  
this house: And his deare sonne King Edward (a myra-  
cle of Princely towardnesse) ended his lyfe in the same  
house.

1516.

One accident more touching this house, and then an  
ende: It hapened in the reigne of Queene Marie, that  
the Master of a Ship, passing by, whilst the court lay  
there, and meaning (as the manner and dutie is) with  
saile and shot to honour the Princes presence, unadui-  
sedly gaue fyre to a peice, charged with a pellet in stead  
of a tampion, the which lighting on the Palace  
wall ranne through one of the priue lodg-  
ings, and did no further harme.

Vv.ii.

Blackheathe



The rebel-  
lion of Jack  
Straw.

1380

The rebel-  
lion of Jack  
Cade.

Dioryninge to Greenewiche, lyeth the plaine, called (of the colour of the soyle) Blackheath, the which, besides the burthen of the Danishe Campe (whereof we spake euen now) hath bozne thre several rebellious assemblies: One in the time of Kinge Richard the second, moued (as it shal appeare anon in Dartford) by Jack Straw, whom William Walworth, then Mayor of London, slew with his Dagger, in Smithfielde: in memorie whereof, the Citie had given them (for increase of honour) a Dagger, to be bozne in their shield of armes.

Jack Cade (that counterfeited Mortimer) and his followers, were leaders of the second: who passing from Venice to London, did to death the Lord Say, and others in the time of King Henrie the Sixte.

These two (besides other harmes, that usually accompany the mutinie and bproze, of the common and rascal sort) defaced foully the Herowes and monuments both of the law, and Armourie: The parts of Rolles remaining yet halfe bent, doe witness the one: And the Heraldes vnskill, (comming through the want of their olde Bookes) is sufficient testimonie of the other.

The rebel-  
lion of the  
black smith

The third insurrection was assembled by Michael Ioseph (the black Smith) and the Lorde Audley, vnder the reigne of Kinge Henrie the Seventh: at whiche time they and their complices, receaued their iust deserte, the common number of them being slaine and discomfited, and the leaders themselves taken, drawne and hanged,



Of this last, there remaineth yet to be sene upon the  
Heathe, the places of the Smithes Lente, called com-  
monly his foze: And of all three, the graue hilles of  
suche as were buried after the ouerthrowe: These  
hillockes in the West Countrie (where is no smal stoze  
of the like) are called Barowes, of the olde Englishe  
word Buryghen; whiche signifieth Sepulchres, or pla-  
ces of burying, which word, (being a spring of that olde  
stocke) we doe yet reteine aliue.

The first and last of these commotions, were stirred  
of a grieffe that the common people conceaued, for the  
demaund of two subsidies, of whiche the one was un-  
reasonable, bycause it was layed vpon the Polls and ex-  
empted none, were he neuer so poore: The other was  
unreasonable, for that it was exacted, when the heades  
of the common people were full of Parkin Warber.

The third and midlemosse, grewe vpon a grudge,  
that the people tooke, for yelding by the Duchie of  
Angeow, and Maynie, to the King of Sicil: The com-  
ming in of whose daughter (after that the King would  
needes haue her to wife, notwithstanding his pre-con-  
tract made with the Earle of Armenac) was not so ioy-  
fully embraced by the Citizens of London vpon Black-  
heathe, wearing their red Hodges, Badges, and blew  
gownes: as in sequel, the Marriage, and whole govern-  
ment it self, was knowne to be detested of the countrie  
Commons, by bearing in the same place, Varnesse,  
Bowes, Billes, and other Weapon: But bicause I  
cannot (without paine and pitie) enter into the conside-  
ration of these times, and matters, I will discourse no  
farther thereof, but crosse ouer the next way to Lesnes,  
and prosequute the rest of the bounds of this

Bishoppicke.

Lesnes, mistaken, as I thinke

for Lesper (Leswes) which signifi-  
eth, Pastures,



Could easily have believed, that the name Lesnes, had been deriued out of the Frenche, and that it had been first imposed at the foundation of the Abbay, sa-  
uing that I finde the place registred in the Booke of Domesday, by the very same, and none o-  
ther calling. And therfore I am the rather led to thinke that the name is Saxon, and there miswritten, (as ma-  
ny other be, by reason that the Normans were the pen-  
ners of that booke) Lesnes, for Leswes, the word which  
(in the Saxon tongue) signifieth Pastures, and is not  
as yet utterly forgotten, forasmuche as till this day  
Pastures be called Leswes in many places: This is  
my fantasie touching the name, wherein if I sayle, it  
forceth not greatly, since the matter is no more weigh-  
tie: Concerning the Hystorie of the place, only I finde,  
that Richard Lucy a priuie Counsellour of the State,  
and chiefe Iustice of the Realme, in the time of King  
Henric the second, founded an Abbay there: the tempo-  
ralties wherof amounted (as I finde) to seven poundes  
five shillings and eight pence: But as for the  
extent of the whole yearely va-  
lue, I haue not lear-  
ned it.

1179.

Lord Ri-  
chard Lucy.

Earethe

# Earethe, in some olde evidences, 343

Eard, derined (as I gesse) of *ſenne hyde*, that  
is the olde *Hauen*.



Of plaine example, that oure El-  
ders befoze the conquest, had their  
trialles for title of land, and other  
controuerſies, in each ſhire; befoze  
a Iudge, then called Alderman,  
or Shyreman, of whom there is be-  
ry frequent mention in the *Lawes*

The ancient  
manner, of  
the triall of  
right to  
Landes.

of our auncestours the Saxons, the whiche some yeares  
ſince were collected and published in one volume: and  
for assured proofe also, that in those dayes they vsed to  
proceede in ſuche cauſes, by the oathes of many persons  
(testifying their opinion of his credit, that was the first  
ſwearer, or partie) after the manner of our daily experi-  
ence, as in the oath yet in vze, and called commonly Wa-  
ger of Lawe, is to be ſeene: I haue made choice of one  
Hystorie, conteining brieſly the narration of a thing  
done at this place, by Dunstane, the Archbishop of Can-  
terbury, almost a hundredeth yeares befoze the comming  
of King William the Conquerour.

A rich man (saith the text of Rochester) being owner  
of Cray, Earthe, Ainstford, and Wokham, and hauing  
none issue of his body, deuised the same lands (by his last  
wil, made in the presence of Dunstane, and others) to a  
kintwoman of his owne, for life, the Remainder of the  
one halfe thereof, after her death, to Christes Church at  
Canterbury, and of the other halfe to Saint Androwes  
of Rochester, for euer: he died, and his wife toke one  
Leoffun to husband, (who ouerliuing her) retained  
the Land, as his owne, notwithstanding that by the  
forme of the deuise, his interest was determined,  
by the deathe of his wife: Herevpon complaint came  
to one Wulfic, for that time the Scypeman (or Iudge  
of

970.



of the Countie, (as the same booke interpreteeth it) before whom, bothe Dunstane the Archebishop, the parties themselves, sundrie other Bishops, and a great multitude of the Lay people, appeared, all by appointment at Earethe: and there in the presence of their whole assembly, Dunstane (taking a crosse in his hand) made a copposal oath upon the booke of the Ecclesiastical lawes, unto the Shyreman, (whiche then toke it to the Kings use, because Leoffun himselfe refused to receave it) and affirmed that the right of these landes, was to Christes Church, and to Saint Androwes. For ratification and credit of which his othe, a thousand other persons (chosen out of East, and West Kent, Eastsex, Middlesex, and Suffex) toke their othes also, upon the Crosse, after him. And thus, by this manner of indgement, Christes Church, and Saint Androwes were brought into possession, & Leoffun utterly reiected for ever. The towne of Earethe, is an ancient copposal, but whether it hath been at any time, of greater accept, I finde not: & therefore, having already declared in manner, whatsoever it hath the note worthie, I will set down this one thing, and leave it. Toward the latter end of the reigne of King Henrie the first, there were taken at this Towne, foure very great and rare fishes, of which one was then named to be Mori Marina, and other a sword fishe, and the rest were supposed to be whales.

**Cray-**

Wager of  
Lawe.

1457.

# Crayforde, in Saxon Cneccanforð,

that is, the Ford, or passage ouer the water  
Crecca, now called Cray.



After the death of Horsa, (of whome we Hengist, &  
haue spoken in Ailefford before) The Horsa.  
Saxons made his brother Hengist their  
only King and leader. And he, minding  
foorthwith to shewe himselfe worthy  
of his newly attayned Honour, and  
willing to supplie in himselfe the defect of his deceased  
Brother, pursued the Britons fiercely, and gaue them  
sundry great encounters: in diners of whiche, although  
he sped doubtfully, yet at the last meeting with them at  
Crayford, he slew foure of their chief capitaines, and  
so discomfited the whole number, that the Britons quite  
abandoned this Countrey, and with great feare fled to  
London before him.

After this fight, the Britons  
not only neuer inuaded Hengist (as Ralfe Higden writ-  
teth) but fled him like fire, as the Saxon Hystorie repor-  
teth: so that euen then, and not before, it might truly  
be saide, that he had gained the possession of the Kentish  
Kingdome. The place is named of the water Cray,  
whiche beginning at Orpington (vntruly so termed  
for Dorpendan, whiche signifieth the head, or spring of  
the Hille water) runneth by Saint Marie Cray, Poules  
Cray, Fotescray, and Crayford (to all whiche it likewise  
beareth name) and commeth at length to Dartford,  
where it mingleth with the Riuer Darent,  
and so openeth into the Tha-  
mise.

457.

The begin-  
ning of the  
Kentish  
Kingdome.

Orpington,  
& the course  
of Cray  
water.

Xx.

Dartford

# 346 Dartforde, in Saxon, Depentford

in latine, Derenti vadunt signifieth, the ford,  
or passage ouer the Riuer Derent,

Mesopota-  
mia signifi-  
eth a countrey  
encompassed  
with ri-  
uers



Nowe we retourned into Mesopo-  
tamia, for so me thinketh that this  
countrey, lying betwene the Riuers  
of Darent and Medwey may wel be  
termed. And here you must call to  
minde that, whiche you heard in Ro-  
chester befoze: namely, that King

John wan the Castle of Rochester from William Dal-  
byney, through the faint heart and cowardise of Robert  
Fitzwalter, whom the Nobilitie had sent of purpose, to  
rescue it: a now (the place so requiring) you shal vnder-  
stand the whole maner of the thing, and how it hapned.

Rochester  
castle besie-  
ged

1215

The Noble men, that maintained the warre a-  
gainst King John, vnderstanding that he laide siege to  
the Castle at Rochester, and fearing that William Dal-  
biney (or Dalbinet) the Capitaine thereof, could not  
long defend it without supplie of suche thinges as he  
wanted, and they could not well minister: determined  
to giue some aduenture to raise the siege. And for that  
purpose, made Robert Fitzwalter generall of a greate  
armie: This man, when he came to Dartford, mette  
with a Gentleman of the order of the Temple, of whō  
he demaunded sundrie questions, for intelligence of the  
numbre of the Kings campe: Who (finding him to be  
afraide) tolde him (of set purpose) that the Kings armie  
was muche greater then his, whereas in deede his pow-  
er was thise so bigge as the Kings: Herevpon Robert,  
(being with this false terrour stricken into an exceeding  
great feare, whose companion is flight, as Homer well  
saith,) without further inquisition, sought to saue him  
selfe by the swiftnes of his fete, and so through fainte  
heart left Rochester to the vttermost aduenture.



If King Io hn had followed, I thinke it would haue become of him, as it sometime chaunced of a certaine white liuered man: who, hearing great praise of Hercules strengthe, forthwith conueyed himself into a caue, and when he had spied him (by chaunce) passing that way, he died out of hand for extream feare. I read,

that in the time of King Henrie the third, Frederic the Emperour, sent hither the Archebishop of Colein, accompanied with sundrie Noble personages, to demaunde Isabell the Kings sister to be giuen him in marriage: the whiche (for asmuche as the Embassadours liked the young Ladie well) was (after suche a solemnization, as in absence may be perfourmed) married vnto him at this Towne, and then deliuered to the Dyatoys to be caried ouer.

Whereby I make coniecture, that although there be not in storie, mention of any great building at Dartford, before the time of the Abbay, whiche was raised long after this marriage, yet there was some faire house of the Kings, or of some others, euen at this time there: For otherwise I knowe not howe to make it a meete place, for so honourable an appointment.

But leauing all coniecture, certaine it is, that afterward King Edward the third, founded there a faire Monasterie for women, which at the general dissolution, was founde to be worth thre hundred and eightie pounds by yeare, and of whiche King Henrie the eight (not without great cost) made a fit house for himselfe and his successours.

The same King Edward the third, at one time in his returne from Fraunce, proclaimed a generall Torneament, or Jusses, to be holden at Dartford, whiche he and his Nobles perfourmed moste honourable.

This manner of exercise, beeing then vled, not at the Wille (as I thinke) but at Randon, and in

Ex. ij.

the

1235

Princes,  
may wood  
by picture  
and marye  
by proctor

The Abbay

The old manner of Torneament.

the open field, was accompted so dangerous to the persons hauing to do therein, that sundrie Popes had forbidden it by decree, and the Kings of this Realme (before King Stephan) would not suffer it, to be frequented within their land: so that, suche as for exercise of that feat in armes, were desirous to proue themselves, were driven to passe ouer the Seas, and to performe it in some indifferent place in a forreigne Countrey: But afterward, King Stephan in his time permitted it: and then after him King Richard the firste, not only allowed it, but also encouraged his Nobilitie to vse it: And so by litle and litle, the danger being sufficiently prouided for, and the men waring expert, it grewe in the time of the Kings that followed (especially in the reigne of this Edward the third) to a moste pleasaunt, vsuall, and familiar pastime.

The occasion, of Iacke Strawes his rebellion.

But, to returne to Dartford againe: The first mo-  
 tiue of the rebellious assembly of the Common people of  
 this Shyre, that chaunced in the time of King Richard  
 the second (whereof you heard somewhat in Blackheath  
 before) was giuen at this Towne, by occasion that a  
 naughtie fellowe (being appointed to leupe the groates,  
 that were by Parleament tared vpon euery Polle) dis-  
 honestly intreated a young Damosel (Daughter to one  
 Iohn Tyler) that dwelt in Dartford, which thing when  
 the ffather heard of, he fell at wordes with the Officer,  
 and from wordes to worse, so that in the end he slewe  
 him: This done, the Comon people of the Towne, part-  
 ly for grudge at the imposition, partly for maintenance  
 of the thing, whiche they thought well done: and partly  
 to eschewe the punishment that by execution of Justice  
 might fall vpon them, assembled their neighbours, and  
 growing to some number, made this Tyler their Capi-  
 taine, named him Iacke Strawe: and did further, as you  
 in

in part heard before, and may at moze large read almost  
in enerie English Chronicle.

This Towne (as Crayford before) hath the name of The course  
the water running by, commonly called Derent, but co<sup>2</sup> of the riuer  
ruptly, after the opinion of Lelande, who thinketh the of Derent.  
true name to be Dorquent, which in Brittish soundeth  
the Cleere water: It springeth at Titsey in the edge  
of Surrey, and taketh in the way Westram, where Iohn  
Frith was bozne, Otford, Ainsford, and Darent (where  
to it leaueth the name) and comming to this Towne,  
carrieth Craye with it into the Thamise.

## Grauesende, in Saxon,

Genepesend: in Latine,

*Limes Pratorius.*



The originall cause of the name of  
this place, lyeth hidde in the vsuall  
name of the officer, lately created in  
the Towne: He is commonly called  
Portreue, but the worde (aunciently  
and truely sounded) is Portgereue,  
that is to say, the Ruler of y<sup>e</sup> Towne.

The name  
of Portreue  
whereof it  
commeth.

For Porte (descending of the Latine worde *Portus*) sig-  
nifieth a Porte Towne, and Gereue (being deriued of  
the Saxon verbe *gepeccan* to rule) was first called *ge-  
pecca*, and then *gepefa*, and betokeneth a Ruler: So  
that, Portreue, is the Ruler of the Towne, and Greues-  
end, is as much to saye, as the Limit, Bounde, or Pre-  
sinct of such a Rule or Office.

Of the very same reason, they of the lowe and high  
Germanic (whence our language first descended) call

Ex.iii.

one



The name  
of Sherife.

London had  
a Portreue.

The office  
of a Reue.

one ruler, Burgreue, another Margreue, and the thirde Landsgreue: And of the same cause also, our Magistrate now called a Sherif, or (to speake moze truly, Shyre-reue) was at the first called (Shyre gereue) that is to say, *Custos Comitatus*, the Reue, or Ruler of the Shyre. The head officer of Maydston, long since had this name: yea the chiefe gouernour of the cite of London likewise, befoze the time, eyther of Maior, or Baylife there, was knowne by the name of Portreue, as in the Saxon Chartre of King William the Conqueroure (sundry examples wherof be yet extant) may appeare. It began thus, *pilliam cyng gneit pilliam bisceop. 7 godfpe-gep portreue fan. 7 ealle þa buphpaen þe on lunden beon; William the King, greeteth William the Bishop, and Godfrey the Portreue, and all the Citizens that in London be. &c.*

To make shozt, in auncient time, almost euery Manor had his Reue, whose authozitie was, not onely to leuie the Lords rents, to set to worke his seruants, and to husbände his Demeasnes to his best profit and commodity: but also to gouerne his tenants in peace, and to leade them forth to warre, when necessitie so required. And although this name, and so much of the authozitie as remained, was (after the comming in of the Normanes) transferred to another, whiche they called Baylife: yet in sundry places of the Realme (especially in Copiholde Manors, where old custome preuaileth) the worde, Reue, is yet well inoughe knowne and vnderstanded: Neyther ought it to seme any what the moze straunge, bycause I call nowe Reue, that whiche in olde time was Gereue, for as muche as this particle (Ge) was in processe of time, in some places chaunged in sounde to (y) and in some other partes cleane lost and forgotten: As for example, wheras the Saxons vsed to say,

say, he was Geboren, they of the West countrie pronounce it, he was yborne, and we of the countries nearer London, he was borne.

Thus farre the Etymon of the name (Greues end) hath carried me out of the Hystorie, whereto I did the rather yealde, bycause I had not muche to write concerning the place it selfe. Howbeit I reade, that in the beginning of the reigne of King Richard the seconde, whilst the Lorde Noel was by the Kings appointmēt, entred into Fraunce, with a great company of English

1379.

Youldiours, the Frenchmen entred the Thameise with their Gallies, and bent diuers towncs, and at the last, (comming to Grauesend) spoiled and set it on fire also: The feare of the like harme to followe, caused the noble King Henrie the eight, to builde a platforme at the same towne, and thre or foure others, in places ad-

ioyning, euen at suche time as he fortified a-  
long al the coastes of the Realme,  
vpon suche cause as we  
haue already  
opened.

Cliffe

Cliffe is a small town in the county of Kent, situated on the coast of the English Channel. It is a small town, but it is a very important one, because it is the only place in the county of Kent where the sea is so close to the land. The town is situated on a small peninsula, and it is surrounded by water on three sides. The town is very old, and it has a long history. It was first mentioned in the Domesday Book, and it has been a part of the county of Kent ever since. The town is very small, but it is a very important one, because it is the only place in the county of Kent where the sea is so close to the land. The town is situated on a small peninsula, and it is surrounded by water on three sides. The town is very old, and it has a long history. It was first mentioned in the Domesday Book, and it has been a part of the county of Kent ever since.

commonly in auncient Bookes,

Cloueshoo, for Clioeshoo,

which is as much to say,

as Clifs hoo, or Cliffe

at Hoo.



Heodore the senenth Archebis-  
shop of Canterburie, and the  
first (in the opinion of William  
Malmib) that exercised the au-  
toritie of an Archbishop, which  
appeared (as others say) in that  
he toke vpo him to depose Wil-  
frid of Yorke, called together a  
Synode of bishops at Hereford:

in which it was agreed amongst them, that for the moze  
spedis reformation of abuses that might crape into the  
Churche, they should all assemble once every yeare at  
Cloueshoo vpon the Kalends (or first day) of August:  
By vertue of which decree, Euthbert, y eleuenth Arch-  
bishop, somoned the bishops of his Prouince to y same  
place, and there (amongst other things wo:thy note) it  
was enacted, that priests themselves should first lerne,  
and then teach their parishoners, the Lords prayer, and  
the Articles of their beleefe in the English tongue: To

A learned  
age in which  
priestes had  
more latine  
thē english,  
and yet al-  
most no la-  
tine at all.

870.

which decree, if you list to adde y testimonie of Bing Al-  
fred, who in his p:eface vpon the Pastoral of Gregorie,  
that he translated, saith, y whē he came first to his king-  
dome, he knew not one prieste on the South side of the  
riuer of Humber, that vnderstode his seruice in Latine  
or could translate an Epistle into English. And if you  
wil adioyne y also, which Alfric writeth in his Proeme  
to the Grammar, that is to say, that a litle befoze y time  
of Dunstane y Archbishop, there was neuer an english  
priest y could ether endite, or vnderstād a latine epistle,

Then



Then I doubt not but you shall evidently see, howe easie it was for the Diuell and the Pope to creepe into the Church of Englande, when (whole ages together) the Clergie was so well fed, and so euill taught. But to our matter againe. By vertue of the same decre and ordinance also, two other Councelles were holden at Cliffe at Hoo: one vnder Kenulph, the King of Mercia, of middle England, and the other in the reigne of Beornwulfe his succellour. This place would I haue coniectured to haue lien in the hart of England, both bycause it seemeth likely that the common place of meeting should be most fitly appointed in the midst of the Realme, and for that it is manifest by the hystorie, that it was in the dominion of the King of Mercia, whiche I feare not to call middle England. But, for as much as I once read a note, made by one Talbot (a Prebendarie of Norwiche, and a diligent trauayler in the Englishe hystorie) vpon the margin of an auncient witten copie of William Malmshurys booke *De Pontificibus*, in whiche he expounded Cloueshoo, to be Cliffe at Hoo neare Rochester: and for that I doe not finde the expresse name (Cloueshoo) in all the catalogue of that precinct whiche was sometime the kingdome of Mercia (although there be diuers places therein that beare the name of Cliffe, as wel as this) I am contented to subscribe to Talbots opiniō: but with this protestation, that if at any time hereafter I finde a better, I will be no longer bounde to followe him.

And thus haue I now visited the places of chief note that lye in the skirtes of the Diocese, wherunto if I had added a fewe other that be within the body of the same, I would no lesse gladly, then I must necessarily, finishe and close vp this winters trauayle.

The order  
of this description.

Yy.

Swan-

# Swanscombe, called in Saxon,

Spegenscomb, that is, the camp of Sweyn,  
the Dane, that encamped at Grene-  
hithe hard by.



So the whole Shyre of Kent oweth  
to Swanscomb everlasting name,  
for the fruition of her auncient fran-  
chises obtained there: So I for the  
more honourable memorie of the  
place, can gladly aswore it come, both  
at the beginning, and towarde the  
ende of my labour.

The matter for the whiche it is especially renow-  
med, is already bewrayed in the discourse of the aunci-  
ent estate of this Shyre, whereunto I will referre you:  
And at this time, make note of a thing, or twaine be-  
sides, and so passe over to the residue.

The Ma-  
nour.

The Manor of Swanscombe, is holden of Rochester  
Castle, and oweth service towarde the defence of the  
same, being (as it were) one of the principall Captaines  
to whome that charge was of auncient time commit-  
ted, and having subiect vnto it, sundry Knightes fees, as  
petie Captaines, or inferiour souldiours, bound to serue  
vnder her banner there.

The church  
of S. Hilde-  
ferthe.

The Churche at Swanscombe, was muche haunted  
in times past, for Sainct Hildeferthes helpe (a Bishop,  
by coniecture of his picture yet standing in the vpper  
windowe of the Southe Ile, although his name is not  
read in all the Catalogue of the Barons) to whom suche  
as were distracted, ranne for restitution of their wits,  
as thicke as men were wont to sayle to Anticyra, for  
Helleborus.

This

## Swanscombe.

This cure was perfourmed, by warmth, close keeping, and good diet: meanes not onely not straunge, or miraculous, but mere naturall, ordinarie, and resonable. And therefore, as one the one side, they might truly be thought mad men, and altered in their wits, that frequented this pylgrymage, for any opinion of extraordinarie working: So on the other side, S. Hilderferth (of all the Saintes that I knowe) might best be spared, seeing we haue y<sup>e</sup> keeper of Bethleem, who ceaseth not (euen tyll this day) to worke mightely in the same kinde of myracle.

## Mepham, aunciently

written Meapaham.



Simon Mepham (the Archebishop that performed the solemnities at the inauguration of King Edward the third) had both his name & natiuity of this towne, although Polydore Virgil, hath no mencion of the man at all, in his historie, or catalogue of Archebishops, either not finding, or forgetting, that euer there was any suche. It is probable also, that the same Bishop built the church at Mepham, for the vse of the poore, which William Courtney (one of his Successours) repaired solwe scoze yeares after, and annexed therunto solwe new houses for the same ende and purpose.

Py. ii.

Besides



The aunci-  
ent forme  
of a Testa-  
ment.

Besides these notes, it hath chaunced mee to see an antiquitie of Mephram, whiche both for the profite and pleasure that I conceived therof, I think meete to insert, though he happely some other man may say, that I doe therein, and in many others also, nothinge els but *Antiquiora Diphthera loqui*: Neuerthelesse, to the ende that it may appeare, what the auncient forme and phrase of a Testament was, how the Husbände and the wife ioyned in making their Testamentes, how landes were deuisable by testament in olde time, by what wordes estates of inheritaunce were wont to be created, how the Lordes consent was thought requisite to the testament of the tenaunt, and how it was procured by a gift of Heriot (which as Bracton sayeth, was done at the first, *Magis de gratia, quam de iure*) Furthermoze, that you may see how this Towne of Mephram, and sundry others came at the first to Christes church, Saint Augustines, and Rochester: and finally, that you may know, as well what aduancement to Gentry was then in vse, as also what weapons, iewels, and ornaments were at that time woꝛne and occupied, I wyll set befoze your eye, the last will and testament of one Byrhtic and his wife, which was a man of great wealth and possessions within this Shire, and had his abideing at Mephram moze then sixe hundredeth yeaeres agoe.

This

This is Birtricks and Elffwithes his wyues last  
Dis is Býrhtwices and ſelfſpýðe his wifes nihta  
declaration,

testament, whiche they declared at Mepham, in their kinsfolks  
cride. þe hi cƿædon on Meapaham. on heora maga  
witnesse:

hearing: that was Wulstan Vcca, and Wulffie his bro-  
geritnesse; þæt ƿulſtan Vcca, and ƿulfric his bro-

ther, and Syred Elfrides sonne, and Wulffie the blacke,  
ðor. and ripes ſelfpides suna. and ƿulfric se blaca.

and wyne the priest, and Elfgar of Mepham, and  
and þine ppeost. and ſelfgar on Meapaham. and

Wulfey Ordeys sonne, and Elfey his brother, and  
ƿulfeh onðeges suna. and ſelfeh his broðor. and

Birtwar Elfrices widowe, and Britric her cousine, and  
býrhtƿana ſelfwices lap. and bryhtwic hiſe mæg. ⁊  
Elfstane the Biſhop.

ſelfstan biſceop.

First to his naturall Lord, one bracelet of foure score  
ſƿeſt hiſ cyne hlaforð ænne beah on hundeah to-

handknife

dagger

Markes of golde, and one hatchet of as  
tigan mancýsen goldes. and ane handſecſ on eal ſƿa

much: and foure horses, two of them trapped: and two  
miclan. and feoƿer horse. tƿa geræðe. and tƿa

ƿy. ſ.

ſwordes,

swordes trimmed, and two hawkes, and all his  
 spend geƿetelsode. and tƿegen hafocas. and ealle his  
 hedgeboundes *Lords wife*  
 boundes. And to the Ladie one bracelet of

headon hundas; And þære hlæfðian ænne beah on  
*palfrey*  
*stede*

thirtie *markes of golde:* and one horse to  
 þritƿigan mancusan goldes. and ænne stedan. to  
*intreate* that this testament stande maye. And for his  
 fopesƿræce þi se cƿyðe standan moste. And for his  
*auncestors* Rochester

soule, and his elders to Saint Androes two plowland  
 faple. and his ylðpæna. into Sct. Andree. tƿa fulung

at Dentun. And they bothe for their soules and their el-  
 æt benetune; And hio for hire faple. and hƿære yl-  
*ploughlande* *thither*

ders, two at Longfield. And to the same place for them thir-  
 ðpæna. tƿa æt langafelða; And hiden in for hƿiðrit-  
*neckbracelet*

tie *markes of golde,* and one collar *of fourtie*  
 tig mancƿs goldes. and ænne sƿeon beah on feoper-  
*markes,* and a Cuppe *of syluer;* and  
 tig mancƿsan. and æne cuppan seolƿpiene. and  
 head band couered with golde

a halfe bend gilden. And enerie yeare at their  
 healfne bænd gylðenne; And cælce geape to heopa  
 years mynde *from*

mynde two dayes ferme of Haselbolte: and  
 gemýnðe. tƿegna ðaga feorume of hærtholte. and  
 two



from

two dayes of Warringbery : and two dayes out of Berling,  
 tpe gna of poðpingabepan. and ij. of bærlingan,

and two dayes out of Hertesham. And to Cristes church  
 and ij. of hærpingearþerham; And to crister cip-

Archebischop

60. markes of golde, thirtie to the Bisshop and  
 can lx. mancýs goldeþ. xxx. þam biscope. and

collar

thirtie to the Couent : And a necke bracelet  
 xxx. þam hiriodeþ; And ænne speon beah

of 80. markes : and two cuppes of syluer,  
 on lxxx. mancýs. and tpa cuppan seolfpene.

and the land at Mephām, And to Saint  
 and þæt land æt Weapaham. And to Sct.

Augustine 30. markes of golde, and two cuppes  
 Augustine. xxx. mancýs goldeþ. and ij. cuppan

of syluer, and halfe a bend gilt, And  
 seolfpene. and healfne bænd gylþene; And

life

the land at Darnt to Byrware for his dayes :  
 þæt land æt ðe pen-tan byrhwara þis ðæz;

And after his dayes to Saint Androes, for  
 And æfter hys ðæge into Sct. Andree. for

anuncetors

us, and our elders And Berling to Wulfee,  
 unc. and ungne ylþan; And þarlingas pulfeþe

and

and he shall give a thousand pence. to Saint Androes for  
and he selle. x. hund peninga into Sct. Andree for

us, and our elders. And to Wulfie Wateringbyrie,  
unc. and uncpe yldpan; And pulfrie poðningabinar;

within that kinred. And to Syred Haselholt, within that  
innon þ gecynðe; And sypede heselholt innon þ ge-

kinred. And to Wulfei, and Elsey his brother Har-  
cende; And pulfege. and ðelpege his bneðen hepege-  
demeanes

þam, within that kinred, to Wulfee the inland, and  
arðerham innon þ gecynðe. to pulfege þ inland. and  
tenancie

to Elsey the outland. And to Wulfstane Vcca Walkenstede,  
ðelpege þ utland; And pulfstane uccan. polcnestede  
dagger

within that kinred. And a hatchet of three pounds,  
innon þ gecynð; And an handsecr on ðnym punðan;

And those ten plowlands at Streiton to the myn-  
And þa tyn hyða on Strætune into þam myn-  
church

þer at Walkenstede. And the land at Falcham, af-  
stpe to polcnestede. And þ land æt pealcanhām ap-

ter Byrwares dayes, to Saint Androes, for Elfrices  
tpe byrhpapa ðage, into Sct. Angree. for ðelpege

þe their Lord, and his huncetors, enen as their will was.  
þine hlaforð. and his yldpan., spa heona cyðe þa 7

And

And Brumley after Britwares <sup>life.</sup> dayes to Sainct  
 And bnomleah æfterne bpihtwara ðæge into Sct.

Androes, as Elfric their Lorde it bequeathed, for  
 Andree. swa ðelfric hyne hlaforð hit becwæð. for  
<sup>ancestors</sup>

him and his elders. And Snodland also to  
 hine and his ylðran; And Snodlingeland eac into

Sainct Androes, after their dayes, euen as Elfric it bequethed,  
 S. Andree æfterne hine ðæge. swa ðelfric hit becwæð  
<sup>presence</sup>  
<sup>hearing</sup>

being Elfrices father, and he after ward in the witnesse of Ed-  
 ðelfrices fader. and he seodðan on gepitnesse Ead-  
 gine the Ladie, and of Odo the Archebischop, and  
 gife ðære hlaforðian. and Oðan sƿecebisceoper. and

of Elsey Elstanes some, and of Elfric his brother,  
 ðelƿeger ðelfstaner sunu. and ðelfrices his broðor

and of Elfnother pilia, and of Godwine of Facham, and of  
 and ðelfnoðer pilian. and godpines æt Facham. and

Eadric of Hoo, and of Elffie the priest of Croy-  
 Eadrices æt ho. and ðelfrier preoster on Croy-

den. And to Wulfflane 60. markes of gold to deale  
 ðæne; And pulfstane lx. mancas golðes to ðalanne  
<sup>60. markes</sup>

for us and our elders: and other suche, to Wulffie to  
 for unc and uncne ylðran. and oðer swilc pulfƿrige to  
<sup>Zz.</sup> <sup>deale</sup>



*betweene God and them be it*  
deale, and haue they with God together, if they  
ðealanne; and hæbban heom wið god gemane. gif hy

*it do not. And to Wulfie, Titasey, and the writing*  
hit ne don; And pulfrige wýðiceg eg. and ðam boc,

*within that kinred: and two spurres of three pound. And I pray*  
innon þæt gecýnðe. 7 ij. spuran on iij punðā; And ic bið.

*deere*  
for Gods loue, my leefe Lorde, that he doe not  
ðe for goder lufan minne leofan hlaforð. þæt he ne

*turne aside*  
suffer that any man our testament doe breake, And I  
þafige þæt ænig man unceþne cýðe aþenðe; And ic

*pray all Gods friendes that they thereto helpe*  
biððe ealle goder fpeonð. þæt hi þæt wito fildtan;  
*Betweene them and God be it*

*Haue they it with God together, that it do breake, and God*  
hæbbe wið god gemane þe hit bpece. 7 god

*mercifull keepe*  
be to them alwayes mylde, that it holde will.  
sy him symle milde þe hit healdan wille;

It shall suffice, for the moste parte of the matters  
 (woorthy obseruation) in this Testament, that I haue  
 already poynted at them with the finger (as it were)  
 for that they appeare, and shew themselves manifestly  
 at the first sight: Onely therefore, touching the estate  
 and degree of this Testator, I wyll (for the more light,  
 and discouery thereof) borrow a few wordes of you. He  
 himself here calleth Aelfric, his Lord, & natural Lord,  
 & saith further, that Aelfere was ffather to this Ael-  
 frie: Now, what Aelfere & Aelfric were, it is not hard  
 to finde: for all our auncient Hystorians tell vs, that in  
 the dayes of King Edgar, of King Edward the Martyr, &  
 of King Ethelred, these men were by birth, coulines of  
 the bloud royall: by state (Eopler) which word we yet  
 reteine in English, and which we commonly cal (*Comi-  
 tes*) in Latine, for that at the first they were parteners  
 and companions (as I may say) with the King, in take-  
 ing the profits of the Shyre, or Countie: that they were  
 also by dignitie (Ealdormen) that is, Senators, and Go-  
 uernours of all Mercia, or midle England: And finally  
 that they were of such great power and credit, that Al-  
 fer the ffather, immediatly after the death of King Ed-  
 gar, restored al such priests thowout midle England,  
 to their houses, as the King (by aduice of Dunstane the  
 Monk) had in his lyfe expulsed, for the placing of his  
 Monks: And that Aelfric the sonne, resisted king Ethel-  
 red in that siege of Rochester, whereof you heard when  
 we were there. For as much therefore, as Aelfric  
 was hlaforð, or Lorde, to our Testator, and that hla-  
 forð and Degn, that is to say, Lorde and Seruiteur,  
 be wordes of relation, I gather that he was Degn,  
 which signifieth properly a Minister, or free Seruiteur,  
 to the Kinge, or some great personage: but vsually at  
 those times taken for the verie same, that we call now  
 of the Latine word (*Gentilis*) a Gentleman, that is (*Eū-  
 yens*) a man wel bozne, or of a good stock and familie.

The aunci-  
 ent estate  
 of a Gentle-  
 man, and  
 by what  
 meanes  
 gentrie was  
 obteyned  
 in the olde  
 time.

Neither doth it detract any thing from his Gentrie at al, that I said he was a Minister, or Seruiteur: For I meane not thereby, that he was (*Servus*) whiche woord (straightly construed) doth signifie a seruaunt, or slaue, whome they in those daies called Deope: but my minde is, that hee was a seruitour of free condition, either aduanced by his owne vertue and merite, or els descended of suche Ancestours, as were neuer degraded: And that name, the Prince of Wales, or eldest Sonne of our King of this Realme, doth not, in the life of his father, disdaine to beare: For, out of the very same olde woord (*Denian*) to serue, is framed his Poesie, or woord bpō his armes (*ic Dien*) I serue. And thus I suppose that it is manifest, that Byrthryc our Testator was by condition a Noble man, or (whiche in common acceptance abroade is all one with it) a Gentleman. Notweith, to the ende, that bothe this thing may haue the more authoritie and credit, and that it may withall appeare, what degrees of Nobilitie and Gentrie there were in this Realme before the comming in of the Normanes, and by what merites men might ascend, and be promoted to the same, I will reache a litle higher, and shewe you another Englishe (or Saxon) antiquitie, whiche I haue scene placed, in diuers olde copies of the Saxon lawes, after the end of all, as a note or aduertisement.

*It was sometime in the Englishe lawes, that the people and*  
*hit pes hpylum on Englalagum ꝥ leod and lagum*

*the lawes were in reputation: And then were the wisest of the*  
*for begehincdum; And þa pæron leod pitan peopðsci-*  
*woorshipfull*

*people wororship woorthie, euery one after his degree: Earle, and*  
*pes pýrða. ælc be his mæde. Eopl and ceopl*

*Charles*



churle, Thein, and under Thein, and if a churle thrived so, that  
Ceopl. De gn 7 Deoben; And gif Ceopl geþeah. 7

he had fully five hides of his owne land, a Churche,  
he hefde fullice 7 7 hida azenes lande. Cipican.

use

service

& a kitchin, a belhouse, and a gate, a seate, & a seneval office  
7 cýcenan. belhus. and buþhgeat. setl. 7 sundeþnote  
in the kings halle, then was he thencefoorth the Theins  
on Cýnges healle. þonne 7 7 he þanonfopð De gen-  
woorthie

right worthe. And if a Thein did so thrive, that he served the  
rightes peopðe; And gif De gn geþeah. 7 he þenode

progresse

journey

king, and on his message ryd in his household, If he  
Cýnge. and his padstefne pad on his hineþe. gif se

served him,

toward

then had a Thein that folowed him, the which to the kings  
þonne hefde De gn ðe him filigðe. ðe to Cýnger

expedition plowlandes

palace

sourney five hydes had, and in the kings seate his  
utþane 7 7 hida hafðe. and on Cýnges setl his hla-

message

Lorde served, and thrice with his errand had gone to  
fopð ðenode. and ðriþa mid his xþenð gefopato

Suche an one

the king, He might afterwarde with his foreothe his Lorde  
Cýnge. Se most 7 7 riddan mid his fopaðe his hla fopð  
part playe at any great neede. And if a Thein did thrive so,  
as þelian. æt mirlican neoban; And gif De gn geðeah.

Zz. 7 7

thas

that he became an Earle, then was he afterward an Earle <sup>woorthy</sup>  
 þ he pearde to Eople. þonne þas he riðð an Eopliþ.  
 the rightes of an Earle.

right woorthy. And if a Merchant so thrined that he passed  
 tes peopde; And gif Massepe gepeah. þ he ferde

<sup>broad</sup> thrice ouer the wide Seas, of his <sup>cunning</sup> owne <sup>science</sup> crafte, he was  
 þrige ofen pið Sax. be hir agenum crafte. se þas

thenceforth a Theins right woorthy. And if  
 þonne syððan ðegn pihter peopde; And gif  
 thrined

a Scholer so prospered thorowe learning, that he degree had, &  
 leopnepe gepeah. þurh lane. þ he had hæfde. and

<sup>privilege</sup> serued Christ, he was then afterward of dignitie and peace  
 þenode xpe. se þas þonne riððan mæde and munde  
 so muche woorthy, as therevnto belonged: vntesse he  
 spa micelne pýrde. spa þas to gebýrde. buton he  
 trespassed

forfaired so, <sup>might not vse</sup> that he the vse of his degree vse ne might  
 forþonhte. þ he þas had note notian ne moste;

**By this you see, first, that in those dayes there were**  
 The degrees of Freemen  
 Earl, Thein  
 and Churle  
 but thre estates of fræ men (for bondseruants, whiche  
 we now sence call by a strained worde (Villaines) ar not  
 here talked of, that is to say, an Earle, or Noble man, the  
 highest: a Theyn, or Gentleman, the midlemost: And a  
 Churle, or Peoman, the lowest: for as touchinge that  
 which is here spoken of the seruant of the Theyn, or  
 Gentleman, I deeme it rather ment for a prerogative  
 belonging

belonging to the maister, then mencioned as a seuerall  
degrée in the man. Neither doth it make against me in  
this diuision, that you shall many times reade, of Cal-  
dopman, Scypmā, Hēpetoga, Seðcundmā, Twelfhynd  
man, Twyhyndeman: for these be not names of diffe-  
rence in degrées, but do either denote the offices and  
dignities, or els the estimation and values of those to  
whom they be attributed: as Alderman and Shyre-  
man, do signifie that Earle or Noble man, to whom the  
gouernment and charge of a Shyre, or other Precinct,  
was committed: Hēpetoga, that Earle or great man,  
that was (*Imperator Belli*) the Lieutenant of the field:  
Syðcundman, that Gentleman, that had the manred  
(as some yet call it) or the office to leade the men of a  
Towne, or Parish: And as for Twelfhyndman, it was  
geuen to the Theyn, or Gentleman, because his lyfe  
was valued at Twelue hundreth shillings (as in those  
dayes the liues of all sortes of men were rated at cer-  
ten summes of money) And Twyhyndman, to the Churle  
or Yeoman, because the price of his head was taxed at  
two hundreth shillings: whiche thinge (if it were not  
expresly set forth in sundrie old lawes yet extant) might  
well inough be found in the Etymologie of the wordes  
themselves, the one called a Twelfhynd, as it were, a  
Twelve hundred man, and the other a Twyhynd, for a  
man of Two hundreth.

Alderman,  
Shire mā &c  
were names  
of offices.

Furthermoze, you may here behold, with what dis-  
cretion and equitie, our elders proceeded in bestowing  
these promotions: for where as all Nobilitie and Gen-  
trie, commeth either by Discent, or by Purchase, wher-  
of the first, if it be not accompanied with vertue, is but  
an emptie signe, and none other thing, then (as one well  
sayed) *Nobilitatem in Astragulis gestare.*

But



But the latter (being both the maker and maintener of the first) as it ought by all reason to be rewarded with due enignes of honour, to the ende that vertue may be the more desirously embraced: So haue they heere appointed thre seuerall pathe waies to leade men streight vnto it, that is to say, Seruice, Riches, & Learning, or (to speake more shortly) Vertue and Riches: in which two (as Aristotle confesseth) al the olde Nobilitie consisted, & which two (as y<sup>e</sup> Ecclesiast, or Preacher teacheth) make a good accomplement: for (saith he) *Virilior est sapientia, cum diuitijs coniuncta*. And in this parte, you may lastly perceiue also, that out of all those trades of life, which be (*χρηματισμὸς*) that is to say, conuersant in gaine, they admitted to the estate of Gentry such only, as increased by honest Husbandrie, and plentiful Merchandize: Of the first of which Cicero affirmeth, that there is nothing meete for a Freeborne man: And of the other, that it is praise worthy also, if at the lengthe being satisfied with gaine, as it hath often come from the Sea to the Hauen, So it chaunge from the Hauen into landes and possessions. And therefore (in my fantasie) where as Geruas. Tilber. (in his obseruations of the Eschequer) accompteth it an abasing for a Gentleman to occupie *Publicum mercimonium*, common buying and selling, it ought to be referred to the other two parts of Merchandize, that is, to Negotiatio, which is retayling, or keeping of a standing shop: and to Inuection (which is to exercise Percerpe, or (as some cal it) to play y<sup>e</sup> Chapman: and not to Nauigation, which (as you see) is the only laudable part of all buying and sellenge. And againe, whereas in our law it is reputed a Disparagement for a warde in Chivalrie (which in old time was as much to say as a Gentleman) to be married to the daughter of one

Wisdom is  
more profi-  
table, when  
it is ioyned  
with riches.

Merchan-  
dize, and  
Husbandrie

one that dwelt in a Bozowe, I thinke that it also ought to be restrained to suche onely as proffessed handicrafts, or those baser Artes of buying and selling, to get their living by. But of all this matter, my Maisters the Heraldes can better informe you, to whome (least I be blamed for thrusting my Sicle into an other mans Haruest) I wil without any more, referre you. Tunbridge, Wrotham, this towne, and Northfleete, doe lye betwene and Southe one from another: and it is a commune and receaued opinion amongst the Countrey people, that you may be conueyed from the Thamise side, to the edge of Suffex in these foure Parishes: So that the whole Shyre by that reckoning, should be but foure Parishes broade, and yet. 19. or 20. myles ouer, on this part. If any man doubt of the trueth, let himsele make the triall, for I dare not war- rant it.

Aaa.

Wro-

# Wrotham, in Latine *Vaginaca* :

It is in the Domesday booke corruptly written  
(Broteham) for I suppose, that pynham,  
is the very right name, giuen for  
the great plentie of woorts  
or good hearbs that  
growe there.



Here was in Wrotham, of auncient  
time, a Monoz house, pertaining to  
the See of the Archebishops. For  
Geruasiuſ witnesseth, that one Ri-  
chard (the Archebishop that succee-  
ded Thomas Becket) lay there: And  
that after suche time as he had, by great largition and  
bribery, preuailed at Rome bothe against King Henrie  
(the Sonne of the second of that name) in his owne con-  
secration: against Roger the Bishop of Yorke in the  
quarrel of preeminencie, and against other in other vain  
suits, (so that it might neuer be moze truly said of that  
Citie in Paganisme it self *Roma omnia ire venum*, then in  
that time of Papistrie) he had a moste terrible dreame  
or vision in in his sleep at Wrotham, the manner wher-  
of, (as he reporteth) was this. It seemed to him, that a  
berie graue and reuerend personage, came to his bed  
side by night, and demaunded of him in a loude voyce,  
who art thou? with whiche noyse, when the Archebi-  
shop awaked, and for feare answered nothing, it added  
mozeouer, Thou art he that hast scattered the goods of  
the Church committed to thy charge, and therefore I  
will scatter thee: and so with the woord vanished out  
of sight. The Archebishop arose in the morning, and  
hauiug intended a journey to Rochester, addressed him  
selfe



selfe thitherward: but this vision continually presented  
 it selfe before the eye of his minde, and so troubled him,  
 that for ease of his inward grieke, he began to disclose  
 the whole order of it to suche as were in his companie:  
 wherof he had no sooner made an end, but he was forth-  
 with stricken with such a horrour, and chille colde, that  
 he was driven of necessitie to alight at Halling in his  
 way, where in great torment he ended his lyfe, the next  
 daye following. This house continued here untill the  
 time of Simon Islip, the Archebishop: who hauing a  
 desire to finishe the Palaice at Maidston, whiche Iohn  
 Vfford his predecessour had begon, and wanting wher-  
 with to accomplishe it, not onely pulled downe  
 the building at Wrotham, and conueied the  
 stufte thither, but also obtained of the  
 Pope, licence to leuie a Tenth  
 throughout his whole  
 Province, to per-  
 forme his work  
 withall.

Aaa.ij.

Kem-

## Kemsing.

1. The wor-  
ship of ma-  
ny Gods.

Saint Edith,  
and her offe-  
ring.



At the late time of the Popish *polytheism*, the Image of Edith (the Daughter of King Egdar, and sometime Prioress of Wylton in the West Countie) was religiously frequented in the Churchyard at Kemsing for the preservation of Corne and Graine, from Blasting, Myldewe, Brandeare, and suche other harmes as commonly annoy it: The manner of the whiche sacrifice was this: Some seely bodie broughte a pecke, or two, or a Bushel of Corne, to the Church: and (after prayers made) offered it to the Image of the Saint: Of this offering, the Priest used to reteine the greatest portion, and then to take one handfull, or litle more of the residue (for you must consider he would be sure to gaine by the bargain) the whiche after aspersi- on of holy water, and mumbling of a few wordes of con- iuration, he first dedicated to the Image of Saint E- dithe, and then deliuered it backe, to the partie that brought it, who then departed with full perswasion, that if he mingled that hallowed handfull with his seede Corne, it would preserve from harne, and prosper in growthe, the whole heape that he should sowe, were it neuer so great a masse.

I remember, that I haue read in *Terentius Varro*, that the olde Romans (amongst innumerable others) had in great veneration, one God, which (of Robigo, a canker in Corne) they called Robigus, and to whom they made deuoute intercession and solemne sacrifice, for the pre- seruation and deliuerie of their graine, from the selfe same annoyances, that ours is subiect vnto. Howe muche that God of the Romanes, and our Goddess of Kemsing, differed in profession, let some Popish gadder after

after straunge Gods make the accompt, for I my selfe  
can finde no oddes at all.

And truly, were it not  
that I am lothe to anticipate now before time, that  
which I shall (God graunting) haue bothe fit place, and  
more time to vtter hereafter, I could easily shew, that  
the olde Romans, and our newe Romanistes, agreed in  
manner throughout, bothe in the propertie and num-  
ber of their Gods (if at the least they be numerable) in  
the manner and multitude of their sacrifices, in the  
times and formes of their solemnities, in the reporte of  
their false and fayned myracles: and finally, almost in y  
whole heape and dunghill of their filthie and supersti-  
tious Idolatries, But I will alwayt conuenient sea-  
sons, and at this tyme giue to euerie man the same, and  
none other counsell, then Plautus, (a heathen Poet in  
deede, and yet in this behalfe more heauenly then any  
Bapiste) sometime gaue in the like case, saying: *Vnus*

The olde &  
newe Ro-  
manes, agre  
in many  
points of  
religion.

*dum tibi propitius est Iupiter, tu hosce minutos De-*

*as flocci feceris.* While Iupiter is thy

friend, set not thou a straw

by these, petie

Gods,

Aaa iii.

Ot-





773.

1016.

¶ haue mentio in ancient hystorie of two famous battels foughten at Otford, whereof the one happened amongst the Saxons them selues, contending for gloze and supream souereigntie. The other, betwixt Danes & Saxons, striving for lands

liues, and libertie. In the first, Offa the King of Mercia (hauing already ioyned to his dominion, the moste part of Westsex, and Northumberland, and seeking to haue added Kent also) preuailed againste the inhabitants of this countrey, not without great slaughter of his owne subiects, and after the victorie, he transferred (as it were in triumphe) the Archebishops Chaire into his owne kingdome, as you heard in the beginning.

In the other fight, King Edmund (surnamed for his great strength, Ironside) obtained against King Canutus the Dane, a most honourable victorie, and pursued him (flying toward Shepey) vntil he came to Ailesford committing vpon the Danes suche slaughter, and blow die hauocke, that if Edric the traytour, had not by fraudulent counsel withheld him, (as we haue before declared) he had that day made an ende of their whole armie.

S. Thomas  
Beckets  
spiteful mi-  
sacles.

These be the written antiquities that I finde of Otford, whiche happely some men will esteeme lesse, then the vnwritten vanities of Thomas Becket, sometime owner of the place: And therefore, least any should complaine of wrong, you shall heare what they be also. It was long since fancied, and is yet of two many beleued, that while Thomas Becket lay at the olde house at

at Otford, (whiche of long time belonged to the Arche-  
bishops, and whereof the hall and chapell onely do now  
remain) and sawe that it wanted a fit spring to wa-  
ter it : that he strake his staffe into the dyke grounde,  
(in a place thereof nowe called Saint Thomas Well)  
and that immediately water appeared, the whiche  
running plentifully, serueth the offices of the newe  
house till this present day: They say also, that as he  
walked on a time in the olde Parke ( busie at his  
prayers) That he was muche hindered in deuotion,  
by the swete note and melodie of a Nightingale  
that sang in a bushe besides him, and that therefore  
(in the might of his holynesse) he inioyned, that from  
thenceforth no byrde of that kynde shoulde be so bolde  
as to sing there aboutes : Some men report likewise,  
that for as muche as a Smithe (then dwelling in the  
towne) had cloyed his horse, He enacted by like autho-  
ritie, that after that time no Smithe shoulde thriue  
within the Parische. Innumerable suche toyes, false  
Priestes haue deuised, and fonde people (alas) haue be-  
lieued, of this iolly Party, and Dope holy man : which  
for the vnworthynesse of the things them selues, and  
for want of tyme ( wherewith I am streightned ) I  
neither will, nor can, nowe presently recount, but  
muske pursue the residue, that pertayneth to this  
place.

For besides this Thomas, there was holden in great  
veneration at Otford another Saint, called Bartilmew  
the Apostle (as I trowe) for his feast daye was kept so-  
lemne, bothe with a fayre, & good fare there. This man  
serued the person as Puruepour of his poultrie, & was  
frequented (by y parishioners, & neighbors about) for a  
most rare & singular propertie y he professed. For y ma-  
ner was, y if any woman (cōceined with child) desired to  
bring

S. Bartil-  
mew of Or-  
ford, and his  
offering.

fooythe a male, she should offer to Saint Bartholmewe a Cocke chicken, and if her wishe were to be deliuered of a female, she should then present him with a Hen.

This Saint, was as good as Mancipera, whereof the common Adage grewe: and he differed not muche from the Priestes of olde Rome, called Luperci: For a litle of the water of the one, and the dooing of a certaine Ceremonie by the other, was (at pleasure) as able as Saint Bartholmew, to make barreine women become fruitefull.

Assuredly, through the fraude of this fore, the Countrie people (as wise as capons) were many yeares together robbed of their Hennes and Cockes: til at the length it chaunced King Hêrie the eight (after exchange made with the Archebishop for this Maner of Otford) to haue conference with some of the Towne, about the enlarging of his Parke there: Amongst the whiche, one called Maister Robert Multon (a man, whome for the honest memorie of his godly zeale and vertuous life, I sticke not to name) detesting the abuse, and espying the Prince inclined to heare: vnfolded vnto him the whole packe of the idolatrie, and preuailed so farre in fauour, that shortly after, the King commaunded Saint Bartholmewe to be taken downe and deliuered him.

Thus haue you heard, the contention of the Saxons, the ouerthrowe of the Danes, the fraude of Popes the Priestes, the follie of simple folkes, and the sal of deceitfull idolatrie. Now a fewe woordes for example of the prodigallitie of a proud Prelate, and then to the residue.

The Palaice  
at Oxford.

William Warham the Archebishop, minding to leaue to posteritie, som glorious monumēt of his worldly wealthe, and misbegotten treasure, determined to haue raised a gorgeous Palaice for himselfe and his successors in the Citie of Canterbury, but (vpon occasion

of



of a difference that arose betwene him and the citizens  
 for the limits of his soyle there) he chaunged his former  
 purpose, and in displeasure towards them, bestowed at  
 Otford, thirtie & thre thousand pounds, vpon the house  
 that is now to be seene, not withstanding that him self,  
 and Cardinall Morton his immediate predecessor,  
 had not long before liberally builded at Knolle, a house  
 litle more than two myles from it. For, that house  
 also (so called of the situation, whiche is vpon the knap  
 or Knoll of a hill,) had Cardinall Morton in his time  
 purchased of the Lord Saye, and appropriated to the  
 See of the Archebischoppicke. But nowe before I can  
 depart from Otford, I am to begge licence, for a word  
 or two more, as well for the satisfaction of myne owne  
 promise heretofore made, as also for the direction of my  
 Reader, which otherwise by the countenance of a cer-  
 teine famous and learned wziter, might be quight and  
 cleane carried from me. *Des. Erasmus* taking occasion,  
 in the Preface to Frauncis the Frenche King (prefixed  
 before his Paraphrase vpon S. Markes Gospell) to dis-  
 course vpo y great troubles & warres that were in his  
 time betwene the Princes of Christendome, declareth,  
 that it were a laudable labour for some mā of the Cler-  
 gie (euē with the hazard of his life) to become the instru-  
 ment of their reconciliation: And amongst other exam-  
 ples of times passed, he bringeth in Thomas Becket,  
 who (as he speaketh) spared not to exercise the Euange-  
 licall libertie (meaning excommunication, belike) vpon  
 the King him selfe, and that for a very small matter:  
 wherein, although he profited litle in his life (saith he)  
 yet by his death he purchased both gaine and glozie, to  
 him self, and the whole Clergie. Which sayd, he addeth  
 in effect as followeth: They contended (saith he) not for  
 reconciling Princes one to another, but the controuer-

Cardinall  
Morton.

Erasmus  
doth misre-  
porte the  
cause of the  
contention,  
between the  
King, and  
Thomas  
Becket.

He was only for a certaine withdrawing house, called Otforde, a place more meete for a religious mans meditation, then for a Princes pleasure, with the which (sayth Erasmus) I my selfe coulde not haue bene greatly in loue, till such time as Willam Warham the Archbishop, bestowed so great cost vpon it, that he might be thought rather to haue raised a new house in the place, then to haue repayzed the olde: for he left nothing of the firste worke, but onely the walles of a hall, and a chapel: Thus farre out of Erasmus. Wherein first (by the waye) you may espie the reason that moued King Henric the eight, to take that house by exchange from the Archebishop, namely, because Warham (not contented to continue it a plaine house, fit to withdrawe him selfe vnto for contemplation and prayer) had so magnificently enlarged the same, that it was now become meete, to make a Palace for a Kings habitation and pleasure. But let vs come to our matter. You see here that Erasmus maketh this house, the matter, and motive of all the contention, that was betwene the King and the Archebishop: which if it be so, then haue not I saythfully dealt, in laying the cause thereof to be suche, as appeareth in Canterbury before, and consequently, I haue too much abused the Reader. But for a short aunswere hereto, I do eftsoones auowe, that not onely William of Newburgh, Roger Houeden, and Mat. Paris, (whome chiefly I haue followed in this storie, and which al, were, eyther me liuing when the matter was in hande, or bozne immediatly after) do plainely testifie with me, that the ordinaunces made at Clarendune, were the very subiect and motive of all that strife: but also the whole number of our hystoriens following, yea and the very authours of the Quadriloge it selfe (or song of foure parts, for they yealde a concent, though it be

he without Harmonie) do all, with one pen and mouth, acknowledge the same. Amongst the reste, Polydore sheweth him selfe exceeding angry, with some that had blowne abroad some such like sound, of the cause of this great hurley burley: for he sayth plainly, that they were *Amentia pleni, qui deblaterabant, Thomam conseruandarum possessionum causa, tantum iniuriarum accepisse.* Starke madde, which babbled that Thomas did receiue so many iniuries, for sauing of his possessions. But for all this, to the ende that it may fully appeare, bothe that Erasmus hath said somewhat, and also from whence (as I suppose) this thing was mistaken, I praye you heare the Quadriloge or storie of his life it self: for that onely shall suffice to close vp the matter. It appeareth by the authoꝝ of that worke, that after suche time as the King and the Bishop had long contended (and that with great heate) about the Statutes of Clarendune, & that the Bishop, vpon great offence taken, had made thre seuerall attempts to crosse the Seas towarde the Pope, and was alwayes by contrarie winde repulsed, and bzien to the lande againe: The King in his inst indignation, sought by all possible meanes to bzidle his immoderate peuisheesse: & therefore, first resumed into his owne handes, al such honoꝝ and castles of his owne as he had committed to the Bishops custodie: The called he an assembly of al his Nobilitie & bishops to Northampton castle, where befoze them all, he first charged Thomas with .500. l. that he had long befoze lent him: for the repaiment wherof, he ther copelled him to glue five several sureties: This done, he called him to an account for .30000. Markes, receined of the reuenues of the crown, during the time that he was Chancelour. Now, whiles the Archbishop was much troubled w this matter (sometime denying to yeald any account at al, some



The Manor  
of Winghā.

time craving respite to make a resolute answer, but alwayes delaying the time, and meditating howe to shifte the place ) there commeth ( on a time ) into his lodging, the Bishops of London and Chichester : who, finding him at supper, sayde vnto him (woꝛde foꝛ woꝛde of the Quadriloge) as followeth, that is, That they had founde out a way for peace : and when the Archebishop had required, vnder what forme, they answered : There is a question for money betweene you, and the King : If therefore you will assigne vnto the King, your two Manors, Otford and Wingham in the name of a pledge, we beleue that he being therewith pacified, will not only resigne you the Manors againe, and forgive you the money, but also a great deale the sooner receiue you to his fauour. **To this, the Archebishop replied,** The manor of Heche was sometime belonging to the Church of Canterburie (as I haue hard) which the King now hath in demeane : And albeit that the only challenge of the thing is sufficient cause to haue it restored to the Church of Canterbury, yet I do not loke that it will be doone in these times : Neuerthelesse, rather then I wil renounce the right, which the church of Cantetbury is sayd to haue in that Manor, either for the appealing of any trouble whatsoeuer, or for recouerie of the Kings fauour, I will offer this head of mine (and touched it) to any hazarde or daunger, what soeuer it be : **The Bishops being angrie with this,** wēt out from him, and tolde the King of all, and his indignation was soꝛe kindled with it. Thus muche out of the Quadriloge faithfully translated. **Nowe,** vpon the whole matter it appeareth : first, that the quarell was foꝛ the lawes of Clarendune (whiche yet depended) and then, that, euen as a fire, being once kindled, the flame seeketh all about, and imbraceth whatsoeuer it findeth

in the way: So the King being offended with the rebellion of this Bishop, left no stone vntaken vp, that might be hurled at him, & therefore brought in against him, bothe debts, accompts, and whatsoeuer other meanes of annoyauce. Moreover, that this matter of Otford and Wingham (for as you nowe see it was not Otford alone) was not at all tossed betwene the King and the Archebishop, but only moued by the pacifiers (these two Bishops) as a meete meane of reconciliation, in their owne opinion and iudgement: or, if it may be thought, that they were sent and suborned by the King himselfe with that deuise: yet is it manifest, that the right of the houses themselves were not desired, but onely that they might remaine as a paune till the account were audited: Neither if the gifte of this house would haue made an end of the strife, doth it by and by followe, that the contention was moued at the first about it. And therefore as on the one side you may see, that Erasmus his reporte is but matter of Preface and no Gospell: So yet on the other side it is euident, that of such and so lustie a stomacke was this Archebishop, that if former cause had not bene, yet he could haue found in his hart to fall out with his Prince for this, or a smaller matter.

For, what would he not aduenture for a Pano, or twaine in lawfull possession, that would not sticke to hazard his head before he would release that right, while he thought he had to a piece of land, and that but onely by hearesay, or supposition? But it is more the time to make an end, and therefore leauing Thomas, and his house in the bottome, let vs climbe

the Hill toward Sen-  
nocke.

# Holmes Dale, that is to say, the Dale betweene the wooddie hilles.

Reigate  
Castle in  
Surrey.



Here are as yet to be sene, at Reigate in Surrey, the ruines of an auncient Castle sometime belonging to y<sup>e</sup> Earles of Surrey, whiche Alfrede of Beuerley calleth Holme, and whiche the Conuentic people do yet terme, the Castle of Holmedale. This toke the name, of the Dale wherein it stanteth, whiche is large in quantitie, extending it selfe a great length into Surrey, and Kent also, and was (as I coniecture) at the first called Holmedale, by reason that it is (for the moste part) Conuallis, a plaine valley, running betweene two hilles, that be replenished with stoare of woode: for, so muche the very woodd (Holmedale) it selfe importeth. In this Dale (a part of whiche we nowe crosse, in our way, to Sennocke) the people of Kent (being encouraged by the prosperous successe of Edward their King (the Sonne of Alfrede, and commonly surnamed Edward the Elder) assembled themselves, and gaue to the Danes, that had many yeares before afflicted them, a moste sharpe and fierce encountre, in the which, after long fight, they preuailed, and the Danes were ouerthrowne and vanquished.

904.

This victorie, & the like euent in an other battaile (giuen to the Danes at Otford, which standeth in this same valley also) begate, as I gesse, the comon by word, used amongst the inhabitants of this vale, even till this present day, in whiche they vaunt after this manner.

The vale of Holmedale,  
Neuer wonne nor neuer shal.



# Sennocke, or (as some call it)

Seauen oke, of a number of trees, as it  
is coniectured,



W<sup>h</sup>oute the latter end of the reigne of King Edward the third, there was found <sup>The Schola-  
and Almes</sup> (lying in the streets at Sennocke) a house,  
poore childe, whose Parents were un-  
knowne, and he (for the same cause) na-  
med after the place where he was ta-

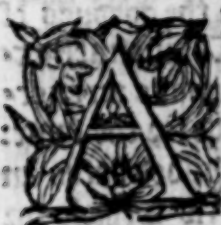
ken vp, William Sennocke. This Orphan, was by the  
helpe of some charitable persons, brought vp and nour-  
tured, in such wise, that being made an Apprentice to a  
Croter in London, he arose by degrees (in course of  
time) to be Maior, and chiefe Magistrate of that Citie.

At whiche time, calling to his minde, the goodnes of <sup>1418.</sup>  
Almightie God, and the sauour of the Townesmen, ex-  
tended towarde him, he determined to make an euer-  
lasting monument of his thankfull minde for the same:  
And therefore, of his owne charge, builded bothe an  
Hospitall for reliefe of the poore, and a free Schole for  
the education of youthe, within this Towne: endowing <sup>1418.</sup>  
the one and the other, with competent yearely li-  
uing (as the dayes then suffered) towarde their susten-  
tation, & maintenance: But since his time, the Schole  
was much amended by the liberalitie of one Iohn Pot-  
kyn, whiche lived vnder the reigne of King Henrie the  
eight: & now lately also, in the reigne of our soueraigne <sup>1542.</sup>  
Ladie, through the honest trauaile of diuers the inhabi-  
tants there, not only the yearely stipend is much in-  
creased, and the former litigious possessions quietly es-  
tablished: but the corporation also chaunged into the  
name of two Wardens, and foure assistants, of the free  
Schole of Quene Elizabeth in Sennocke.

The Town. The present estate of the Towne it selfe is good, and it seemeth to haue bene (for these many yeares together) in no worse plight: And yet finde I not in all hystorie any memorabile thing concerning it, saue onely, that in the time of King Henrie the first, Iack Cade, and his mischeuous meiny, discomfited there Syr Humfrey Stafford, and his Brother, two Noble Gentlemen, whome the King had sent to encounter them.

1449.

## Eltham.



Anthony Beke, that Bishop of Durham whiche in the reignes of King Henrie the third, & of King Edward his Sonne, builded Auckland Castle in the Bishopricke of Durham, Somerton Castle in Lincolneshyre, and Durham place at London, was (by the report of Iohn Leland) either the very Authoꝝ, or the first beautifier, of this the Princes house here at Eltham also.

It is noted of that man, that he was in all his life and Port, so gay & glozious, that the Nobility of the Realme disdained him greatly therfore. But they did not consider (belike) that he was in possession Bishop of Durham, which had *Iura Regalia*, the Prerogatives of a pe- tie Kingdome, and that he was by election, Patriarche of Ierusalem, whiche is neere Cousin to a Popedome, in whiche respectes he might well inoughe be allowed to haue *Domus splendida luxu Regali*, his houses not only as gay as the Noble mens, but also as gorgeous as the Kings.

**Kinges.** To say the trueth, this was not to builde  
 up the spirituall house with lively stones, resting on the  
 chiefe corner to Heauen, and to Godward, but with  
 Hammon and Materiall stuffe to erect warrelyke Cas-  
 tles for the nourishment of contention: and statelie Pa-  
 laces, for the maintenaunce of worldly pride and plea-  
 sure, towarde Hell and the Denill. Notwithstanding, this  
 was the whole studie of Bishops in the Popishe King-  
 dome, and therefore letting that passe, let vs see what  
 became of this piece of his building.

King Henrie the third (saith Mat. Parise) toward the lat-  
 ter end of his reigne, kept a Royall Christmas (as the 1270.  
 manner then was) at Eltham, being accompanied with  
 his Quene and Nobilitie: and this (belike) was the  
 first warming of the house (as I may call it) after that  
 the Bishop had finished his worke. For I doe not here-  
 by gather, that hitherto the King had any property in it,  
 for as much as the Princes in those days, used common-  
 ly both to sojourne for their pleasures, and to passe their  
 set Solemnities also in Abbaies and Bishops houses.  
 But yet I beleue verely, that sone after the deathe of  
 that Bishop, the house came to the possession of the  
 Crowne: for proofe wherof, I pray you heare and marke  
 what followeth.

The wyfe of King Edward the second, bare vnto him  
 a Sonne at this house, who was therof surnamed Iohn 1315.  
 of Eltham. What time King Iohn of Fraunce (whiche  
 had been prisoner in England, came ouer to visite King 1363.  
 Edward the third (who had moste honourably intreated  
 him) the King and his Quene lay at Eltham to enter-  
 taine him.

King Henrie the fourth also, kept his last Christmas  
 at Eltham. And King Henrie his Sonne and success- 1414.  
 our, lay there at a Christmas likewyse, when he was



faine to depart suddenly, for feare of some that had conspired to murder him.

1476.

Furthermore, John Rosse writeth plainly, that King Edward the fourth, to his greates cost, repaired his house at Eltham: at whiche time also (as I suppose) he inclosed Horne park, one of the thre, that be here, and enlarged the other twaine. And it is not yet fully out of memorie, that king Henrie the seauenth, set by the faire front ouer the mote there: since whose reigne, this house, by reason of the nerenesse to Grenewiche (whiche also was much amended by him, and is through the benefite of the River, a seate of more commoditie) hath not ben so greatly esteemed: the rather also for that the pleasures of the emparked grounds here, may be in manner as well enioyed, the Courte lying at Grenewiche, as if it were at this house it selfe. These be the thinges that I had to remember in Eltham: And (to make an end of all) these be the places, whereof I ment to make note in this my Xenagogie and perambulation of Kent, the first and only shyre that I haue described: wherein although I haue not spoken of sundrie Towns, not inferiour, at this present, in estimation to a greates many that I haue handled; and happely equall with them in antiquitie also, yet I think I haue neither pretermitted many, nor be much worthe of obseruation, nor scarcely omitted any, that be mentioned in such booke of Hystorie, as be easily to be had and obtained: but as for the Feodaries and Tenures of land, Genealogies & Armes of men, Chbes, Floudes, & Lides of the Sea and Rivers, flattes, Barres, Hauens, & such other thinges, although somewhat might haue ben senerally said concerning eache of them, yet haue I wittingly, and without touche, lept ouer them all: Partly for the incertentie, partly that I scatter not any seede of dissention and enuie,

ennie, and partely least whilste by disclosing secretes I labour to serue the curiositie of some fewe, I either offend many of the sadder sort, or deserue euill of the whole estate. Howe therfore I will deliuer you, and rest me: wishing, that some other man, of greater profite in reading, deapth in iudgement, and dexteritie in penning, would take in hand to amend the description of this, and to adde the residue.

For, as I at y first, assayed it to proue my self, to prouoke some, and to pleasure and profite others: So, hauing nowe atchieued it (accozding to my slender skill) if any man shall like to take this my base metall (drawne out of a fewe Sowze, into many Sheetes, as you see) & shall hammar it to some further and finer fashon, I wil not only not ennie it, but most hartely thanke him, and gratulate to our Countrey, that so good a tourne & benefite. And, as touching the description of the rest of y Realme, knowing by the dealing in this one, that it wilbe hard for any one man (and muche more for my selfe) to accomplishe all, I can but wishe in like sorte, that some one in each Shyre, would make the enterpryse for his owne Countrey, to the end that by ioyning our pennes and conferring our labours (as it were) *Ex symbolo*, wee may at the last by the vnion of many parts and papers, compact a whole and perfect bodie and Booke of our English antiquities.

Ccc.ij. The



Although god order would haue boyned the reherfall of the Auncient Customes of this shyre, in that generall discourse whiche we had in the beginning as touching the estate of this whole Countie, the rather for that it was there shewed by what meanes and policie they were conserued: yet, least the recitall of the same (being of themselves large and manyfolde) might haue bene thought too great a Parenthesis, or rather an interruption of the Hystorie, wherein we were as then but newly entred, I thought it better to reserue them for this place, to the end, that bothe the one and the other, might appeare, without breache, or confusion.

These Customes, therefore, being (for the most part) discrepant from the common lawes of our Realme, and annexed to suche landes within this shyre, as beare the name of Gauekinde, are commonly called Gauekinde Customes, for that they pertaine and haue place, in landes of Gauekinde nature. In whiche respect, it shall not be amisse to shewe, for what reason those landes were at the first so termed, and why they do yet hitherto continue the name.

Two coniectures I haue of the reason of this name, the one grounded vpon the nature of the descent, and inheritance of these landes themselves: the other founded vpon the manner of the duetie and seruices, that they yeald: bothe whiche I will not sticke to recite, and yet leaue to eache man free choice, to receaue either, or to refuse bothe, as it shall best lyke him.

The name  
Gaue-  
kind, wher-  
of it arose.

I gather by Cornelius Tacitus, and others, that the auncient Germans, (whose offspring we be) suffered their landes to descend, not to the Eldest Sonne alone, but to the whole number of their male Childzen: & I finde in § 75. Chap. of Canutus law (a King of this Realme before the



the Conquest) that after the death of the father, his heires shoulde diuide bothe his goods, and his landes amongst them. Nowe, for as muche as all the nexte of the kinred did this inherite together, I coniecture, that therfore the land was called, eyther Gavelkyn, in meaning, Giueall kyn, because it was giuen to all the nexte in one line of kinred: or Giue all kynd, that is, to all the male childzen: for kynd, in Dutche, signifieth yet a male childe: Besides this, the Welshmen also (who but now lately lost this custome) doe in their language call this discent, Gwele, and in their Latine Records, *Lectus progenies*, & *gauella*, of their owne worde, *Gefeiled*, whiche signifieth Twyns, or such as be bozne together, because they doe all inherite together, and make (as it were) but one heire, and not many. And here (by the way) I cannot omit to shew, that they of this our Kentish countrey, do yet cal their partition of land (shifting) even by the very same worde that the lawe of Canutus many yeaeres since termed it, namely (Scyftan) in Latine, *Herciscere*, that is, to shift, depart, or diuide lande.

To shift lād  
is an olde  
terme.

My other coniecture, is raysed vpon the consideration of the rent and seruices going out of these landes: for it is wel knowne, that as Knights seruice lande, required the presence of the tenant, in warfare and battaile abroad: So this lande (being of Socage tenure) commaunded his attendance at the ploughe, and other the Lordes affaires of husbandry, at home: the one by manhode defending his Lords life and person, the other by industrie mainteining with rent, corne, and victuall, his estate and familie. This rent, and customarie payment of woorks, the Saxons called, *gafol*, and therof (as I think) they named the lande that yealded it, *gafol tte*, or *gafolcyns*. that is to saye, lande Letten for rent, or of the kinde to yealde rent. In this sense I am sure, that the

¶ Ccc. iij,

rents,

rents, customes, and seruices, whiche the tenants of London pay to their land lordes, were wont (and yet are) to be recovered, by a writ, thereof called Gauclet, as by an auncient statute, made in the tenth yeare of King Edward the second, intituled, *Statutum de Gauceto*, in London, and by dayly experience there, it may well appeare. Thus much then, as concerning the Etymon of this word Gauckind, being said, let vs proceed further.

The anti-  
quitie of Ga  
uckind cu-  
stome.

It hath already appeared, how the Kentishmen, immediately after the Conquest, obtained the continuation of their customes: and it is very manifest by auncient writers, that the same (for the more part) haue bene in vse and exercise euer since. For (omitting that which Thomas Spot hath written concerning the same matter, for as much as it is already recited at large) Glanville, a learned man, that flourished in the reigne of King Henrie the second, in his seventh booke, and third chapter: Bracton, that liued in the time of King Henrie the third, in his seconde booke, *De acquiendorum rerum dominio*: And Bretton, that wrote vnder King Edward the first, and by his commaundement: haue all expresse mention, of landes partible amongst the males by vsage of the place, and some of them recite the very name of Gauckind it selfe. But most plainely of all, an auncient treatise, receiued by tradition from the hands of our elders (wherof I my self haue one exemplar, written out as I suppose, in the time of King Edward the first) agreeing with the dayly practise of these customes, prooueth the continuance of them, to stande with good lawes and liking. And therefore, for bearing (as needlesse) further testimonie in that behalfe, I will descende to the disclosing of the customes them selues: not numbring them by order as they lye in that treatise, but drawing them forth as they shall concerne, eyther the landes  
it

The diuision  
of this dis-  
course.

it selfe, or the persons that I will orderly speake of, that is to say, particularly the Lorde and the Tenant: The husband and the wife: The child and the gardien, and so after addition of a fewe other things incident to this purpose, I will drawe to an end.

As touching the land it self, in which these customes haue place, it is to be vnderstanded, that all the landes within this Shyre, which be of ancient Socage tenure, be also of the nature of Gavelkind. For, as for the lands holden by auncient tenure of Knights seruice, they be at the common lawe, & are not departible after the order of this custome, except certeine, which being holden of olde time by Knightes seruice of the Archebishop of Canterbury, are neuerthelesse departible, as it may appeare by an opinion of the Judges in the Kings benche. 26. H. 8. fol. 4. And that grewe by reason of a graunt, made by King Iohn, to Hubert the Archebishop, the tenor wherof (being exemplified out of an auncient roll, remayning in the handes of the Keuerende father, Mathewe, the Archebishop nowe liuing) hereafter followeth.

What lands  
be of Gavel  
kind nature

Some  
Knight fee  
is Gavel-  
kinde.

*Ioannes dei gratia, Rex Anglia, Dominus Hibernia, Dux Normania, Aquitania, & comes Andegauen. Archiepiscopis, Episcopis, Abbatibus, Comitibus, Baronibus, Iusticiariis, Vicecomitibus, Praposis ministris, & omnibus Balliis, & fidelibus suis: Salutem. Sciatis nos concessisse, & presenti charta nostra confirmasse, venerabili patri nostro ac Chro. Huberto, Cantuar. Archiepiscopo, & successoribus suis in perpetuum, quod liceat eis terras, quas homines de feodo Ecclesia Cantuar. tenent in Gavelkind, conuertere in feoda militum. Et quod idem Episcop. & successores sui, eandem in omnibus potestate, & libertate habeant in perpetuum, in homines illos qui terras easdem ita in feodo militum conuersas tenebunt, & in heredes eorum quam ipse Archiepiscopus habet, & successores sui post eum habebunt, in alios milites de feodo Ecclesia Cantuar. & in heredes.*



*Et homines illi, & heredes eorum, eandem & omnem libertatem habeant in perpetuum, quam alij milites de feodo Ecclesie Cantuar. & heredes eorum habent. Ita tamen, quod nihilominus consuetus redditus denariorum, reddatur integrè de terris suis, sicut prius, xenia, aueragia, & alia opera, quæ fiebãt de terris ijsdem, conuertantur in redditum denariorum æquivalentem. Et redditus ille reddatur, sicut alius redditus denariorum. Quare volumus, & firmiter præcipimus, quod quicquid prædictus Archiepiscopus & successores sui post eum, de terris illis in feodo militum secundum præscriptam formam conuertendis fecerint, ratum in perpetuum & stabile permaneat. Et prohibemus ne quis contra factum ipsius Archiepiscopi, vel successorum suorum, in hac parte venire præsumat. Teste E. Eliense, & S. Bathon, Episcopis. G. filio Petri, comite Essex. Willmo Marescallo, comite de Penbroc. Roberto de Harocort. Garino, filio Geraldi. Petro de Stoke. Ric. de Reuerus. Roberto de Tateshal. Datum per manum S. Archid. Willielmi apud Rupem aurinal. 4. die Maij Anno regni nostri tertio.*

But nowe for as muche as it is disputable, whether this Chartre of the laing be of sufficient vertue to chaunge the nature of the Gavelkynd lande or no, and for that the certaintie of the landes so conuerted into Knight fee, dothe not any where (that I haue sene) appeare, (saue onely that in the booke of Aide, leuted in this Shire, Anno. 20. E. 3. it is foure or fve times noted, that certeine landes there, be holden in Knights seruice, *Per nouam licentiam Archiepiscopi*) I will leane this, and proccede to proue, that all the landes of auncient tenure in Knights seruice, be subiect to the ordinarie course of discent at the common lawe. And that may I (as me thinketh) sufficiently doe, both by the expresse wordes of a note. 9. H. 3. in the title of Præscription. 63. in Fitzherbert: by the resolution of the same Fitzherbert, and Norwiche, Justices, 26. H. 8. 5. And by plaine recitall in the

## Customes of Kent. 1303

the acte of Parliament, made 31. H. 8. Ca. 31. by whiche statute, the possessions of certeine Gentlemen (there named) were deliuered from this customarie discent, and incorporated to the common lawe. For (amongst other things) in that acte it is sayde, That from thencefoorth, such their lands shal be changed from the said custome, and shall descend as lands at the common lawe, and as other lands being in the said countie of Kent, which neuer were holden by seruice of Socage, but always haue bene holden by Knightes seruice, doe descend. By whiche wordes it is very euident, that the makers of that estatute vnderstode all landes holden by Knightes seruice, to be of their proper nature descendable after the common lawe, and that Socage tenure was the only subiect in whiche this our custome of Gauekynd discent preuailed, and holde place.

But when I thus speake of Socage, and Knights fee, I must alwayes be vnderstanden to meane of a tenure long since, and of auncient time continued, and not newly, or lately created: for so it may fall out otherwise then is already reported. As for example, If land aunciently holden by Knights seruice, come to the Princes hande, who afterwarde giueth the same out againe to a common person, to be holden of his Manor of Eastgrenewiche in Socage. I suppose that this land (not withstanding the alteration of the tenure) remaineth descendable to the eldest sonne only, as it was before: As also, in like sorte, if landes of auncient Socage seruice come to the crowne, and be deliuered out againe, to be holden eyther of the Prince in Capite, or by Knightes seruice of any Manor. I thinke it ought to descend according to the custome, notwithstanding that the tenure be altered. And if this be true, in the graunt of the King him selfe, then much lesse (sauiug the reuerence due to King Iohns

Auncient Knight fee, is not of the nature of Gauekynd.

## 394 Customes of Kent

The change  
of Gavel-  
kind tenure  
is no chāge  
of the na-  
ture of Ga-  
uelkind.

Chartre) may the Archebishop by a newe creation of tenure, make to his tenants any alteration, of this olde custome and manner. For, as the pleading is, *Quod terra predicta sunt de tenura & natura de Gavelkind*: even so the truth is, that the present tenure onely guideth not the descent, but that the tenure and the nature together, do governe it. And therefore, as on the one side, the custome can not attache, or take holde of that which was not before in nature subiect to the custome, that is to say, accustomedly departed: So on the other side, the practise of the custome long time continued, may not be interrupted, by a bare alteration of the tenure. And this is not my fantasie, but the resolution of all the Justices (as Judge Dalison himselfe hath left reported) 4. & 5. Philippi & Mariae: And also of the Court. 26. H. 8. 5. where it was affirmed, that if a man being seised of Gavelkind lande, holden in Socage, make a gift in taylor, & create a tenure in Knights service, that yet this land must descend after the custome, as it did before the changinge of the tenure.

A contrarie  
vsage, chan-  
geth not  
the nature  
of Gavel-  
kinde.

Moreover, as the changinge of the tenure can not prevaile against this custome: So neither the continuance of a contrary vsage, may alter this prescription. For it is holden, 16. E. 3. Prescription 52. in Fitzherbert, that albeit the eldest sonne onely hath (and that for manye descendes together) entered into Gavelkynde lande, and occupied it without any contradiction of the younger brothers, that yet the lande remaineth partible betwene them, when so ever they will put to their claime. Againste whiche assertion, that whiche is sayde, 10. H. 3. in the title of Prescription. 64. name of the issue taken thus, *Si terra illa fuit partita nec ne*, is not greatly forceable. For althoughe it be so, that the lande were neuer departed in dede, yet if it remaine partible in nature, it may be departed when so ever



euery occasion shall be ministred. And therefore, euery  
in the forme of pleading vsed at this day (*Quod terra illa  
a toto tempore &c. partibilis fuit, & partita*) it is plainly ta-  
ken, that the worde (*partibilis*) onely is of substaunce,  
and that the worde (*partita*) is but a word of forme, and  
not materiall, or trauersable at all. Yea, so insepara-  
ble is this custome from the lande in whiche it obtey-  
neth, that a contrarie discent (continued in the case of  
the Crowne it selfe) can not hinder, but that (after such  
time as the lande shall resorte agayne to a common  
person) the former inueterate custome shall gouerne  
it. As for the purpose. Landes of Gauekynde na-  
ture come to the Duenes handes, by purchase, or by  
eschete, as holden of her Man or of A. So we after her  
deathe, all her sonnes shall inherite and diuide them:  
But if they come to her by forsaiture in Treason, or  
by gifte in Parleament, so that her grace is seised of  
them in *Iure Corone*: then her eldest sonne onely (whiche  
shall be King after her) shall vniue them. In whiche  
case, althoughe those landes whiche the eldest sonne  
(being King) did possesse, doe come to his eldest sonne  
after him (being King also) and so from one to another,  
by sundry discent: Yet the opinion of Syr Anthonie  
Browne was, 7. Elizab. that if at any time after, the  
same landes be graunted to a common person, they  
shall reuolte to their former nature of Gauekynde,  
and be partible amongst his heyres males, notwith-  
standing, that they haue runne a contrarie course, in  
diuers the discentes of the Kings before. But muche  
lesse maye the vnitie of possession in the Lorde, frustrate  
the custome of Gauekynde discent, as it may appeare  
14. H. 4. in the long Recordare. Only therefore these  
two cases I doubt of, concerning this point, and there-  
upon iudge them mete to be inquired of.

Odd.ij.

That

## 396 Customes of Kent.

That is to say, first, if a tenancie in Gauekynde cithete to the Lord, by reason of a Cesser (as hereafter it shall appeare that it may) or if it be graunted vnto the Lord by the tenant, without any reservation, which Lord holdeth ouer by fee of Haubert, or by Serieancie (both which I take to be Knights seruice) whether now this tenancy be partible amongst the heires males of the Lord, or no. For the aunient treatise of the Kentish Customes so determineth, but I wote not whether experience so alloweth. The other doubt is this, if it be so that any whole towne, or village in Kent, hath not at any time (that can be shewed) bene acquainted with the exercise of Gauekynde discent; whether yet the custome of Gauekind shall haue place there or no. Towarde the resolution of which later ambiguitie, it shall tende somewhat to shew, how farre this custome extendeth it self within this our countrey.

heahbe-  
on, in Sax  
on, is a high  
defence: and  
the customs  
of Normā-  
die that cal  
fief or fee,  
de Haubert  
whiche ow-  
eth to de-  
fend the lād  
by full ar-  
mes, that is,  
by horse,  
haubert,  
target,  
sword, or  
helme: and  
it consisteth  
of. 300. a-  
eres of land  
which is the  
same (as I  
suppose)  
that we cal-  
led a whole  
Knights fee  
\* The  
custome  
of Gaue-  
kind, is vni-  
uersall in  
Kent.

\* It is commonly taken therefore, that the custome of Gauekind is generall, and spreadeth it selfe throughout the whole Shyre, into all landes subiect by aunient tenure vnto the same, such places only excepted, where it is altered by acte of Parleament. And therefore. 5. E. 4. 18. and. 14. H. 4. 8. it is sayd. that the custome of Gauekind is (as it were) a comon law in Kent. And the booke. 22. E. 4. 19. affirmeth, that in demanding Gauekind lande, a man shall not neede to prescribe in certeine, and to shew, That the Towne, Borowe, or Citie, where the landes be, is an aunient towne, borowe, or citie, and that the custome hath bene there (time out of mynd) that the lands within the same towne, borow, or citie, shuld descend to al the heires males. &c. But that is sufficient inough, to shewe the custome at large, and to say, That the land lyeth in Kent, and that all the landes there be of the nature of Gauekynde. For,

# Customes of Kent.

379

a willle of partition of Landes in Gavelkinde (saith the Maister Littleton) shalbe as generall, as if the landes were at the Common lawe; although the declaration ought specially to containe mention of the Custome of the Countre. This universallitie therfore considered, as also the Traite bonde (whereby the custome is so inseparably knit to the land, as in manner nothing but an acte of Parleament can clearly dislener them) I see not, how any Citie, Towne, or Borough, can be exempted, for the only default of putting the Custome in bye, more then the Eldest Sonne (in the case before) may for the like reason prescribe against his yonger Brethren.

But here, before I conclude this part, I thinke good first to make Maister Littletons aunswere to suche as happely wil demaund, what reason this custome, of Gavelkinde descent hathe, thus to divide land amongst all Scales, contrarie to the manner of the whole Realme besides. The younger sonnes (saith he) be as good gentlemen, as the Elder, & they (being alike deare to theyr common auncestors, from whom they claim) have so much the more neede of their friendes helpe, as (through their minority) they be lesse able then the elder Brother to help them selves: secondly to put you in remembrance also of the Statute of *Prerogativa Regis*, Ca. 16. Where it is said, that *Femina non participant cum Masculis*, The Females, shall not divide with the Males: whiche is to be understood, of such as be in equall degree of kindred, as Brother and Sisters. &c. For, if a man have issue three Sonnes, & the Eldest have issue a daughter, & dye in the tyme of his Father, and the Father dyeth: In this case (it is holden) that the daughter shall ioyne with the two other Brethren her Uncles, for that she is not in equall degree with them, as her Father was, whose heire she neuertheless must be of necessitie.

The reason  
of Gavel-  
kinde Custome.

Edo. ij.

And



# 398 Customes of Kent.

What  
things shal  
ensue the  
nature of  
the land.

Rent.

Remainder

And now, thus muche being spoken, touching the name, tenure, nature, generalitie, necessitie, reason, and order of Gauekinde, it is woorthie the labour, to shew of what qualitie the Rents, Remainders, Conditions, Vouchers, Actions, and such other things (of the which some be issuing out of these landes, some be annexed vnto them, and some be raised by reason of them) shalbe. In whiche behalfe, it may generally be said, that some of them shal ensue the nature of the Land, and some shal keepe the same course that common Lawe hath appointed. But in particular, it is to be vnderstode, that if a Rent be graunted in fee out of Gauekinde land, it shal descend to all the Heires, as the land it self shal do.

And, Ald. and Chart. in 7. E. 3. were of opinion, that albeit a tenancie be of Gauekinde nature, yet the rent seruice, by whiche that tenancie is holden, might well be descendable at the common Lawe. The like shalbe of a Remainder of Gauekinde land: for if it be tayled to the Heires Male, they altogether shal inherite it, as Fitzherb. & Norwiche two Iustices, thought. 26. H. 8. 8.

But that is to be vnderstode of a discent only: for if landes of Gauekind nature be leassed for life, the Remainder to the right Heires of I. at Stile. Which hath issue foure Sonnes & dieth, & after the Leasse for life dieth now the Eldest Sonne onely of I. at Stile shal haue this land, for he is right Heire, and that is a good name of purchase. 37. H. 8. Done. 42. en Maister Brook: But if the lands had been giuen to I. at Stile for life, the remainder to his next Heire Male, this had been an estate taile in I. S. himselfe, and then the Land (as I take it) should haue descended to all his Sonnes, in so muche as in that case the wordes (next Heire Male) be not a name of purchase. Howbeit, it was greatly doubted 3. & 4. Phil. & Maria (as Justice Dalison reporteth) if a remainder be deuised by Testament (*Proximo heredi*

*heredi masculo* whether in that case the Eldest Brother only shall haue it, in so muche as (in the vnderstanding of the Lawe, whiche is a Iudge ouer all Customes) he is the next Heire Male: and therefore inquire of it.

As touching Vouchers, it appeareth. 11. E. 3. that all the Heires in Gauekind shalbe vouched for the warrantie of their auncestour, and not the eldest only. But the opinion of Maister Littleton, and of the Iustices. 22. E. 4. is clearely: that the Eldest Sonne only shalbe rebutted, or barred, by the warrantie of the auncestour.

To be short, the Eldest Sonne only shall entere for the breach of a condition: but the rest of the Brethren shalbe ioyned with him in suing a writte of Attaint, to re-  
Voucher.  
Condition.  
Attaint, and Error.

sourne a false verdit, or error to reuerse an erroneous iudgement: And they all shalbe charged for the debte of their auncestour, if so be that they all haue Assetz in their handes: But if the eldest only haue Assetz remaining, and the residue haue aliened their partes, then he only shalbe charged after the minde of the Bok. 11. E. 3. Dec. 7. And this also for this part, at this time shal suffice. Now a word or twain, touching the trial of right in this Gauekind land, & then for ward to the rest of my purpose. There be at the comon law, two sorts of trial in a writ of Right, by Battaille, and by the Graund Assise: of the which two, this Custome excludeth the one, & altereth the other. For, Battail it admitteth not at al, & the Graund assise it receaueth, not by the election of 4. Knights, but of 4. Tenants in Gauekind, as it may be read in the auncient treatise of the Customes of this Countre. But whē I speake of the treatise of the Customes (you must know) I mean not y<sup>e</sup> which was lately imprinted, but an other with much more faith & diligence long since exemplified: a Copie wherof you shal finde, at the end of this Booke.

No battail  
 nor graund  
 Assise in gauekind

For, not only in this part, the wordes (*Ne soient prises per battail*) be cleane omitted in the imprinted Booke, but in sundrie other places also the wordes be mangled, the sentences be curtailed, and the meaning is obscured, as by conference of the variations, it may to any skillfull reader moste easily appeare. But all that, I will referre to the sight and iudgement of suche, as will searche and examine it, and (retourning to my purpose) shewe you, what belongeth to the Lord of this Gavelkinde land, by reason of this Custome. And, for bicause the Prince is chiefe Lord of all the Realme, (as of whome all landes within the same be either mediately or immediately holden) let vs first see what right (by reason of this custome) belongeth vnto him.

Forfeiture  
in Felonie.

If Tenant in Fee simple, of Landes in Gavelkinde, commit fellonie, and suffer the iudgement of death therefor, the Prince shall haue all his Chattels for a forfeiture: But as touching the Land, he shall neither haue the Escheat of it, though it be immediately holden of him self, nor the Day, Yeare, and Waste, if it be holden of any other. For in that case, the Heire, notwithstanding the offence of his auncestour, shall enter immediately, & enioye the landes, after the same Customes and seruises, by which they were before holden: in assurance whereof, it is commonly saide,

The Father to the Boughe,

The Sonne to the Ploughe.

But this rule holdeth in case of Felonie, and of murder only, and in case not of treason at all: And it holdeth also in case where the offendour is iustified by order of Law, and not where he withdraweth himselfe after the fault committed, and will not abide his lawfull triall.

For



For if ſuche a one abſent himſelfe (after proclamation made for him in the Countie) and be outlawed: or otherwiſe, if he take Sanctuarie, and doe abjure the Realme, then ſhall his Heire reape no benefite by this Cuſtome, but the Prince or the Lord, ſhall take their forfeiture in ſuche degree, as if the Landes were at the common lawe. Whiche thing is apparant, both by the Booke. 8. E. 2. abridged by Maſter Fitzherbert, in his title of preſcription. 50. And by 22. E. 3. fol. Where it is ſaide, that this Cuſtome ſhall not be conſtrued by equitie: but, by a ſtraight and literal interpretation. And alſo by the plaine rehearsal of the ſaide treatiſe of the Cuſtomes it ſelfe. And in this behalfe alſo, ſome haue doubted, whether the Brother or Uncle ſhall haue the aduantage of this Cuſtome, becauſe the wordes thereof extend to the Sonne only: but let vs procede.

There belongeth moze duer, due by the Tenant, to each common perſon, being his Lord of Land in Gavelkind, ſuite to his Court, the oathe of fidelitie, and the true doing and payment, of all accuſtomed Rents, Dueties, and Seruices. Alſo if the Tenant dye, leauing his Heire, within the age of ſixtene yeares: the Lord hath the authoritie to committe the nouriture of the body, and the cuſtodie of the goods, and landes of the infant, to the next of the kinred, to whome the inheritance cannot deſcend. But, as neither the Lord ought to take any thing for the cuſtody, neither to tender to the Heire any marriage at all: So muſt he take good heed, that he credit not the cuſtodie to any perſon, that ſhall not be able to anſwere therefore. For if the Heire, at his full age of ſixtene yeares, ſhall come to the Lordes Court, and demaunde his inheritance, although the Lord may diſcreine the Gardien to yeelde his accompt (as it appeareth. 18. E. 2. Auowrie. 220. Yet in de-

Ece.

fault

faulte of his abilitie, the Lord himselfe, and his Heires, remaine charged to the Heire for the the same.

Furthermoze, if the Tenant shall withdraue from the Lord his due rents, and seruices, the custome of this Countrie giueth to the Loyde, a speciall, and solemne kinde of Cessauit, and that after this manner.

Cessauit, in  
Gauelkind.

The Lord, after suche a Cessing, ought by awarde of his thre weekes Courte, to seeke (from Courte to Court, vntill the fourth Court) in the presence of god witnessse, whether any distresse may be found vpon the Tenement, or No: And if he can finde none, then at the fourth Courte it shalbe awarded, that he shall take the Tenement into his handes, as a distresse, or pledge, for the Rent and seruices, withdraue, and that he shall detaine it one yeare and a day, without manuring it: within whiche time, if the tenant come, and make agreement with the Lord for his arrearage, he shall enter into his tenement againe: but if he come not within that space, then at the next Countie Courte the Lord ought openly to declare all that his former proceeding, to the end that it may be notozious: which being done, at his owne Courte, next following the saide Countie, it shalbe finally awarded, that he may enter into that Tenement, and manure it as his proper demeane.

And that y<sup>e</sup> forsaiture, due to the Lord for this ceasser of his Tenant, was five pounds (at the least) besides the arrearages: it doeth well appeare by the olde Kentishe byword, recited in the often remembred treatise of these Customes.

Neg he syth seald and Neg he syth geld.  
And five pound for the were, er he become heald.

That

That is to say, Hathe he not since any thing giuen? nor hathe he not sence any thing payd? Then let him pay five pound for his were, before he become tenant, or holder againe: But some copies haue the first verse thus.

Nigond sithe seld, and nigond sithe gelde: That is, Let him nine times pay, and nine times repay. And here (by the way) it is to be noted, that this word (were) in olde time signified, the value, or price of a mans lyfe, estimation, or countenance: For, before the Conquest, each man in the Realme was valued at a certain summe of money, hauing regarde to his degree, condition, and worthinesse, as is more at large shewed in the Table to the translation of the Saxon lawes, whereunto for this purpose I will send you. This custome of Cessavit, is set forth in the treatise of Customes, and hathe bene allowed of (as Maister Frowike. 21. H. 7. 15. reported) in time passed, but whether it be also at this day put in vse, I cannot certainly affirme.

But now, as these advantages arise to the Lord from his Tenant: So on the other side, the Lord also ought to suffer his Tenant to enioy the benefite of such customes as make for his auaille. And therefore, first he ought to let him alien his land at his owne pleasure, without suing to him for licence: He ought also to be contented with one suite to his Court for one tenement althoughe the same happen to be diuided amongst many: of verie right also he ought to admit an Esloine, if any be cast for the Tenant, whether it be in a cause of Plainte, or for common suite to his Courte: And lastlie he may not eracte of him any manner of othe, other then that of Fidelitie, whiche groweth due by reason of his Tenure.

And thus leauing the Lord and his Tenant, let vs  
 Ecc. ii. come.

Tenant by  
 the Courte-  
 sic.



come to the husband and the wife, and first shew what courtesie the husband shal finde by order of this custome after the death of his wife that was seised of landes of Gavelkind tenure: and then what benefite the wife may haue after the decease of her Husband dying seised of Landes of the same kinde and nature.

The Husband (saith our treatise of Gavelkind Custome) shall haue the one halfe of suche Gavelkind land, wherein his wife had estate of inheritance, whether he had issue by her or no: And shall holde the same during so long time, as he wil keepe him selfe widower, and unmarried. For if he marrie, he loseth all. Neither may he committe any waste, moze then Tenant by the courtesie at the common lawe, may. So that one way (namely, in that he shall haue his wiues land for lyfe though he neuer had issue by her) this our Custome is moze courteous then the common lawe: but an other way, (I meane in that he shall haue but the one halfe, and that with a prohibition of second marriage) it is lesse beneficiall. Whosoeuer it be, it holdeth place, and is put in practise at this day.

Tenant in  
Dower,  
The difference  
betweene com-  
mon Lawe,  
and Custome ther-  
in.

The wyfe likewise, after the death of her Husband, shall haue for her lyfe, the one moitie of all such landes of Gavelkind tenure, whereof her Husband was seised of any estate of inheritance during the coverture betwene them. Of whiche Custome also, though it exceede common measure, the common lawe of the Realm (bearing alwaies speciall fauour to Dower) hath euer moze euen hitherto shewed good allowance: For the lesse, as tenant by the courtesie after this Custome, had his conditions annexed: so tenant in Dower, by the same Custome, wanteth not some conditions following her estate. One, that she may not marrie at all: and an other, that she must take diligent heede, that she be not found with Childe, begotten in fornication. For in either case she must

lose her Dower: But yet so, that lawfull matrimonie is  
by a means (contrarie to the Apostolique permission)  
utterly forbidden, And the sinne of secret Lecherie (ac-  
cording to the Popishe Paradoxe, *Si non caste tamen caru-*  
*re*) is in a sort borne and abidden, Seeing that by this  
custome, she forfeiteth not in this later case, vntlesse the  
childe be borne, and heard to crye, and that of the coun-  
treyp people, assembled by him and crye: For then (sayth  
the custome) of Se that his wende,

Se his lende:  
But corruptly, for in true Saxon letters it sheweth thus  
Se þat hipe þende.

Se hipe lende. What is to say,  
He that dothe turne, or wende her:  
Let him also giue vnto her, or lende her.

And thus the custome, making like estimation of both  
the cases, deprieth her of her living, as well for honest  
marriage, as for filthy fornication: In whiche behalfe,  
as I must needs confesse, that the later condition hath  
reason, because it tendeth (though not fully) to the cor-  
rection of sinne and wickednesse: So yet dare I affirme,  
that the former is not onely not reasonable, but mererly  
lewd and irreligious also. For, although the Ethnickes  
did so much magnifie wifedome, that (as Valerius re-  
citeth) *Famulus, quæ uno matrimonio contentæ erant, coronâ*  
*puicitia honorabant*, and although that the common law  
also (being directed by the Popishe Clergie, whiche ther-  
in followed the error of Ierome) dothe in another case,  
by the name of Bigamie, dislike of a womans secunde  
marriage: Yet Saint Paule sayth plainely, *Mulier, si*  
*dormieris maritus eius, libera est, ut cui vult nubat, modo in*  
*Domino*. But yet for all this, seeing that our treatise of  
vsages reciteth it, seeing also that common experience of  
the countrey appzoneth it, and that the common lawe

## 406 Customes of Kent.

of the Realme (as it may be read, *Prærogativa Regis Cap.*  
*16. Ch. 2. H. 3. in Prescription, 59.*) admitteth it: let us  
also for this place and purpose, be contented to number it  
amongst our customes, and so proceed with the residue.  
It appeareth, by that which is already sayde, that the  
common lawe, and this custome, differ in two things  
concerning Dowry: One, in that the common lawe gi-  
ueth but a thirde parte, whereas the custome vouchsa-  
feth the halfe: Another, in that this custome giueth con-  
ditionally, whereas the gifte of the common lawe, is free  
and absolute. Some therefore, there remaine to be  
shewed, certeine other pointes, wherein they varie also.  
As, if the husband commit Felonie: at the common lawe,  
his wife hath lost her title of Dowry, but by the custome  
of this countrey, she shall not lose her Dowry for the  
faute of her husbande, but only in suche case, where the  
heire shall lose his inheritance, for the offence of his fa-  
ther. Which thing is manifest, both by the treatise of  
our Kentish customes, and by the opinion of the Court  
*8. H. 3. Prescription, 60.* At the common lawe also, the  
wife shall be endowed of a possession in lawe, but (as  
we thinketh) she shall haue no Dowry by this custome,  
but onely of suche landes, whereof her husband was ac-  
tually and really seised. For the wordes be (*Descent-  
ments, dount son Baron must seiset, et vestu,*) which word  
(*vestu*) being cleane omitted in the imprinted booke, im-  
porteth a possession in dede, and not in lawe only. And  
therefore, if landes in Gavelkinde descend to a married  
man, which dyeth before he make his entrie into the  
same, inquire whether it be the manner to endowe his  
wife therof, or no: for vse is the only Oracle that in this  
case I can sende you vnto. Again, at the common  
lawe, a woman shall be endowed of a faire, or of any such  
other profit. But, (for as muche as the wordes of this  
custo,



## Customes of Kent. 467

customarie Dowry, be (*terres & tenements*) and so: that all customs shall haue a literall and streight interpretation: the opinion of Maister Parkins is, that no Dowry lyeth of a faire, by this custome. Furthermoze, if the wife recover her Dowry at the common law, she ought of necessitie to be endowd by iuries and boundes: But in Dowry after this custome (sayth the same author) she may very well be endowd of a moitie, to be holden in common with the heire, that inioyeth the other halfe. Lastly, this custome, besides Dowry of the one halfe of the husbandes lande, prouideth Dowry of the moitie of the goods also, as he dyed possessed of, if he had no children, and of the thirde part, though he leaue issue: where as the common lawe (at the least in common prauille at this day) hath no consideration of any such endowment. These then be the differences, betwixt the common lawe of the Realme, and the particular custome of this countrey concerning Dowry: the comparison wherof, and whether sort of Dowry is moze beneficiall, I will not now attempt, and much lesse take vpon me, to determine, least I my selfe might seeme rashly to preiudicate in another thing, wherein I most gladly desire to be iudged by other men: namely, whether a woman, intituled to Dowry in Gauekind, may waite her Dowry of the moitie after this custome, and bying her action to be endowd of the thirde at the common lawe, and so exempt her selfe from all danger of these customarie conditions, or no: The Resolution of whiche doubt, will depend chiefly vpon comparison, whether it be moze advantageous to her, to haue the thirde at the common lawe absolutely, or the moitie by the custome conditionally. For if the Dowry at the common law be better for her, then it seemeth reasonable that she should stande to the worse, whiche is the custome: euen as tenant by the curtesie

Dowry of  
chattels.

to recover  
the same

to recover  
the same

## 408 Customes of Kent.

curtise, must take the moitie that the custome giueth, and not aske the whole, as Common lawe appointeth. And yet thereto it may be replyed, that the cases be not like: for so muche as that of Dower is much more to be fauoured. I my selfe once heard two reuerend Judges of opinion, that the woman was at libertie, to aske her Dower of the A birde, or of the Poitie: But because it was uttered by them in a passage of sondaine speache, and not spoken vpon studied argument, I will not vse the authoritie of their names, to get the matter credite with all, but leave it at large, to be better inquired of.

Partition of  
chattels.

After the husbnde and the wife, there followeth next in order of our diuision, the child and his Cardem, in whom also (since they be Relatiues, as the other be, and that their interests carrie a mutuall, and Reciproque eye, eche hauing respect to other) we will likewise couple together in one treatise. And because the custome was wont to commit the custodie, not of the landes onely (as the common lawe doth) but of the goods and chattels also, we will first shewe, what portion of goods did growe to the child, by the death of his parent.

Partition of  
chattels.

The manner of this countrey sometime was (as it appeareth by our olde treatise) that after the funeralles of the deade man perfourmed, and his debts discharged, the goods should be diuided into thre equall portions, if he lefte any lawfull issue behinde him: of whiche thre, one parte was allotted to the deade, for performance of his legacies: another to the children, for their education; and the thirde to the wife for her sustentation and maintenance: But if he had no children left on liue, then was the diuision into two partes onely: of whiche, the one belonged to the wife for her endowment, and the other to her departed husbnde, to be bestowed by his ex-  
ecutors, if he made a testament, or by the discretion of  
the

the ordinarie, if he died intestate. The selfe same order is at this day obserued in the Citie of London, and the same in effect, was long since vsed throughout the whole Realme. London  
For it is euident, bothe by the lawe of King Canutus before remembred, by Maister Glanville in his booke Ca. 18. and by the wordes of Magna Carta, y<sup>e</sup> h<sup>e</sup> wyfe and Childzen had their reasonable partes of the goods by the common lawe of the Realme, howsoeuer it came to passe at the length, that it was admitted for lawe but in such Countreies only, where it was continued by daily vsage (as it is holden. 17. E. 2. and in many other bookes) that al the writs in the Register *De rationabili parte bonorum*, haue mention of the speciall Custome of the Shyre, in whiche the part is demaunded. But as in dede at this day, partition of Chattels is not vsed (though in the meane time it hath not lost the force of common lawe as many thinke) throught out the whole Realme: so is it (so far as I can learne) vanished quite out of all vze within this Countreie also. And therfore, seeing the Gardein is deliuered of this charge, we also wil leaue to speake further of the goods, and come to the partition and custodie of the land of this Infant.

If a man die seised of landes in Gavelkinde, of any Partition; estate of inheritance, al his Sonnes shal haue equal portions of Gavelkinde lands: if he haue no Sonnes, then ought it equally to be diuided amongst his daughters: But yet so, that the eldest Sonne or Daughter, hath by the Custome a preeminence of election, and the youngest Sonne or Daughter, a preferment in the partition. For as of auncient time, there ought to be graunted to the eldest, the firste choice after the diuision: so to the parte of the youngest, there ought to be allotted in the diuision, that pce of the Meeuage, whiche our treatise calleth Aftre, By whiche

fff.

word

(Aftre)  
what it  
meaneth.



word is ment, (as I coniecture, for otherwise I haue  
 not learned) either the Hall, or chiefe roome of the house,  
 either els the well for water, or the South side of the  
 building. For (Astre) being sounded without (f) may  
 come of the Latine word *Atrium*, whiche signifieth a  
 Hall, or of *Hanstrum*, whiche betokeneth the Bucket of  
 a well, or of *Austrum*, the South side: euery of whiche  
 haue their particular commodities aboue the rest of the  
 house or tenement. Or otherwys (if that shal like any  
 man better) being sounded with (f) it may be deduced  
 from the Frenche word (Aistre) by contraction (Astre)  
 whiche is as much, as a site, or situation, and with the  
 Article (le) before it (Lestre) a Churchyard, or Court a-  
 bout a house. But whatsoener the word meane, I  
 will not longer labour in it, seing that at this day there  
 is no suche regarde made in the partition, but only con-  
 sideration had that the partes them selues be equall and  
 indifferent. Now therfore, if the Childe be vnder the age  
 of 15. yerres, the next Consin, to who the inheritance may  
 not descend, shal haue the education, & order of his body,  
 & landes, vntill suche time as he shal attaine to that age,  
 euen as the Gardein in sorage at the common law shal  
 keepe his vntill the warde aspiere to fouretee. And in  
 all other things also, this customarie Gardein is to be  
 charged and to haue allowance, in suche sorte, and none  
 other, then as the Gardein in sorage at the common law  
 is: Saue only (as it is partly remembred already) that  
 he is bothe chargeable to h<sup>e</sup> Heire in account for his re-  
 ceipt, & subiect also to h<sup>e</sup> distresse of the Lord for h<sup>e</sup> same  
 cause. Yet doe I not heare, that the Lordes take vpon  
 them (at this day) to committe the custodie of these In-  
 fants, but that they leaue it altogether to the order of  
 the next of the line, the rather (belike) for that they  
 their

Gardein, af-  
 ter the cus-  
 tome.

them selues (if they intermedle) stande chargeable, in default of the abilitie of suche as happily they might credit therewithall. So that vpon the whole matter, the oddes consisteth only in this, that Gardein in Dorage at the common Lawe shall keepe the land till the Infant be fourtene yeares of age, and Gardein by this custome till he haue attained fully fiftene: whiche diuersitie, ariseth not without great reason: For whereas the Infant in Dorage at the common law, cannot make alienation of his land untill he haue reached to the full age of 21. yeares (although he be long before that, free from all wardship) The Infant in Dorage by this Custome, may giue and sell his land so sone as he is crept out of this Custodie.

Sale is at 25. yeares

And therefore it was expedient (at the leasse) to adde one yeare to the common Lawe, before he should be of power to depart with his inheritance, whiche otherwise (being vnadvisedly made away) might worke his owne impouerishment and ouerthrowe. And truly it seemeth to me, that the Custome it selfe hath a watchefull eye vpon the same matter, in so much as it licenceth him at fiftene yeares, Not to giue his Land (for that he might doe for nothing) But to giue and sell his Land, whiche it meaneth he should not doe without sufficient recompence. Suche like interpretation, the common Lawe also seemeth to make of this custome both by the opinion of Vauasor. 5. H. 7. who said, y it was adiudged that a release made by such an Infant was voide: by the sentence of the Booke. 21. E. 4. 24. where it was said, that an infant cannot declare his will vpon such a feoffment: and by the iudgement of Hank. 11. H. 4. who also helde, that a warrantie, or graunt of a reuerſion made at suche age, was to no purpose.

ff. ij.

pose

pose at all, althoughe a lease with release might happely be good by the Custome, bicause that amounteth to a feoffment. And, in my simple iudgement, it is not fit

that this Custome should be construed by equitie, for as muche as it standeth not with any equitie, to enable an infant, of litle discretion, and lesse experience, to sell his land, and not to prouide withal that he should haue, Quid pro quo, and some reasonable recompence for the same: for that were, not to defend the Pupill and Fatherles, but to lay him wyde open to euery slye deceit, and circumuention. In whiche respect, I cannot but

Sale good  
at. 15. yeares

very well like of their opinion, who holde, that if an Infant in Gavelkinde, at this day will sell at xv. yeares of age, these three things ought of necessitie to concurre, if he will haue the sale good and effectuell. The firste, if he be an heire, and not a Purchasour, of the land that he departeth withall: The second, that he haue recompence for it: and the third, that he do it with livery of seison by his owne hand, and not by warrant of Attourney, nor by any other manner of assurance. And these men

for proue of the first and second point of their assertion, doe builde vpon the wordes of our written Custome, where it is saide *Del heire que ceux heirs de Gavelkinde, soient, ou ont passe lage de. 15. ans, list a eux leur terres & tenementes, Doner & Vender* in whiche, the wordes (*Ceux Heires*) doe restraine the Infant that commeth in by Purchase: And (*Doner & Vender*) in the copulative, (for so they lye in dede, though the imprinted booke haue the disiunctiuelly) doe of necessitie implie a recompence, for as muche as, *Vendere*, cannot be *Sine precio*. And for maintenance of the third matter, they haue on their part, besides the common blage of their owne Countrie, the common lawe of the whole Realme also: which expoundeth the word (*Doner*) to meane a feoffment (as



I haue befoze shewed) and whiche not onely disalloweth of any gifte made by an infant, but also punisheth the taker in trespass, vnlesse he haue it by liuerie from the infantes owne handes.

Thus haue I runne ouer suche customes, as by meane of this Gauekinde tenure doe apperteine, eyther to the Lord or the Tenant, the husbnde or the wife, the childe or the Gardein: To these I will adde (as I promised) confusedly, a fewe other things, of the whiche, some belong generally to the Kentishe man throughout the whole Shyre: Some to the inhabitants of some particular quarter of the countrie: and some to the tenants in Gauekinde onely, and to none other.

It appeareth, by claime made in our aunient treatise, that the bodyes of all Kentishe persons be of free condition, whiche also is confessed to be true. 30.E. 1. in the title of Villenage. 46. in Fitzherbert: Where it is holden sufficient for a man to auoide the objection of bondage, to say, that his father was bozne in the Shyre of Kent: But whether it will serue in that case to saye, that him selfe was bozne in Kent, I haue knowne it (for god reason) doubted.

No villaine  
in Kent.

It seemeth by the same treatise, that suche persons as helde none other lande then of Gauekinde nature, be not bounde to appeare (vpon Sommons) befoze the Iustices in Eire, otherwise then by their Borsholder, and foure others of the Worsowe, a fewe places only excepted. The like to this Priuilege is inioyed at this day in the Sherifes Lathe, where many whole Worsowes be excused by the onely apparance of a Borsholder, and two, foure, or fye other of the inhabitants.

Apparance.

Furthermoze, I haue read in a case of a witten report at large of. 16.E. 2. whiche also is partly abridged by Fitzherbert, in his title of Prescription, that it was

Comen.

Ass. iij.

tried

tried by verditte, that no man ought to haue common in landes of Gauekinde, Whoebeit, the contrarie is well knowne at this day, and that in many places.

Chafe and  
driue out.

The same booke sayeth, that the vsage in Gauekinde is, that a man maye lawfully inchafe, or driue out into the highe way to their aduenture, the beastes of any other person, that he shal finde doing damage in his land, and that he is not compellable to unpounde them, which custome seemeth to me directly against the rule of the common lawe, But yet it is practised till this present daye.

Attaint.

The Parleament 15. H. 6. 3. minding to amplifie the Privileges of Gauekinde, graunted to the tenants of that lande, exemption in Attaints, in suche sort as the inhabitants of auncient demeane, and of the Fiue Ports before had: But within thre yeares after, vpon the complaint of some of the Gentz of the Countrie (whiche informed the Parleament house that there was not in the whole Shyre aboue the number of 30, or 40. persons, that helde to the value of 20. li. land, out of Gauekinde, who in default of others, and by reason of that exemption, were continually molested by returnes in Attaintes) that Acte was vtterly repealed.

Changing  
of wayes.

The Statute. 14. H. 8. Cap. 6. giueth libertie to every man, hauing high way (through his Land in the Weald) that is woꝛne deepe, and incommodious for passage, to lay out an other way, in some suche other place of his land, as shalbe thought meete by the viewe of two Iustices of the Peace, and twelue other men of wisdom and discretion.

Coppies.

Finally, the generall Lawe, made 35. H. 8. 17. for the preservation of Copie woodes, thorough out the Realme, maketh plaine exception of all woodes within this Weald, vnlesse it be of suche as be common.

Thus

# Customes of Kent. 415

Thus muche, concerning the customes of this oure  
 Countre, I thought good to discourse, not so cunningly  
 (I confesse) as the matter required, nor so amplie as the  
 argument would beare (for so to doe, it asketh more  
 art and iudgement, then I haue attained) But yet suf-  
 ficiently (I trust) for vnderstanding the olde treatise  
 that handleth them, and summarily inough for compre-  
 hending (in maner) whatsoeuer the common, or Sta-  
 tute, lawe of the Realme bath litterally, touching them,  
 whiche is as muche as I desired. Now therefore, to the  
 end that neither any man be further bound to this my  
 discourse vpon these customes, then shalbe warranted  
 by y<sup>e</sup> Customes theselues, neither yet y<sup>e</sup> same customes  
 be henceforth so corruptly caried about as hitherto they  
 haue bene, but that they may at the length be restored  
 to their auncient light and integritie, I will set downe  
 a true and iust transcript of the very text of them, take  
 out of an auncient and faire written roll, that was gi-  
 uen to me by Maister George Multon my Father in  
 lawe, and whiche some time belonged to Theron, Bales  
 of this Countre. I wil adioyne also, mine owne inter-  
 pretation in the English, not of any purpose to  
 binde the learned vnto it, but of a desire  
 to informe the vnlarned  
 by it.

Kent.



## Kent.

These are the usages, and customes, the which the commonalty  
*Ces sont les usages, & les custumes les ques le communant*

of Kent, claimeth to have in the Tenements of Gavelkind, & in  
*de Kent cleinent auer en tenementz de Gavelkende, & en*

These wordes betwene the starres were taken out of an other olde copie.  
*of Kent, claimeth to have in the Tenements of Gavelkind, & in*  
*de Kent cleinent auer en tenementz de Gavelkende, & en*  
*of Kent, claimeth to have in the Tenements of Gavelkind, & in*  
*de Kent cleinent auer en tenementz de Gavelkende, & en*

King E. the Sonne of King Henrie. \* That is to say, that all the  
*Roy Ed. fitz. le Roy Henrie \* Cestascavoir, que toutes les*

Free men. bodies of Kentishmen be free, aswell as the other free bodies of  
*corps de Kenteyz seient frantz, auxi come les autres frantz cors*

Escheator. *England. And that they ought not the Escheator of the King to*  
*Dengleterre. Et que ilz ne dainent le escheator de Roy*  
*of alowing this to him, & il n'en doit nul chose,*  
*chuse, ne payer en any tme did they: But the King shall take, or*  
*elire, ne unkes en nul temps ne sefoint, mes le Roy prengne, ou*

cause to be taken, suche an one as it shall please him, to serue him  
*face prendre, tiel come luy plerra, de ceo qui soit*

in that which shalbe needfull. And that they may their landes  
*mistier a luy servir. Et quilz puent leur terres*

Giue and tell landes without licence,  
 & their tenements giue and sell, without licence asked of their  
 & leur tenementz doner & vender, sanz conge demaüder a  
 Lords: Having unto the Lordes the rentes and the services  
 leur seignerages: sanz a seignorages les rentz & les services  
 due

due out of the same tenements. And that al, and euery of them,  
*dues des mesmes le tenementz. Et que touz, e chescun,*

may by writ of the kyng, or by plainte, plede for the obtaining  
*puisset per Bre le roy, ou per pleynt, pleder par lour*

Plede, by  
 writte, or  
 pleinte.

of their right, as well of their Lordes, as of other men.

*droit par chaser, auxibien de lour Seignerages, come des auters*

And they clayme also, that the communalte of Gauekind-  
*gentz. Et clament auxi, que la Commune de Gaulekendeys,*

me, which hold none other then tenements of Gauekind nature,  
*que ne tenent mes que tenementz Gaulekendeys,*

ought not to come to the common Summonce of the Eire, but  
*ne deument venir a la comune Somonse del Eire, mes*

only by the Borsholder, and foure men of the Borowe: except  
*ke per Borgefaldre, & iij. homes de la Borghe: hors* Appeare by  
 Borsholder.

the townes, which ought to aunswere by twelue men in the Eire.  
*pris les villes que deument responder per xy. homes en le Eire.*

And they clayme also, & if any tenant in Gauekind be attainted  
*Et clament auxi, que sil nul tenant en Gaulekend seit atteint*

No eschete  
 for felonie,  
 but of  
 goods only.

of felonie, for the which he suffreth iudgement of death, the King  
*de felonie per que il suffre luyse de mort, eit le Roy*

shall haue all his goods, & his heire forthwith after his death shall  
*touz ses chateux, e son er maintenant apres sa mort seit*

be inheritable to all his landes & tenements which he held in Ga-  
*enherite de touz ses terres & tenementz, que il tient en Ga-*

uekind in fee, & in inheritance: and he shall holde them by the same  
*uekind en fee, e en heritage, e les tiendra per mesmes les*

Egg.

seruices

services & customes, as his ancestors held the: soherþof it is said  
*services et customes, sicōe ses aūcestres les tyndrōt: dont est dist*

in Kentish: the father to the bough, & the son to þe plough. And if  
*en Kenteis: þe fader to þe boghe, and þe son to þe plogh.*

Dower, of  
 the one half

he haue a wife, forþþis be she endowed by þe heire (if he be of age)  
*Et si il est femme, maintenant seit dowe p le heir, sil seit dage,*

of þe one half of al the landes & tenements which her husband held  
*de la meysie de touz les terres e tenemēz que son Baroun tint*

of Gauekind nature in fee: to haue & to hold according to þe forme  
*de Gaulekend en fee, a auer, e a tener solonc la forme de*

hereafter declared. And of such lands þe King shal not haue þe pere,  
*suthdyte. Et de tiels terres le Roy ne auera An*

Flying for  
 felony, cau-  
 seth forfei-  
 ture.

nor wast, but only the goods as is before said. And if any man of  
*ne wast, mes tant soumet les chateaux, sicome il est auātdit. Et si*

Gauekind, either for felony, or for suspitiō of felony, soþawe him  
*nil Gaulekendeis pur felony, ou pur Ret de felony, se suthtrei*

out of the country, & be demaūded in the countie as he ought, & be  
*de la pees, e seit en counte demande com il appent, e puis*

afterward belawed: or put him self into þe holy church, & abiure the  
*vilaghe: ou sil se met en seinte eglise, et foriure la terre oue*

land & þe realme, þe King shal haue þe pere & þe wast of his lands & of  
*le Reaume, le Roy auera lan e le wast de ces terres, & de*

all his tenements, together with all his goods and chattels:  
*tonz ses tenemenz ensemblement oue touz ces chateaux,*

So that after the yeare and the day, the next Lord, or Lordes,  
*issint que apres lan, e le iour, le plus p cheyn Seig. ou Seigneurs,*  
 Hall



shall have their Eschetes of those landes and tenementes, every  
 eyent leur eschetes de celes terres e tenemenz, chescun

Lord that, whiche is immediatly holden of him. And they claime  
 Seigneur ceo, que de luy est tenu sans men. E clament

also, that if any tenant in Gavelkind dye, and be an inheritor  
 auxi, que si ascun tenant en gawylekende murt, et seit enherite  
 of landes and tenementes in Gavelkinde, that all his sonnes shall  
 de terres e de tenemenz de Gawylekende, que touz ses fitz

Partition,  
 amōgst the  
 heirs males

parte that inheritance by equall portions. And if there be no  
 partent, cel heritage per ouele porcioun. Et si nul heir

hoir: male, let the partition be made betwene the females, cuen  
 madle ne seit, seit la partye fait entre les females sicome

as betwene brothers. And let the messuage also be departed  
 entres les freres. Et la mesuage seit autreci entre eux

betwene them: but the Astre shall remaine to the youngest sonne,  
 departi, mes le astre demorra al pūne, The Astre

or daughter: And be the value therof deliuered to eche of the  
 ou al pūnee, e la value seit de ceo liure a chescun des

parceners of that heritage, from fourtie scete from that Astre, if  
 parceners de cel heritage a. xl. pes de cel Astre, si

the tenement will so suffer. And then let the eldest brother haue  
 le tenement le peut souffrir. E donkz, le cyne frere eit

the first choyce, & the others afterwarde, according to their degree.  
 la primere election, e les autres apres per degree.

Likewise of houses whiche shall be founde in such Messuages,  
 Ensement de mesons que serront trouets en tieus mesuages,  
 Egg. ij. let

let them be departed amongst the heires by equal portions, that is  
*seient departye entre les heirs per ouele porcioun, Ceo est*

Curt, in o- to swete, by foote if neede be, Hauing the Couert of the Altre,  
 ther copies. *as auoir per peies fil est mistier, Sauue le couert del Altre,*

Which shal remain to þ yongest son, or daughter, as is befoze said:  
*que remeynt al pūe, ou al pūee sicome il est auandist,*

So neuerthelesse, that þ yongest make reasonable amēdes to his  
*issi que nequedont que le pūe face renable gre a ces*

parceners for the part which to them belongeth, by the award of  
*parceners de la partye que a eux appent per agard de*

One suite, good mē. And of the aforesaid tenements, whercof one only suite  
 for all the bone gentz. *E des auandistz tenemenz dont vn soule Suite*  
 parceners.

was wont to be made befoze tyme, be there not by reason of þ para-  
*tant soulement soleit estre fait auant, ne seit per la resoun de la*

titution but one sole suite made, as it was befoze accustomed: But  
*partye fors vn soule suite faite sicome soleit auant, mes*

yet let al þ parceners make contribution to þ parcener which was  
*que tous les parceners facent contribution a celui que face*

Partition of keth þ suite for the. In like sort let þ goods of Chanellkind persons  
 goods. *la suite par eux. Ensement seient les chatens de Chanellkindes*

be parted into .3. partes, after þ funerals & þ debts payed, if they be  
*parties en treis apres le exequies & les dettes rendues, si il y ait*

lawfull issue on line: So that þ dead haue one parte, & his lawfull  
*issue mulier en vye, issi que la mort eyt la vne partie, & les fitz*

sonnes and daughters an other parte, and þ wife þ thirde parte,  
*& les filles muliers lautre partie, et la femme la tierce partie.*

And

And if there be no lawfull issue on liue, let  $\frac{1}{2}$  dead haue  $\frac{1}{2}$  one half,  
*Et si nul issue mulier en vye ne seit, est la mort la meste,*

and  $\frac{1}{2}$  wiue on liue  $\frac{1}{2}$  other halfe. And if the heire, or heires, shal be  
*e la femme en vye lautre meytie. Et si le heir, ou les heirs, seit,*

vnder  $\frac{1}{2}$  age of. 15. yeares, let  $\frac{1}{2}$  nourriture of them be committed  
*ou seynt de deins le age de xv. ans, seit la nourriture de eux*

Custodie of  
the heire in  
Gauekind.

by the Lord, to the next of the bloud to whom the inheritance can  
*baillie p. le Seign. al plus procheyn del sank, a qui heritage ne*

not descende, So that  $\frac{1}{2}$  Lord take nothing for the committing  
*peut descendre, issi que le Seign. pur le bast rein ne prengne.*

thereof. And let not  $\frac{1}{2}$  heire be married by the Lord, but by his own  
*Et quil ne seit marie per le Seign. mes per sa volonte*

will, and by the aduise of his friendes, if he will. And when such  
*demeine, & per le conseil de ces amys sil veut. Et quant cel*

heire, or heires, shall come to the full age of fiftene yeares, let their  
*heir, ou ceux heirs sont de plener age de xv. ans. seient a*

lands and tenements be deliuered vnto them, togeth. er with their  
*eux leur terres, e leur tenemenz liures, ensemblemet oue leur*

profits

goods, and with the enprouements of the same lands, remaining  
*chateaux, et oue les enprouemenz de celes terres outre*

about their reasonable sustenance: of the which profits and goods,  
*renable sustenance: de quel enprouement, e chateaux,*

let him be bounde to make answer which had  $\frac{1}{2}$  education of the  
*seit tenu a respondre celui qui de luy auera la nourriture,*

heire, or els  $\frac{1}{2}$  Lord, or his heires, which committed  $\frac{1}{2}$  same educa-  
*on le Seigneur ou ses heirs que cel nourriture auera baillie.*

Egg. iiij.

cation.



Salc at xv. yeres of age cation. And this is to be understoode, that from such time as those  
*Et ceo fet a sauoir que del houre que ceux*

heires in Gauelesind, be of, or haue passed, the age of fiftene yeres,  
*heirs Gauylekende seient, on ont passe le age de xv. ans,*

it is lawfull for them, their landes or tenementes, to giue and sell  
*list a eux leur terres ou tenementz, doner e vendre*

at their pleasure: Having the seruices to the chiefe Lordes, as is  
*a leur volunte, Saunes les seruices au cheff, seignorages com il*

Dower, of the one half before sayde. And if any such tenant in Gauelesind dye, and haue a  
*est deuant dit. Et si nul tiel tenant en Gauylekend meurt, e eie*

wife that ouerliueth him, let that wife by and by be endowed (of  
*femme que suruiue, seit cele femme meynenant douve de*

the one halfe of the tenementes wherof her husbnde dyed bested  
*la meite des tenementz, dont son baroun morust vestu e*

seised) by the heires, if they be of age, or by the Lordes, if  
*seisi, per les heirs sil seient de age, ou per les Seigneures*

the heires be not of age: So that she may haue the moietie  
*one halfe  
 si les heirs ne seient pas de age, issi que ele eyt la*

of those landes and tenementes, to holde so long as she keepeth  
*meite de celes terres e tenementz, a tener tant com ele se*

Forfeiture  
 of Dower.

her a widow, or shalbe attainted of childe byth, after the auncient  
*tyent vne, ou de enfanter seit atteint per le auncienne*

vsage: that is to say, that if when she is deliuered of childe, the  
*usage, ceo est a sauoir, que quant ele enfante, e*

infant be heard crye, and that the hue and crye be rayled,  
*l'enfant seit oy crier, E que le hu e le cry seit lene*

and

and the countrie be assembled, and haue the viewe of the childers  
*e le pais ensemble, e eyent veue de lenfant ensifaunte,*

hozne, and of the mother, then let her loose her Dowre wholy, and  
*e de la mere, adonks perde son dower enterement, e*

otherwise not, so long as she holdeth her a widowe : wherof it is  
*autrement nyent, tant come ele se tient veue, dont il est*

sayde in Kentish: he that doth swende her, let him lende her. And  
*dist en kenteys: se pat hir wende, se hir lende. E* Tenant by  
the courte-  
sie, of the  
one halfe.

they clayme also, that if a man take a wife whiche hath inheritance  
*clament auxi, que home que prent femme, que eit heritage*

of Gavelkind, and the wife dyeth befoze him, let the husband haue  
*de Gauylekend, e la femme murge auant luy, eit le Baroun*

the one halfe of those landes and tentments wherof she died seised  
*de meite de celes terres et tenemenz, tant come*

so long as he holdeth him a widower, without doing any stryppes,  
*il se tient veuers (dont il morust seisei) sanz estrepe-*

oz waste, oz banishment, whether there were issue betwene  
*ment, ou wast, ou exile fere, le quel kil y eit heir entre*

them, oz no : And if he take another wife, let him loose all. And  
*eux ou noun. Et sil prent femme, trestout perde. Et* The discent  
of Gavel-  
kind, chan-  
ged.

if any tenement of Gavelkinne do escheate (and that escheate be to  
*si nul tenement de Gauylekend eschete (et ceo eschete seit a*

any Lord whiche holdeth by fee of Humberke, oz by Seruancie)  
*nul seigneur que tiene per fee de humberk, ou per seruancye)*

*Cessant*

by death, oz by Gavelate as is hereafter sayd, oz be to him  
*per mort, ou per Gavelate sicome il est suthdite, ou li seit*  
rended

giuen by  
rendred by his tenaunt whiche befoze held it of him by quitteclausse  
rendu de son tenant que de li auant le tynt per quitteclausse

thereof made, or if his eschete be by Gauelete as is hereafter sayed,  
de ceo fete, ou seit sa eschete p Gauelete sicome il est de subduz

let this land remaine to the heires vnpartable: And this is to bee  
remeyne cele terre as heirs impartable. Et ceo fet asa-

nderstood, where the tenant so rendring, doth retereine no seruice  
noir, la ou le tenant ensi rendant, nule seruice retent

to himselfe, but saueyth neuerthi lesse to the other Lords their fees,  
deners sey, sauuet nequedent as autres Seigneurs fees ser-

sermes, and the rentes wherewith the aforesaide tenementes of  
mes e les rentes dont les auant diz tenemenz de Gaule-

Gauelkind (so rendred) were befoze charged, by him, or theim,  
kende ensi rendus auant furent charges per ceux, ou

Forfaiture  
by Cessauit  
or Gauelete

which might charge them. And they claime also, that if any  
per celuy, que le charger poent, ou poeyt. Eclament auxi, que si

withholde  
tenant in Gauelkind retereine his rent, and his seruices of the tene-  
ment tenant en Gaulekende retereine sa rent, e son seruice del

ment whiche he holdeth of his Lorde, let the Lorde seeke by the  
tenement quil vint de son Seign. querge le Seign. per

award of his courte from .3. weekes to .3. weekes, to find some dis-  
agard de sa court de treys semeynes en treys semeynes true

distresse by that tenement, vntill the fourth court, alwayes with  
distresse sur cel tenement tant que a la quart court, a totfet

Witnesses: And if within that time he can find no distresse in that  
per tesmoynage, Et si dedens cel temps ne trusse distresse en cel  
tenement,



tenement, wherby he may haue iustice of his tenant, Then at the  
tenement per quenz il puisse son tenant iustiser, *Donc a la*

fourth court let it be awarded, that he shall take that tenement in  
quart court seit agard, *quil pregne cel tenement en*

to his hand, in the name of a distresse, as if it were an ore, or a cow,  
*sa mein en nom de destress, ausi come boef ou vache,*

and let him keepe it a yere, and a daye, in his hande without ma-  
*e le tiene un an, e un iour en sa mein sance meyn*

nuring it: within which terme, if the tenant come, and paye his  
*ouerir: dens quel terme, sile tenant vent, e rend ses*

arr:ages, and make reasonable amendes for the withholding,  
*arr:ages, e fait renables amendes de la detenue,*

Then let him haue and enioye his tenement as his auncetors and  
*a donc eit, e ioise son tenement sicom ses auncetors e*

he before held it. And if he do not come before the yere, and 4 day  
*ly auant le tyndront. Et s'il ne vent deuant lan, e le iour*

past, then let the Lord goe to the next countie court with the wit-  
*passee, donc auge le Seign. al prochain Counte suiunt one ref-*

nesses of his owne court, & pronounce there this procelle. to haue  
*meynage de sa court, e face la pronuncier cel proces pur*

Further witnessse. And by the award of his court (after that countie  
*sefmoynage auer: Et per agard de sa court, apres ceo Counte*

courte holden) he shal enter, & manure in those lands & tenemets,  
*tenue, entra, e meynouera en celes terres e tenemenz,*

owne

as in his domeanes. And if the tenant come after ward, and will  
*sicom: en son domayne, Et sile tenant vent apres, e vaille*

whh.

rehaue

rehaue his tenements, & hold them as he did before, let him make  
ces tenementz, reauer e tener sicome il fist deuaut face

agreement with the Lord, according as it is aunciently sayde:  
gree al Seigneur, sicome il est auncyement dist,

Neghe syþe yelbe, and neg he syþ zelbe: and þif  
pouþ þof þe þepe. ep he bicomē healþen.

No oathe, **Also they claime**, that no mā ought to make an othe vpon a booke,  
but for seal *Aussi il cleymēt que nul home deit serment sur liure fere,*  
tie.

(neither by distresse, nor by the power of þ Lord, nor his baillye)  
per destress; ne per poer de Seigneur, ne de Baylyf,

against his wil, wout the wytt of the King (vntlesse it be for fealtie  
encontre sa volūte saunz bres le Roy (sinon pur feaute

to be done to his Lord) but only before the Coroner, or sache or  
fere a son Seigneur) meske per deuaut Coroner, ou au

ther minister of the King, as hath the Wopall power to enquire of  
ter minister le Roy, qui Real poer eyont de enquerer de

trespasse committed against the crowne of our Lord the King. And  
trespas fet encountre la Coronne nostre Seigneur le Roy. **Esloignes**

they claime also, that euery Kenteishe man may esloine an other,  
cleymēt auxi, que checun Kenteys put autre assouier en

either in the Kings court, or in the countie, or in þ hūdrēth, or in þ  
la court le Roy, en Counte, en hundreth: e en la

Court of his Lord, where esloine lieth, & þ aswel in case of tōmte  
court son Seigneur, la ou assoigne gist, aussi bien de commune

sute, as of plea. **Also** they claime by an especiall deed of King  
sute, come de play. *Estre ceo il cleymēt per especial fet le Roy*  
Dente

Henry 3. father of King E. which now is (whō god save) 3. of  
 Henrie, pere le Roy Edward, que ore est, que diu Garde, que  
 the tenements which are holden in Gauekind, ther shal no battail  
 de tenementz que sont tenus en Gaulekēde ne seit prise bat-  
 No battail  
 nor graund  
 assise, in Ga-  
 uelkind:  
 landes.

be toynd, nor graund assise taken by xii. knights, as it is vsed in  
 talle, ne graund assise per xij. chiuallers, sicome al-

other places of 3. realme: this is to wret, where 3. tenant & deman-  
 lours est prise en le reame: ceo est a sauoir, la ou tenāt e le de-

dant holde by Gauekind: But in place of these graund assises,  
 mandant tenet per Gaulekēde: mes en lu de ces grandes as-

set Juries be taken by xii. men, being tenants in Gauekind: so 3.  
 sises seiēt prises Juroes per xii. homes tenātz en Gaulekēd: Issi

four tenants of Gauekind, choose xii. tenants of Gauekind to  
 que quatre tenātz de Gaulekēd elisent xij. tenātz de Gaule

be Juroes. And the chartre of the King, of this especialtie, is in 3.  
 kēde iours. E la chartre le Roy de ceste especiaute est en la

custodie of Sir Iohn of Norwode, the day of S. Elpheg, in Can-  
 garde Sire Iohan de Norwode le iour S. Elpheg en Cāterby-

terburie, the pere of King Edward the sonne of King Henrie, 3. xci.  
 re, le an le Roy Edward, le Fiz le Roy Henrie. xxi.

These be the vsages of Gauekind, & of Gauekind men in Kent.  
 Ces sont les vsages de Gaulekēd, e de Gaulekēdeys en Kēt,

whiche were before the conquest, and at the Conquest, and enen  
 que furent deuant le conquest, e en le Conquest, e totes hou-

since till now.

res iuskes en ca.



428 The names of such persons, as pro-  
cured their possessions to be altered from the na-  
ture of *Gavelkind*, by acte of Parleament  
made. 31. H. 8. Cap. 3.

Thomas Lord Cromwell.	Thomas Harlakenden.
Thomas Lord Burgh.	Geffrey Lee.
George Lord Cobham.	James Hales.
Andrew Lord Windfore.	Henrie Husley.
Hy Thomas Cheyne.	Thomas Roydon.
Hy Christopher Hales.	<i>The names of suche, as be</i>
S. Thomas Willoughbie.	<i>likewise provided</i>
S. Anthonic Seintleger.	<i>for. E. 6. Ca.</i>
S. Edward Wootton.	Hy Robert Southwell.
S. Edward Bowton.	S. James Hales.
S. Roger Cholmley.	S. Walter Hendley.
S. John Champneys.	S. George Harper.
Iohn Baker Esquier.	S. Henrie Isley.
Reignold Scot.	S. George Blage.
Iohn Guldeford.	Thomas Colepeper of
Thomas Kempe.	Bedgebirie.
Edward Thwaites.	Iohn Colepeper of Ailef-
William Roper.	forde.
Anthonic Sandes.	William Twisden.
Edward Isaac.	Tho. Darrell of Scotney.
Perciual Harte.	Robert Rudston.
Edward Monyns.	Thomas Roberts.
William Whetnall.	Stephan Darrell.
John Fogg.	Richard Couarte.
Edmund Fetiplace.	Christopher Blower.
Thomas Hardres.	Thomas Hendley.
William Waller.	Thomas Harman.
Thomas Wilforde.	Thomas Louelace.
Thomas Moyle.	Thomas Colepeper.

The

The names of suche, as be specified  
in the acte made for the like cause,  
s. Elizabeth, Cap.

Thomas Browne of Westbecheworthe  
in Surrey.  
George Browne.

It were right woorthie the labour, to learne the particulars and certeintie, (if it may be) of all suche possessions, as these men had, at the times of these seuerall Statutes, for that also wilbe seruiceable in time to come.

Hhh.iii.

The

# A Table, conteining the principall places, and matters, handeled in this Booke.

*A*

Angles, or Englishmen.	2	Barons warre.	219. 298
Archebishopsricke of Canterbu- ry.	62	Buriall of the dead.	244
Archebishops contend for the primacie.	65	Bishop of Saint Martines.	250
Archebishops all named.	70	Bartilmew Badelsmere.	262
Armour.	112. 211.	Bishops of Rochester named.	271
Aplemore.	146. 162	Benerth.	169
Aile, or Eile a Riuer.	177.	Blackheath.	340
Correction of adulterie.	180.	Blacksmithes rebellion.	340
Appropriations.	292	Saint Bartilmew and his offering.	375.
Aileforde.	321.	Anthony Becke, an edifying Bi- shop.	384
Asheberst.	333.		
Adington.	258.	<i>C</i>	
Aldington.	149.	Julius Caesar.	1
		Customes of Kent.	22. 388
		Cities in Kent.	50. 91
		Castles in Kent.	52
		Crosse of the Archebishop.	67
		Cursed bread.	87
		Cinque Portes.	93
Brytones, or Welshmen.	1. 72.	Cōstableship of Douer castle.	102
Borsholder, what he is.	22	Contentions betweene religious persons.	67. 128. 237. 251. 269. 290. 301.
Bridges of stone.	49. 303	Courttopstreete.	148
Boroughes in Kent.	52.	Carmelite Fryars.	166. 324
Brittishe Hystorie.	59	Contempt of Good Counsell worthily punished.	168
Flamines turned into Bishops.	62	Cranmer the Archebishop.	186
Barons and Citizens.	94. 101.	Lord Cromwell.	186
Bull of Golde.	114. 218.	Chartcham.	210
Thomas Becket Tharchbishop, looke Thomas. &c.		Chilham.	217
Bilfington.	154	Canterbury.	231
Beacons.	160	Thomas Colpeper.	262
Boxeley.	181.		
Baramdowne.	217		

Feast



Feast of Saint Cutlibert. 270  
Crueltie against Strangers, 7. 278  
284.

Conquest of England. 283  
Chetham. 286  
Crayford, and Cray River. 345  
Cliffe at Hoo. 352

## D

Domesday booke. 93  
Danes, and their whole Hystorie.  
107. 162. 322. 337.  
Dile. 117  
Douer. 119, the Castle. 111  
Doncastre. 195  
Drinking and Carowfing. 280  
Depeford. 335  
Dartford, & Darēt riuer. 346. 349

## E

Echelbert the King. 18  
Eadric, the King. 19  
King Edward the confessor. 89  
Eastrie. 114  
Saint Eanswyde. 136  
King Edward the first, claimeth  
supremacie ouer the Clergie.  
226.

Saint Edith, and her offering. 372  
Elizabeth our Queene. 38. 275.  
Eslingham. 292  
Edmond Ironside. 323  
Erasmus Roterodam. 255. 377  
Edric the Earle, an infamous traitor.  
323  
An Earle, Butler to the Archebishop.  
331.

Eanthe. 349  
Eltham. 384

## F

Fifteene and tenthe of Kent. 25  
Fraunchises. 48  
Forestes and Parkes in Kent. 48  
Faires in Kent. 51  
Flamines turned into Bishops. 52  
Folkstone. 136  
Farley. 172  
Fermes, why so called. 172  
Feuersham. 202  
Frendsbury. 290  
Fernham. 312

## G

Gentlemen of Kent by name. 54  
Geffray of Mounmouth. 59  
Goodwine Sandes. 84  
Godwyne the Earle. 84. 86. 110  
Genlade and Gladmouthe. 205  
Gillingham. 274  
Gauelkinde. 22. 388.  
Grenewiche. 336  
Grauesend. 349  
Gentlemen, and gentrie, of olde  
time. 363

## H

Heptarchie of England. 73  
Hundrethes, how they began. 21  
Hilles of name, in Kent. 49  
Houtes of honor in Kent. 53. 211  
Hospitals in Kent. 53  
King Henric the eight. 117. 200  
Hubert of Borough. 162  
Hyde

Rood of Gillingham.	286	278.284.	
Rochester.	293.354	Setuingsmen.	282
Rochester bridge.	303	Strowde.	290.315
Sir Robert Knolles	313	Sealing and signing.	318
Rauensborne, a riuer.	335	Socage tenure.	339
Reue, whereof it cometh.	350	Sherif, whereof it commeth.	350
Reigate Castle.	382	Sennocke.	383

## S

Scots.	2
Saxons.	279
Samothees.	12
Shyres, how they began.	20.337
Swanscombe.	23.354
Schooles in Kent.	34.233.383
Stonor.	83
Sandwiche.	91.105
Ships.	97.112.274.335
Sandowne.	118
Stephan Langton Tharchebishop..	133.197
Saintes in the Papacie.	137
Saltwood.	139
Shypwey.	144
Sea watche.	160
Stone.	164
Sittingbourne.	191
Shepey.	198
Sheepe of England.	198
Stouremouth.	208
Saint Stephens.	251
King Stephan.	260
See of Canterbury, looke in Archebishopricke	
See of Rochester.	266
Shorham Deanrie.	267
Sees of Bishops translated from villages.	271
Cruespie against Straungers.	7

## T

Tithings, howe they began.	27
Tanet.	78
Order of the Templers.	132
Thomas Becket Tharchebishop	143.235.248.255.374.377
Triall of right.	178.343
Tong Castle.	195
Tenham.	197
Decay of Townes.	236
Townes named, see names.	
Tunbridge.	327
Theeues, how suppressed.	21
Torneament.	347
Testament, or last will.	356

## W

Wasseling cuppe.	16
Wyters of Kent by name.	38
Winchelsey.	94.96
Lord Wardens of the Portes by name.	102
Walmere.	118
William Longchap the Bishop of Ely.	129
William Courtney Tharchebishop.	139
Westenhangar.	140
William Warham the Archebishop	

shop.	151	Saint William of Rochester.	301
Weald of Kent.	167	Vniuersitie at Canterbury.	233
Woole of England.	198	Whoredome punished.	180
Wantsume, a riuer.	97.207	Vagaboundes	21
Wingham.	211	Wager of Lawe	344
Wapentakes.	212		
Wrotham.	370		
Wyngham.	380		
Watches at the Sea	160	Yarmouthe.	95
Watling streete.	213	Yeoman, whereof so called.	10
Wye.	228	Yeomanrie of Kent.	10
Wrecke at the Sea.	228	Yenlade, see Genlade.	

Y

Imprinted at London by Henrie  
*Middleton*, for *Rafe New-*  
 bery dwelling in Fleetestreate, a litle  
 aboue the Conduite.

*Anno Domini. 1576.*